









# GULLIVER'S TRAVELS

BY

JONATHAN SWIFT

EDITED BY

A. B. GOUGH, M.A., PH.D.

OXFORD

AT THE CLARENDON PRES

OXFORD  
UNIVERSITY PRESS  
AMEN HOUSE, E.C. 4  
London Edinburgh Glasgow New York  
Toronto Melbourne Capetown Bombay  
Calcutta Madras  
HUMPHREY MILFORD  
PUBLISHER TO THE  
UNIVERSITY

827.5  
S977G

STATE CENTRAL LIBRARY

FIRST PUBLISHED 1915  
REPRINTED 1924, 1928, 1931, 1937, 1939  
PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN

## INTRODUCTION

JONATHAN SWIFT was born in Dublin on November 30, 1667, of English parents. He always resented the fate that bound him to a country he despised. The fatherless child depended on the scanty charity of an uncle. From the famous Kilkenny Grammar School he came up at fourteen to Trinity College, Dublin, where he found the curriculum little to his taste, and graduated with difficulty. A fugitive to England at the Revolution of 1688, he went first to Sheen, then to Moor Park, Farnham, as secretary to Sir William Temple, the diplomatist and essayist. Proud, independent, and conscious of his powers, Swift found his menial position irksome, threw it up in 1694, took the irrevocable and for him unfortunate step of ordination, and obtained the small prebend of Kilroot near Belfast. He soon returned to Temple in a higher capacity, and remained with him till his death in 1699. He wrote *The Battle of the Books* in 1697, a Homeric travesty, dealing with the current controversy on the respective merits of ancient and modern authors, and about the same time, though he published neither book till 1704, he wrote *The Tale of a Tub*, perhaps the most powerful of his writings. This satire treats religious controversies with such reckless humour that it may well have destroyed its author's prospects of a bishopric. On Temple's death Swift returned to Ireland, and was appointed to several small livings near Dublin, taking up his residence at Laracor, between which village and London his time was divided during the next thirteen years. His ambition drew him into

the world of party politics and literature, though his politics were subsidiary to the interests of the Church, and literature was to him mainly a vehicle for the promulgation of his intensely earnest and practical views, never an end in itself.

Swift came to London as a High-Church Whig, and gradually found that what he held to be the vital requirements of the Church were not safeguarded by his party, and he would not buy preferment with compliance. In a series of powerful pamphlets he defended the Establishment against Nonconformists, Latitudinarians, and Freethinkers, and came in time to be dreaded and courted by the foremost statesmen of the day. His secession to the Tories at the end of 1710, though almost coinciding with the fall of the Whig ministry, was prompted by conviction, and had long been inevitable. He now associated on terms of familiarity and equality with the Tory leaders Oxford (Harley) and Bolingbroke. His pamphlets, articles, and satirical verses gave an articulate voice and direction to the prevailing public opinion, and helped to popularize, if not to shape, the policy of the Government. He was thus one of the first to exemplify the power of the press. His pamphlets on *The Conduct of the Allies* and *The Barrier Treaty* (both 1711) furthered the reaction against the war, and prepared the way for the Peace of Utrecht.

In 1713 Swift was rewarded with the Deanery of St. Patrick's, Dublin. He returned to London for a few months (1713-14) to attempt the reconciliation of Oxford and Bolingbroke, whose quarrel endangered the party. How far he was cognizant of the intrigues of the Tory leaders with the Pretender can only be conjectured.<sup>1</sup> The death of Queen Anne and the triumph of Walpole and the Whigs brought Swift's power and hopes of

<sup>1</sup> See Andrew Lang, *History of English Literature*, p. 413.

further advancement to a sudden end. His political friends were in prison or exile. Of his friends among the wits, Pope, Gay, Arbuthnot, and Parnell, he was to see little more. He exchanged the brilliant society of coffee-houses and ante-chambers for the dull obscurity of his deanery, where he brooded sullenly over the servility and venality of politicians, and the growing debasement of the world. These were the years when the idea of *Gulliver's Travels* took shape. Swift was a disappointed and embittered man, suffering increasingly from giddiness and deafness, growing prematurely old, and rusting for want of intellectual society.

He had known Esther Johnson, or Stella as he called her, since she was a child in Temple's household, and she had accepted his invitation to reside with a companion near him in Ireland. They loved each other; she with quiet devotion, he in his domineering fashion, but an unknown obstacle barred their union. Meanwhile Hester Vanhomrigh (Vanessa) formed a violent passion for Swift, and pursued him to Ireland, encouraged by his imprudent attentions. His poem *Cadenus and Vanessa* tells enigmatically the story of their relations. Swift could not forbear the pleasure of dominating a willing slave, and she pined with jealousy and died in 1723. Stella also died in 1727, to Swift's inexpressible grief, probably not unmixed with remorse.

The state of Ireland contributed to Swift's growing gloom, and roused his fierce indignation. While England was enjoying unexampled prosperity and falling into coarse luxury and ease, Ireland, deliberately impoverished by the mercantile Whigs, was starving and lawless. In 1720 Swift's *Proposal for the Universal Use of Irish Manufactures* advocated a boycott of English goods. In 1724 his *Drapier's Letters* attacked with vigorous invective the bargain made by the Government with an

adventurer named Wood to supply Ireland with copper halfpence. This successful protest made the Dean the idol of the Dublin populace till his death. *Gulliver's Travels* appeared in 1726. *A Modest Proposal*, in 1729, recommended with scathing irony the sale of Irish babies as articles of food. In spite of a few such outbursts of bitter sarcasm and denunciation, Swift's mind gradually wore out, and he died in a state of imbecility on October 19, 1745, at the age of seventy-seven.

The greatness of Swift lies less in the matter or form of his work than in the spirit which is revealed in it. His personality towers above those of all his contemporaries by virtue of its intensity and strength. In a loose, frivolous, ostentatious and corrupt age, he was a man of austere morals, and a vehement hater of all shams and affectations. Injustice and cruelty roused his fiercest anger, none the less fierce by reason of his ironic restraint; and yet he could himself be cruel and unjust, because his inability to see any side of a question but his own distorted his vision and judgement. He pleads like a lawyer, never argues like a philosopher. Few great men have so entirely lacked the speculative faculty. His mind was prosaic, practical, and utilitarian; never stirred by mystery, beauty, or aspiration. He seems to have been sincere in his religion, but every form of faith except a narrow formal Anglicanism was to him an object of contempt and mockery. The Church was to him chiefly an instrument of discipline, and his own religion brought him little consolation or hope. Irritated by moral evil, as more aesthetic natures are by physical ugliness, and quite blind to the spiritual forces at work in the world, his highly sensitive nature sank ever deeper into angry restless gloom.<sup>1</sup> But apparent cynicism masked profound though narrow sympathies.

<sup>1</sup> See Churton Collins, *Jonathan Swift*, p. 241 f.

He required affection, and gave it in return. His friendships were as strong as his hates. His private benevolence, never obtruded and always spoilt by a rough ungracious manner, was at once lavish and judicious. He was above all a born ruler, and most of the tragedy of his life is due to the thwarting of his will by poverty, disease, political changes, and his own mistakes. He persuaded himself that he was moved by the purest patriotism and moral zeal, while the subconscious driving force was proud imperious egoism.

Swift's literary qualities will be best considered in connexion with *Gulliver's Travels*. Something must first be said regarding its origin and reception. The book was published in October 1726, when its author was in his fifty-ninth year. The first impulse was probably given a dozen years before. In the winter of 1713-14, Pope, who although quite a young man, was already a leading author and wit, proposed the writing of a joint satire on literary pedantry and incompetence. The hero, Martinus Scriblerus, was to be a man 'that had dipped into every art and science, but injudiciously in each'. Pope was to deal with the arts, Arbuthnot with the sciences, and Swift with affairs, he having the greatest knowledge of the world. These three, with Gay and others, accordingly formed the Scriblerus Club, which, however, enjoyed but a short existence. Fragments of the projected work were published in the *Miscellanies* of 1726-7. In the unfinished *Memoirs of Scriblerus*, chiefly the work of Arbuthnot and Pope, and not published till 1741, the four voyages of Gulliver are expressly attributed to Scriblerus (chap. xiii). But beyond the general idea of a whimsical narrative satirizing miscellaneous human follies, the two works have little in common. Pope kept much nearer to the original design in his great satire *The Dunciad*. Swift



brooded over the idea, and developed it gradually into a satire of the widest possible scope. The date when the work was begun cannot be exactly fixed. The earliest notice of it which can be certainly dated is Bolingbroke's remark in a letter of January 1721, 'I long to see your Travels'. It may be a mere accident that this agrees closely with Gulliver's statement at the end of Part IV, ch. xi: 'At the time I am writing it is five years since my last return to England', which is dated December 5, 1715. It may in any case be inferred that part of the work was written in 1720, and probably circulated in manuscript. In an undated letter, variously supposed to have been written in 1720 or 1722, Vanessa describes to Swift an assembly where the beaux reminded her of monkeys, and adds: 'One of these animals snatched my fan, and was so pleased with me that it seized me with such a panic that I apprehended nothing less than being carried up to the top of the house and served as a friend of yours was.' This alludes to the adventure with a monkey in Brobdingnag, Part II, ch. v. On September 14, 1725, Pope writes to Swift, 'Your travels I hear much of'. On the 29th of the same month, Swift writes to Pope, 'I have employed my time, besides ditching, in finishing, correcting, amending, and transcribing my Travels, in four parts complete, newly augmented, and intended for the press, when the world shall deserve them, or rather, when a printer shall be found brave enough to venture his ears.' The work was therefore substantially complete by Michaelmas 1725.

The five or more years through which the composition of the *Travels* was protracted witnessed a profound change in Swift's temper, due to the combined effects of the struggle over Wood's halfpence, the tragedy of Vanessa, Swift's ill-health, and other causes of anxiety, public and private. The results are visible in the

progressively sad and misanthropic tone of the work. The key changes more than once. The Brobdingnagians, it is true, are nobler than the Lilliputians, but the reflections of their king on European society are more severe than anything in the first Part. In Part III both the happy invention and the genial playfulness of the first two disappear, and the general tone is distinctly sour and ill-natured, while the description of the struldbrugs reflects the weariness of life into which Swift fell about 1724. The savage and morbid cynicism of Part IV far exceeds anything hitherto reached.

Allusions to recent events which might help to fix the date of composition are almost confined to Parts I and III. In the first Part, Swift has in mind the War of the Spanish Succession and the Peace of Utrecht which concluded it in 1713 (pp. 52 ff., 58 f.), the secret committee appointed by Walpole to inquire into Jacobite intrigues in 1715 (p. 73), and the flight of Bolingbroke to France in that year (p. 79). The latest probable allusion in this part is to the restoration of Walpole to office in 1721 through the intervention of the Duchess of Kendal (p. 41).<sup>1</sup> In Part III, in addition to probable allusions to the bubble companies of 1720 (ch. v.) we find references to the trial of Bishop Atterbury in 1722 (p. 216 f.), and to Flamsteed's Star Catalogue of 1725 (p. 192). The animus displayed against Sir Isaac Newton (pp. 178 ff., 182) is perhaps specially due to his recommendation of the scheme for coining Wood's halfpence in 1723, and there may be an allusion (p. 185) to the prediction he made about 1724 that the earth would be destroyed by a comet.

<sup>1</sup> The allusion to the red ribbon of the Order of the Bath, revived by Walpole in 1725, is first found in Ford's corrected copy. So in Part III (p. 192) the probable allusion to Hadley's reflecting telescope of 1723.

To judge by the letter to Pope of September 29, 1725, already quoted, Swift expected difficulty in finding a publisher. He had more than once had disagreeable experience of the danger of attacking the Government, notably in the prosecution of the printer of *Drapier's Letters*. The press laws were severe, and both author and publisher ran risks. Swift brought the manuscript to London in the summer of 1726, and adopted elaborate precautions, in which Pope seems to have helped him, to conceal his identity from the publisher to whom he offered it. On August 8 part of the manuscript was sent to Benjamin Motte of Fleet Street, with a letter professing to come from Richard Sympson, cousin and agent of Captain Gulliver, asking if he was willing to publish the work for £200, if the sale should warrant that payment. The offer was accepted. Swift hurried back to Ireland in the autumn on account of the fatal illness of Stella, without being able to see the proofs, and Motte published the book in two volumes on October 28. The fact that Swift is not mentioned, even as editor, is in accordance with his usual practice. Of all his writings, only one, *A Project for the Advancement of Religion*, was signed with his name. In the case of *Gulliver*, Swift's authorship was easily guessed by intelligent readers, and admitted by himself to various correspondents, though it pleased the humour of Swift and some of his friends to keep up the pretence of a mystery about it in letters to each other. However open the secret, it was sufficiently guarded to protect the author from the lawyers.

Some have supposed that the repeated protests which Swift made against unauthorized alterations and additions in the text were also a mere pretence, made with the object of reserving the liberty of altering whatever he pleased, or repudiating what might give

offence. There is, however, no doubt that the publisher Motte, fearing that certain passages of outspoken political and social satire might cause trouble, took the liberty of tampering with the text. Swift was naturally indignant. He wrote to Pope on November 27, 1726, still affecting ignorance of the authorship: 'I read the book over, and in the second volume [Parts III and IV] observed several passages which appear to be patched and altered, and the style of a different sort, unless I am much mistaken;' and again to Knightley Chetwode in the same vein, on February 14, 1727: 'In my judgement I should think it hath been mangled in the press, for in some parts it doth not seem of a piece.' There is a similar, but more detailed complaint in the 'Letter from Captain Gulliver to his cousin Sympson', dated April 2, 1727, first printed in Faulkner's edition of 1735, and to be found in the present edition, p. 3. Charles Ford, a friend of Swift's, wrote, evidently at his wish, a letter from Dublin to Motte on January 3, 1727, in which he says that the book 'abounds with many gross errors of the press'. Of the paragraph relating to Queen Anne (see note to p. 290) he says, it 'looks so very much beside the purpose that I cannot think it to have been written by the same author'. Ford enclosed a list of corrections and some severe comments on the corrupt passages, but all Motte did in the second edition (1727) was to adopt the minor corrections, and reprint his own version of the passages he had toned down. The most important of these passages are those dealing with the three orders of knighthood (p. 41), the informers, denouncers of imaginary plots, &c. (p. 216), German mercenaries (p. 281), lawyers (p. 283), and prime ministers (p. 290). The story of the successful revolt of Lindalino (p. 194) was either added at a later date by Swift, or more probably suppressed by Motte. Swift

wrote to Ford on June 29, 1733: 'I cannot with patience endure that mingled and mangled manner as it came from Motte's hand;' and again, six weeks later: 'The whole sting is absent out of several passages in order to soften them. Thus the style is debased, the humour quite lost, and the manner insipid.'

In 1733 a Dublin printer named Faulkner asked Swift for leave to publish a new edition of *Gulliver's Travels*. He refused, 'out of the disdain I had', he writes,<sup>1</sup> 'of their being published in so obscure and wretched a country'. Finding he could not dissuade Faulkner from his resolve to print, Swift insisted on his restoring the text from a manuscript which he provided. In spite of this, Faulkner's edition, which appeared in 1735, and was never authorized or revised by Swift, cannot be relied on. Fortunately there exists an interleaved copy of the first edition, with Swift's own corrections copied by Ford. It was found by John Forster, and is now in his collection in the library of the Victoria and Albert Museum, South Kensington. It is perhaps the only version of *Gulliver* ever corrected by the author.

When the work first appeared in 1726 it produced a great and immediate sensation. The journals seem to have ignored it,<sup>2</sup> but there are several accounts of its reception by the public in letters written to Swift by his friends in England. On November 8, eleven days after its appearance, Arbuthnot writes that it 'is in everybody's hands'; on the 16th, Pope tells Swift that it 'is *publica trita manu* at present, and I prophesy', he says, 'will be hereafter the admiration of all men. That countenance with which it is received by some statesmen is delightful. I wish I could tell you how every single man looks upon it, to observe which has been my

<sup>1</sup> In a letter to Thos. Beach, April 12, 1735.

<sup>2</sup> *Gulliver's Travels*, ed. G. Ravenscroft Dennis, 1913, p. xvii.

whole diversion this fortnight. . . . I find no considerable man very angry at the book. Some, indeed, think it rather too bold, and too general a satire; but none that I hear of accuse it of particular reflections (I mean no persons of consequence, or good judgement; the mob of critics, you know, always are desirous to apply satire to those they envy for being above them); so that you needed not to have been so secret upon this head'. On November 17 Gay and Pope wrote jointly to Swift that the book 'has been the conversation of the whole town ever since [its publication]. The whole impression sold in a week; and nothing is more diverting than to hear the different opinions people give of it, though all agree in liking it extremely. It is generally said that you are the author; but I am told the bookseller declares he knows not from what hand it came. From the highest to the lowest it is universally read, from the cabinet-council to the nursery. The politicians to a man agree that it is free from particular reflections, but that the satire on general societies of men is too severe. Not but we now and then meet with people of greater perspicuity, who are in search of particular applications in every leaf. . . . It has passed Lords and Commons, *nemine contradicente*; and the whole town, men, women, and children, are quite full of it'. Lady Mary Wortley Montagu wrote in the same month to the Countess of Mar, 'Here is a book come out that all our people of taste run mad about'. She herself thought that Swift, Arbuthnot, and Pope, whom she took to be the joint authors, had employed great eloquence to prove themselves beasts. Arbuthnot believed it would 'have as great a run as John Bunyan'.<sup>1</sup>

The Irish public, probably less cynical and sophisticated than the English, seems to have received the

<sup>1</sup> To Swift, November 8, 1726.

work with disfavour. Swift writes to Chetwode on February 14, 1727: 'As to Captain Gulliver, I find his book is very much censured in this kingdom, which abounds in excellent judges; but in England I hear it hath made a book-seller almost rich enough to be an alderman'. Nor was its success confined to England. It received the honour, very unusual in those days, of being translated into foreign languages, and thus passed into world literature, in which it holds a permanent place. Two French and one Dutch translation appeared within a few months. A year after the publication, Swift wrote,<sup>1</sup> 'The world glutted itself with that book at first, and now it will go off but soberly, but, I suppose, will not be soon worn out'.

Among those who were delighted with *Gulliver's Travels* was the clever, tolerant Princess of Wales, who became Queen Caroline in 1727. She laughed over the allusion to her husband the hobbling prince, and resolved to send Captain Gulliver a pair of low-heeled shoes.<sup>2</sup> 'The captain indeed,' writes the Earl of Peterborough, 'has nothing more to do but to chalk his pumps, learn to dance upon a rope,<sup>3</sup> and I may live to see him a bishop. Verily, verily, I believe he never was in such imminent danger of preferment.' The princess 'charges me without ceremony', writes Swift, 'to be the author of a bad book, though I told her how angry the ministry were; but she assures me that both she and the prince were very well pleased with every particular'.<sup>4</sup> Another great lady, the famous Sarah, Duchess of Marlborough, 'is in raptures at it', write Gay and Pope; <sup>5</sup> 'she says

<sup>1</sup> To Motte, December 28, 1727.

<sup>2</sup> Peterborough to Swift, November 29, 1726; cf. Mrs. Howard to Swift, November 1726. See p. 52.

<sup>3</sup> See p. 40 f.

<sup>4</sup> Swift to Thomas Sheridan, May 13, 1727.

<sup>5</sup> To Swift, November 17, 1726.

she can dream of nothing else since she read it. She declares that she has now found out that her whole life has been lost in caressing the worst part of mankind, and treating the best as her foes'.

Hostile criticism was not absent, ranging from that of the Irish bishop who 'said that the book was full of improbable lies, and, for his part, he hardly believed a word of it',<sup>1</sup> to the opinion of Bolingbroke, 'the person who least approves it, blaming it as a design of evil consequence to depreciate human nature, at which', write Gay and Pope,<sup>2</sup> 'it cannot be wondered that he takes most offence, being himself the most accomplished of his species. . . . Among lady critics, some have found out that Mr. Gulliver had a particular malice to Maids of Honour. Those of them who frequent the church say his design is impious, and that it is an insult on Providence by depreciating the works of the Creator'. Swift cannot have been surprised, or indeed annoyed, to hear that the work 'had the misfortune to displease some of our ministers';<sup>3</sup> though in a letter to Mrs. Howard, written on November 28, 1726, and signed 'Lemuel Gulliver', he alludes to objections that ignorance, malice, and party have made to his *Travels*.

Arbuthnot, the genial and witty physician, calls *Gulliver*, rather strangely, 'a merry book', but adds, 'I tell you freely, the part of the projectors is the least brilliant'.<sup>4</sup> He 'says it is ten thousand pities', write Gay and Pope,<sup>5</sup> 'he had not known it [that Swift was writing the book], he could have added such abundance of things upon every subject'; and, indeed, if Arbuthnot's advice had been given, he would probably have

<sup>1</sup> Swift to Pope, November 27, 1726.

<sup>2</sup> To Swift, November 17, 1726.

<sup>3</sup> Swift to the Abbé des Fontaines.

<sup>4</sup> November 8, 1726.

<sup>5</sup> To Swift, November 17, 1726.



it to the inspection of giants seventy feet high, appeal (by a species of trick, which will not stand the test of logical analysis) to the imagination and emotions with an effect which is highly ludicrous, disconcerting perhaps to vanity and presumption, but not irritating or mortifying. One is not convinced of sin; morality and dignity have nothing to do with inches. The peculiar institutions and manners of the Lilliputians and Brobdingnagians convey more serious criticism: the former parodying, the latter contrasting with, those of Europe. In the Brobdingnagians, who are happy and good without philosophy, politics, or law, 'the leading feature', as Sir Henry Craik observes, 'is that massive simplicity after which Swift's soul longed'.<sup>1</sup> In the later parts, as we have already seen, Swift loses his playfulness, and writes in anger and disgust. The explanations that he himself gives of his attitude and object in two letters written in September, 1725, one to Thomas Sheridan, and one to Pope, are coloured by the unhappy state of his mind when he was finishing the work, and cannot be held to apply to the earlier parts. To Sheridan he writes on September 11, 'Expect no more from man than such an animal is capable of, and you will every day find my description of Yahoos more resembling. You should think and deal with every man as a villain, without calling him so, or flying from him or valuing him less. This is an old true lesson'. Swift wrote to Pope on the 29th of the same month, 'The chief end I propose to myself in all my labours is to vex the world rather than

<sup>1</sup> H. Craik, *Life of Swift*, ii. 122. The state of the Brobdingnagians, who dispense with all the complexities and sophistries of European civilization, and still more the life according to nature led by the Houyhnhnms, anticipate the ideas of Rousseau, and appealed strongly to William Godwin, who speaks of the book's 'profound insight into the true principles of political justice'.

divert it, and if I could compass that design without hurting my own person or fortune, I would be the most indefatigable writer you have ever seen, without reading. . . . When you think of the world give it one lash more at my request. I have ever hated all nations, professions, and communities, and all my love is toward individuals ; for instance, I hate the tribe of lawyers, but I love Counsellor Such-a-one and Judge Such-a-one ; so with physicians—I will not speak of my own trade—soldiers, English, Scotch, French, and the rest. But principally I hate and detest that animal called man, although I heartily love John, Peter, Thomas, and so forth. This is the system upon which I have governed myself many years, but do not tell, and so I shall go on till I have done with them. I have got materials towards a treatise proving the falsity of that definition *animal rationale*, and to show it should be only *rationis capax*. Upon this great foundation of misanthropy, though not in Timon's manner, the whole building of my Travels is erected ; and I never will have peace of mind till all honest men are of my opinion.' Whether Swift was really disappointed that the world refused to be vexed, and insisted on being hugely diverted, must be left to surmise. From the words of Captain Gulliver in his letter (p. 4) we may gather that the reception confirmed him in his misanthropy.

Supposed allusions to particular persons and events have been pointed out by many commentators, and the more probable of them are mentioned in the notes. There has, however, been a good deal of idle and far-fetched conjecture. Another question to which much research has been devoted is that of the sources of the work. Lucian's *Vera Historia* (second century), Rabelais's *Pantagruel*, and Cyrano de Bergerac's *Histoires comiques des États et Empires de la Lune et du Soleil*

(1656-61) contributed something, especially the last, and parallels have been found in several other books of imaginary travels; but whatever Swift borrowed he made thoroughly his own, and few works in English literature are more truly original than *Gulliver's Travels*.

The book is one of the best examples of Swift's style, and illustrates most of his qualities as a writer. He appears to have deliberately increased the natural plainness and simplicity of his prose to suit the character of a blunt seaman with no literary pretensions. Critics have observed the influence of the unvarnished and detailed narratives of the navigator, William Dampier, whom Gulliver calls his cousin (p. 3) and of Defoe's *Robinson Crusoe*. It is a mistake to attribute entirely to this desire to write in character the frequent grammatical lapses and loose constructions, many of which are pointed out in the notes, because similar faults are found, though hardly so abundantly, in Swift's other writings. In spite of this defect Swift's prose has often been rightly praised as masterly. It is one of the best examples in English of the plain, direct style, stripped of all superfluous ornament. It is rarely obscure, because the writer's thoughts are clear and simple, never subtle, abstruse, vague, or complex, and he expresses them in the most straightforward way. Hence he appeals to mankind in general, to the uneducated person or the child, as well as the historian or student of manners and politics. Swift's style is totally free from the vices of pedantry, verbosity, affectation, and sentimentality; at the same time it is devoid of pathos, grace, delicacy, and charm.

The narrative is somewhat uneven, and flags in the third part, while both there and in the fourth part the illusion of reality is often destroyed through assumptions which the imagination refuses to accept. But in reading

the first half of the book the mind adapts itself to the conditions with astonishing ease. This effect is produced through the gravity and restraint with which Gulliver tells his story and the abundance of detail, which is often purposely trivial, always relevant and rigidly consistent.

Swift's imagination never soars, but is fertile in the invention of striking and droll situations. He has no lack of wit and humour, though the former is not so deft or sparkling as Pope's, and the latter often bears the character of the practical joke. The emotional restraint maintained throughout *Gulliver's Travels* allows little scope for his wonderful power of invective, but heightens the effect of the irony which is perhaps his supreme gift. In an age of French influence, Swift stands aloof from the prevalent current of taste, an insular Englishman, stubborn, imperturbable, prejudiced, illogical, inaccessible to ideas, indifferent to art, preoccupied with morals, but he possesses this eminently French quality of calm, scathing irony, rare in English literature, and in this respect he is unsurpassed among writers of our nation.

Swift the author cannot be dissociated from Swift the man. In reading him we are conscious of the presence of a mighty personality, which compels our admiration, even when our sympathy is alienated; a man in regard to whom, if we fairly estimate his character, his thwarted aims, and his unhappy fortunes, all harsher judgements will be overborne by compassion, the most poignantly tragic figure in our literary history.

## NOTE ON THE TEXT

SOMETHING has already been said (pp. x-xii) regarding the early editions. The first edition, published in London in 1726, it will be observed was not revised by Swift, and was extensively garbled and mutilated by the publisher, Benjamin Motte, who also, in printing his second edition in 1727, ignored all the important corrections which Swift sent him through Ford, and adopted only such as he considered harmless.

Two Dublin editions, published by J. Hyde in 1726, and by Risk, Ewing & Smith in 1727, merely follow Motte, and have no authority.

The only authoritative version is the interleaved copy of the first edition in the Forster collection in the South Kensington Museum, containing Swift's own corrections copied by his friend Charles Ford. The fact that the first and not the second edition was used is of no special importance, for Swift may have made this revision before the second edition appeared, seeing that the corrections, although fuller, agree closely with those which Ford sent to Motte on January 3, 1727, to be used in the second edition. In a letter to Swift on November 6, 1733, replying to a request for his interleaved copy, Ford writes, 'I will try to get one of the second edition, which is much more correct than the first, and transcribe all the alterations more clearly.' Swift's object in asking Ford for his interleaved copy was to send it to the Dublin publisher Faulkner, who in spite of the author's protest, was preparing his 1735 edition, mentioned above, p. xii. Although this adopts

many of the corrections in Ford's copy, it does not follow it faithfully, and has new variants of its own. It was never sanctioned by Swift, who was vexed at its publication. He appears to have taken no interest in any subsequent edition, and indeed his increasing apathy and loss of memory soon rendered any revision of the text impossible.

The present text is therefore substantially Motte's second edition, that of 1727, with the numerous corrections in Ford's interleaved copy of the first.<sup>1</sup> A few obvious errors in the second edition have been corrected, mostly from the first, and in four or five cases from Faulkner's, or modern editions. The 'Letter from Captain Gulliver to his Cousin Sympson', which is undoubtedly Swift's, has been inserted in this edition, although it does not appear in the first two editions or in Ford's interleaved copy. It was probably sent with the latter to Faulkner, who was the first to print it.

The spelling and punctuation have been modernized throughout, and certain passages have been omitted.

<sup>1</sup> I have collated the corrected passages in this copy, which has been already followed in the edition by Mr. G. Ravenscroft Dennis in Bohn's Library, 1913. Further details of the history of the text will be found there.



T R A V E L S  
INTO SEVERAL  
Remote Nations  
OF THE  
W O R L D.

In FOUR PARTS.

By *LEMUEL GULLIVER*,  
First a SURGEON, and then a CAPTAIN  
of several SHIPS.

To which are prefix'd,  
Several Copies of V E R S E S Expla-  
planatory and Commendatory; never be-  
fore printed.

V O L. I.

The SECOND EDITION.

L O N D O N:

Printed for BENJ. MOTTE, at the Middle  
Temple Gate in Fleet-street. MDCCXXVII.





A LETTER FROM CAPTAIN GULLIVER  
TO HIS COUSIN SYMPSON<sup>1</sup>

I HOPE you will be ready to own publicly, whenever you shall be called to it, that by your great and frequent urgency you prevailed on me to publish a very loose and uncorrect account of my travels ; with direction to hire some young gentlemen of either university to put them in order, and correct the style, as my cousin Dampier did by my advice, in his book called *A Voyage round the*  
10 *World*. But I do not remember I gave you power to consent that any thing should be omitted, and much less that any thing should be inserted : therefore, as to the latter, I do here renounce every thing of that kind ; particularly a paragraph about her Majesty the late Queen Anne, of most pious and glorious memory ; although I did reverence and esteem her more than any of human species. But you, or your interpolator, ought to have considered, that as it was not my inclination, so was it not decent to praise any animal of our  
20 composition before my master Houyhnhnm : and besides the fact was altogether false ; for to my knowledge, being in England during some part of her Majesty's reign, she did govern by a chief minister ; nay, even by two successively ; the first whereof was the Lord of Godolphin, and the second the Lord of Oxford ; so that you have made me *say the thing that was not*. Likewise, in the account of the Academy of Projectors, and several passages of my discourse to my master Houyhnhnm, you have either omitted some material circumstances, or  
30 minced or changed them in such a manner, that I do hardly know my own work. When I formerly hinted to

<sup>1</sup> From the edition of 1735.

you something of this in a letter, you were pleased to answer that you were afraid of giving offence ; that people in power were very watchful over the press, and apt not only to interpret, but to punish every thing which looked like an *innuendo* (as I think you called it). But pray, how could that which I spoke so many years ago, and at about five thousand leagues distance, in another reign, be applied to any of the Yahoos who now are said to govern the herd ; especially at a time when I little thought on or feared the unhappiness of living under 10 them ? Have not I the most reason to complain, when I see these very Yahoos carried by Houyhnhnms in a vehicle, as if these were brutes, and those the rational creatures ? And indeed, to avoid so monstrous and detestable a sight was one principal motive of my retirement hither.

Thus much I thought proper to tell you in relation to yourself, and to the trust I reposed in you.

I do in the next place complain of my own great want of judgement, in being prevailed upon by the entreaties 20 and false reasonings of you and some others, very much against my own opinion, to suffer my travels to be published. Pray bring to your mind how often I desired you to consider, when you insisted on the motive of public good ; that the Yahoos were a species of animals utterly incapable of amendment by precepts or examples : and so it hath proved ; for instead of seeing a full stop put to all abuses and corruptions, at least in this little island, as I had reason to expect : behold, after above six months warning, I cannot learn that my book hath 30 produced one single effect according to my intentions : I desired you would let me know by a letter, when party and faction were extinguished ; judges learned and upright ; pleaders honest and modest, with some tincture of common sense ; and Smithfield blazing with pyramids

of law-books ; the young nobility's education entirely changed ; the physicians banished ; the female Yahoos abounding in virtue, honour, truth and good sense ; courts and levees of great ministers thoroughly weeded and swept ; wit, merit and learning rewarded ; all disgracers of the press in prose and verse condemned to eat nothing but their own cotton, and quench their thirst with their own ink. These and a thousand other reformatations, I firmly counted upon by your encourage-  
 10 ment ; as indeed they were plainly deducible from the precepts delivered in my book. And it must be owned that seven months were a sufficient time to correct every vice and folly to which Yahoos are subject, if their natures had been capable of the least disposition to virtue or wisdom : yet so far have you been from answering my expectation in any of your letters, that on the contrary you are loading our carrier every week with libels, and keys, and reflections, and memoirs, and second parts ; wherein I see myself accused of reflecting  
 20 upon great states-folk, of degrading human nature (for so they have still the confidence to style it), and of abusing the female sex. I find likewise that the writers of those bundles are not agreed among themselves ; for some of them will not allow me to be author of my own travels ; and others make me author of books to which I am wholly a stranger.

I find likewise that your printer hath been so careless as to confound the times, and mistake the dates of my several voyages and returns ; neither assigning the true  
 30 year, or the true month, or day of the month : and I hear the original manuscript is all destroyed since the publication of my book. Neither have I any copy left : however I have sent you some corrections, which you may insert, if ever there should be a second edition : and yet I cannot stand to them, but shall leave that

matter to my judicious and candid readers, to adjust it as they please.

I hear some of our sea-Yahoos find fault with my sea-language, as not proper in many parts, nor now in use. I cannot help it. In my first voyages, while I was young, I was instructed by the oldest mariners, and learned to speak as they did. But I have since found that the sea-Yahoos are apt, like the land ones, to become new-fangled in their words, which the latter change every year, insomuch as I remember upon each return to my own country their old dialect was so altered that I could hardly understand the new. And I observe, when any Yahoo comes from London out of curiosity to visit me at my own house, we neither of us are able to deliver our conceptions in a manner intelligible to the other.

If the censure of Yahoos could any way affect me, I should have great reason to complain that some of them are so bold as to think my book of travels a mere fiction out of my own brain, and have gone so far as to drop hints that the Houyhnhnms and Yahoos have no more existence than the inhabitants of Utopia.

Indeed I must confess, that as to the people of Lilliput, Brobdingrag (for so the word should have been spelt, and not erroneously Brobdingnag), and Laputa, I have never yet heard of any Yahoo so presumptuous as to dispute their being, or the facts I have related concerning them ; because the truth immediately strikes every reader with conviction. And is there less probability in my account of the Houyhnhnms or Yahoos, when it is manifest as to the latter, there are so many thousands even in this city, who only differ from their brother brutes in Houyhnhm-land, because they use a sort of a jabber, and do not go naked ? I wrote for their amendment, and not their approbation. The united praise of the whole race would be of less consequence to me than the neighing of those

two degenerate Houyhnhnms I keep in my stable ; because from these, degenerate as they are, I still improve in some virtues, without any mixture of vice.

Do these miserable animals presume to think that I am so far degenerated as to defend my veracity ? Yahoo as I am, it is well known through all Houyhnhnm-land, that by the instructions and example of my illustrious master I was able in the compass of two years (although I confess with the utmost difficulty) to remove that  
 10 infernal habit of lying, shuffling, deceiving, and equivocating, so deeply rooted in the very souls of all my species, especially the Europeans.

I have other complaints to make upon this vexatious occasion ; but I forbear troubling myself or you any further. I must freely confess, that since my last return some corruptions of my Yahoo nature have revived in me by conversing with a few of your species, and particularly those of my own family, by an unavoidable necessity ; else I should never have attempted so absurd  
 20 a project as that of reforming the Yahoo race in this kingdom ; but I have now done with all such visionary schemes for ever.

*April 2, 1727.*

## THE PUBLISHER TO THE READER

THE author of these Travels, Mr. Lemuel Gulliver, is my ancient and intimate friend ; there is likewise some relation between us by the mother's side. About three years ago Mr. Gulliver, growing weary of the concourse of curious people coming to him at his house in Redriff, made a small purchase of land, with a convenient house, near Newark in Nottinghamshire, his native country ; where he now lives retired, yet in good esteem among his neighbours.

10

Although Mr. Gulliver was born in Nottinghamshire, where his father dwelt, yet I have heard him say his family came from Oxfordshire ; to confirm which, I have observed in the churchyard at Banbury, in that county, several tombs and monuments of the Gullivers.

Before he quitted Redriff, he left the custody of the following papers in my hands, with the liberty to dispose of them as I should think fit. I have carefully perused them three times : the style is very plain and simple ; and the only fault I find is, that the author, after the 20 manner of travellers, is a little too circumstantial. There is an air of truth apparent through the whole ; and indeed the author was so distinguished for his veracity, that it became a sort of proverb among his neighbours at Redriff, when any one affirmed a thing, to say it was as true as if Mr. Gulliver had spoke it.

By the advice of several worthy persons, to whom, with the author's permission, I communicated these papers, I now venture to send them into the world, hoping they may be at least, for some time, a better 30

entertainment to our young noblemen than the common scribbles of politics and party.

This volume would have been at least twice as large, if I had not made bold to strike out innumerable passages relating to the winds and tides, as well as to the variations and bearings in the several voyages ; together with the minute descriptions of the management of the ship in storms, in the style of sailors : likewise the account of the longitudes and latitudes ; wherein I have reason to  
 10 apprehend that Mr. Gulliver may be a little dissatisfied : but I was resolved to fit the work as much as possible to the general capacity of readers. However, if my own ignorance in sea-affairs shall have led me to commit some mistakes, I alone am answerable for them : and if any traveller hath a curiosity to see the whole work at large, as it came from the hand of the author, I shall be ready to gratify him.

As for any further particulars relating to the author, the reader will receive satisfaction from the first pages  
 20 of the book.

RICHARD SYMPSON.



# CONTENTS

## PART I

### A VOYAGE TO LILLIPUT

	PAGE
CHAP. I. <i>The Author gives some account of himself and family. His first inducements to travel. He is shipwrecked, and swims for his life, gets safe on shore in the country of Lilliput, is made a prisoner, and carried up the country</i>	17
CHAP. II. <i>The Emperor of Lilliput, attended by several of the nobility, come to see the Author in his confinement. The Emperor's person and habit described. Learned men appointed to teach the Author their language. He gains favour by his mild disposition. His pockets are searched, and his sword and pistols taken from him</i>	29
CHAP. III. <i>The Author diverts the Emperor and his nobility of both sexes, in a very uncommon manner. The diversions of the court of Lilliput described. The Author hath his liberty granted him, upon certain conditions</i>	40
CHAP. IV. <i>Muldendo the metropolis of Lilliput described, together with the Emperor's palace. A conversation between the Author and a principal secretary, concerning the affairs of that empire. The Author's offers to serve the Emperor in his wars</i>	49
CHAP. V. <i>The Author, by an extraordinary stratagem, prevents an invasion. A high title of honour is conferred upon him. Ambassadors arrive from the Emperor of Blefuscu and sue for peace</i>	55
CHAP. VI. <i>Of the inhabitants of Lilliput; their learning, laws and customs, the manner of educating their children. The Author's way of living in that country. His vindication of a great lady</i>	61
CHAP. VII. <i>The Author, being informed of a design to accuse him of high-treason, makes his escape to Blefuscu. His reception there</i>	72
CHAP. VIII. <i>The Author, by a lucky accident, finds means to leave Blefuscu, and, after some difficulties, returns safe to his native country</i>	81

PART II

A VOYAGE TO BROBDINGNAG

	PAGE
CHAP. I. <i>A great storm described; the long-boat sent to fetch water; the Author goes with it to discover the country. He is left on shore, is seized by one of the natives, and carried to a farmer's house. His reception there, with several accidents that happened there. A description of the inhabitants</i>	91
CHAP. II. <i>A description of the farmer's daughter. The Author carried to a market-town, and then to the metropolis. The particulars of his journey</i>	104
CHAP. III. <i>The Author sent for to court. The Queen buys him of his master the farmer, and presents him to the King. He disputes with his Majesty's great scholars. An apartment at Court provided for the Author. He is in high favour with the Queen. He stands up for the honour of his own country. His quarrels with the Queen's dwarf</i>	111
CHAP. IV. <i>The country described. A proposal for correcting modern maps. The King's palace, and some account of the metropolis. The Author's way of travelling. The chief temple described</i>	123
CHAP. V. <i>Several adventures that happened to the Author. The execution of a criminal. The Author shews his skill in navigation</i>	128
CHAP. VI. <i>Several contrivances of the Author to please the King and Queen. He shows his skill in music. The King inquires into the state of Europe, which the Author relates to him. The King's observations thereon</i>	137
CHAP. VII. <i>The Author's love of his country. He makes a proposal of much advantage to the King, which is rejected. The King's great ignorance in politics. The learning of that country very imperfect and confined. The laws, and military affairs, and parties in the State</i>	147
CHAP. VIII. <i>The King and Queen make a progress to the frontiers. The Author attends them. The manner in which he leaves the country very particularly related. He returns to England</i>	155

## PART III

A VOYAGE TO LAPUTA, BALNIBARBI, LUGGNAGG,  
GLUBBDUBDRIB, AND JAPAN

	PAGE
CHAP. I. <i>The Author sets out on his third voyage, is taken by pirates. The malice of a Dutchman. His arrival at an island. He is received into Laputa.</i>	171
CHAP. II. <i>The humours and dispositions of the Laputians described. An account of their learning. Of the King and his Court. The Author's reception there. The inhabitants subject to fear and disquietudes. An account of the women.</i>	178
CHAP. III. <i>A phenomenon solved by modern philosophy and astronomy. The Laputians' great improvements in the latter. The King's method of suppressing insurrections.</i>	188
CHAP. IV. <i>The Author leaves Laputa; is conveyed to Balnibarbi, arrives at the metropolis. A description of the metropolis, and the country adjoining. The Author hospitably received by a great Lord. His conversation with that Lord.</i>	196
CHAP. V. <i>The Author permitted to see the Grand Academy of Lagado. The Academy largely described. The Arts wherein the professors employ themselves.</i>	204
CHAP. VI. <i>A further account of the Academy. The Author proposes some improvements, which are honourably received.</i>	212
CHAP. VII. <i>The Author leaves Lagado, arrives at Maldonada. No ship ready. He takes a short voyage to Glubbdubdrib. His reception by the Governor.</i>	218
CHAP. VIII. <i>A further account of Glubbdubdrib. Ancient and modern history corrected.</i>	223
CHAP. IX. <i>The Author returns to Maldonada. Sails to the kingdom of Luggnagg. The Author confined. He is sent for to court. The manner of his admittance. The King's great lenity to his subjects.</i>	230
CHAP. X. <i>The Luggnaggians commended. A particular description of the Struldbrugs, with many conversations between the Author and some eminent persons upon that subject.</i>	235
CHAP. XI. <i>The Author leaves Luggnagg, and sails to Japan. From thence he returns in a Dutch ship to Amsterdam, and from Amsterdam to England.</i>	244

PART IV

A VOYAGE TO THE COUNTRY OF THE HOUYHNHNMS

	PAGE
CHAP. I. <i>The Author sets out as Captain of a ship. His men conspire against him, confine him a long time to his cabin, set him on shore in an unknown land. He travels up in the country. The Yahoos, a strange sort of animal, described. The Author meets two Houyhnhnms . . .</i>	251
CHAP. II. <i>The Author conducted by a Houyhnhnm to his house. The house described. The Author's reception. The food of the Houyhnhnms. The Author in distress for want of meat, is at last relieved. His manner of feeding in this country . . .</i>	259
CHAP. III. <i>The Author studious to learn the language; the Houyhnhnm his master assists in teaching him. The language described. Several Houyhnhnms of quality come out of curiosity to see the Author. He gives his master a short account of his voyage . . .</i>	266
CHAP. IV. <i>The Houyhnhnm's notion of truth and falsehood. The Author's discourse disapproved by his master. The Author gives a more particular account of himself, and the accidents of his voyage. . . .</i>	273
CHAP. V. <i>The Author, at his master's command, informs him of the state of England. The causes of war among the princes of Europe. The Author begins to explain the English constitution . . .</i>	278
CHAP. VI. <i>A continuation of the state of England under Queen Anne. The character of a first minister in the courts of Europe . . .</i>	286
CHAP. VII. <i>The Author's great love of his native country. His master's observations upon the constitution and administration of England, as described by the Author, with parallel cases and comparisons. His master's observations upon human nature . . .</i>	293
CHAP. VIII. <i>The Author relates several particulars of the Yahoos. The great virtues of the Houyhnhnms. The education and exercises of their youth. Their general assembly . . .</i>	301
CHAP. IX. <i>A grand debate at the general assembly of the Houyhnhnms, and how it was determined. The learning of the Houyhnhnms. Their buildings. Their manner of burials. The defectiveness of their language . . .</i>	307
CHAP. X. <i>The Author's economy and happy life among the Houyhnhnms. His great improvement in virtue, by</i>	

	PAGE
<i>conversing with them. Their conversations. The Author has notice given him by his master that he must depart from the country. He falls into a swoon for grief, but submits. He contrives and finishes a canoe, by the help of a fellow-servant, and puts to sea at a venture . . . . .</i>	313
CHAP. XI. <i>The Author's dangerous voyage. He arrives at New Holland, hoping to settle there. Is wounded with an arrow by one of the natives. Is seized and carried by force into a Portuguese ship. The great civilities of the Captain. The Author arrives at England . . . . .</i>	322
CHAP. XII. <i>The Author's veracity. His design in publishing this work. His censure of those travellers who swerve from the truth. The Author clears himself from any sinister ends in writing. An objection answered. The method of planting colonies. His native country commended. The right of the Crown to those countries described by the Author is justified. The difficulty of conquering them. The Author takes his last leave of the reader, proposeth his manner of living for the future, gives good advice, and concludes . . . . .</i>	332

TRAVELS  
INTO SEVERAL  
Remote NATIONS  
OF THE  
WORLD.

---

PART I.  
A VOYAGE to *LILLIPUT*.

---



---

L O N D O N:  
Printed in the Year MDCCXXVII.

Plate I Part. I Page. I.

Hogs I

P Mintoon

I Good Fortune

I Naffow

SUNDA

Sillabar

Straits of Sunda



Blefufcu



Lilliput.

Discovered, A.D. 1699.



Diamond Land.

# TRAVELS

## PART I

### A VOYAGE TO LILLIPUT

#### CHAP. I

*The Author gives some account of himself and family. His first inducements to travel. He is shipwrecked, and swims for his life, gets safe on shore in the country of Lilliput, is made a prisoner, and carried up the country.*

My father had a small estate in Nottinghamshire ;  
10 I was the third of five sons. He sent me to Emanuel  
College in Cambridge at fourteen years old, where  
I resided three years, and applied myself close to my  
studies : but the charge of maintaining me (although  
I had a very scanty allowance) being too great for  
a narrow fortune, I was bound apprentice to Mr. James  
Bates, an eminent surgeon in London, with whom  
I continued four years ; and my father now and then  
sending me small sums of money, I laid them out in  
learning navigation, and other parts of the mathematics,  
20 useful to those who intend to travel, as I always believed  
it would be some time or other my fortune to do. When  
I left Mr. Bates, I went down to my father ; where, by  
the assistance of him and my uncle John, and some  
other relations, I got forty pounds, and a promise of  
thirty pounds a year to maintain me at Leyden : there  
I studied physic two years and seven months, knowing  
it would be useful in long voyages.

Soon after my return from Leyden, I was recom-  
mended, by my good master Mr. Bates, to be surgeon to



the *Swallow*, Captain Abraham Pannell commander ; with whom I continued three years and a half, making a voyage or two into the Levant, and some other parts. When I came back, I resolved to settle in London, to which Mr. Bates, my master, encouraged me, and by him I was recommended to several patients. I took part of a small house in the Old Jury ; and being advised to alter my condition, I married Mrs. Mary Burton, second daughter to Mr. Edmund Burton hosier in Newgate-street, with whom I received four hundred <sup>10</sup> pounds for a portion.

But, my good master Bates dying in two years after, and I having few friends, my business began to fail ; for my conscience would not suffer me to imitate the bad practice of too many among my brethren. Having therefore consulted with my wife, and some of my acquaintance, I determined to go again to sea. I was surgeon successively in two ships, and made several voyages, for six years, to the East and West-Indies, by which I got some addition to my fortune. My hours of <sup>20</sup> leisure I spent in reading the best authors, ancient and modern, being always provided with a good number of books ; and when I was ashore, in observing the manners and dispositions of the people, as well as learning their language, wherein I had a great facility by the strength of my memory.

The last of these voyages not proving very fortunate, I grew weary of the sea, and intended to stay at home with my wife and family. I removed from the Old Jury to Fetter-Lane, and from thence to Wapping, hoping to <sup>30</sup> get business among the sailors ; but it would not turn to account. After three years expectation that things would mend, I accepted an advantageous offer from Captain William Prichard, master of the *Antelope*, who was making a voyage to the South-Sea. We set

sail from Bristol May 4, 1699, and our voyage at first was very prosperous.

It would not be proper, for some reasons, to trouble the reader with the particulars of our adventures in those seas : let it suffice to inform him, that in our passage from thence to the East-Indies, we were driven by a violent storm to the north-west of Van Diemen's Land. By an observation, we found ourselves in the latitude of 30 degrees 2 minutes south. Twelve of our  
10 crew were dead by immoderate labour and ill food, the rest were in a very weak condition. On the fifth of November, which was the beginning of summer in those parts, the weather being very hazy, the seamen spied a rock, within half a cable's length of the ship ; but the wind was so strong, that we were driven directly upon it, and immediately split. Six of the crew, of whom I was one, having let down the boat into the sea, made a shift to get clear of the ship, and the rock. We rowed by my computation about three leagues, till we were  
20 able to work no longer, being already spent with labour while we were in the ship. We therefore trusted ourselves to the mercy of the waves, and in about half an hour the boat was upset by a sudden flurry from the north. What became of my companions in the boat, as well as of those who escaped on the rock, or were left in the vessel, I cannot tell ; but conclude they were all lost. For my own part, I swam as fortune directed me, and was pushed forward by wind and tide. I often let my legs drop, and could feel no bottom : but when I was  
40 almost gone, and able to struggle no longer, I found myself within my depth ; and by this time the storm was much abated. The declivity was so small, that I walked near a mile before I got to the shore, which I conjectured was about eight o'clock in the evening. I then advanced forward near half a mile, but could not

discover any sign of houses or inhabitants ; at least I was in so weak a condition, that I did not observe them. I was extremely tired, and with that, and the heat of the weather, and about half a pint of brandy that *I drank as I left the ship, I found myself much inclined to sleep. I lay down on the grass, which was very short and soft, where I slept sounder than ever I remember to have done in my life, and, as I reckoned, above nine hours ; for when I awaked, it was just day-light. I attempted to rise, but was not able to stir: for, as I happened* 10 *to lie on my back, I found my arms and legs were strongly fastened on each side to the ground ; and my hair, which was long and thick, tied down in the same manner. I likewise felt several slender ligatures across my body, from my arm-pits to my thighs. I could only look upwards ; the sun began to grow hot, and the light offended my eyes. I heard a confused noise about me, but in the posture I lay, could see nothing except the sky. In a little time I felt something alive moving on my left leg, which advancing gently forward over my* 20 *breast, came almost up to my chin ; when bending my eyes downwards as much as I could, I perceived it to be a human creature not six inches high, with a bow and arrow in his hands, and a quiver at his back. In the mean time, I felt at least forty more of the same kind (as I conjectured) following the first. I was in the utmost astonishment, and roared so loud, that they all ran back in a fright ; and some of them, as I was afterwards told, were hurt with the falls they got by leaping from my sides upon the ground. However, they soon returned,* 30 *and one of them, who ventured so far as to get a full sight of my face, lifting up his hands and eyes by way of admiration, cried out in a shrill but distinct voice, Hekinah degul: the others repeated the same words several times, but I then knew not what they meant.*

I lay all this while, as the reader may believe, in great uneasiness : at length, struggling to get loose, I had the fortune to break the strings, and wrench out the pegs that fastened my left arm to the ground ; for, by lifting it up to my face, I discovered the methods they had taken to bind me, and at the same time, with a violent pull, which gave me excessive pain, I a little loosened the strings that tied down my hair on the left side, so that I was just able to turn my head about two inches.

10 But the creatures ran off a second time, before I could seize them ; whereupon there was a great shout in a very shrill accent, and after it ceased, I heard one of them cry aloud, *Tolgo phonac* ; when in an instant I felt above an hundred arrows discharged on my left hand, which pricked me like so many needles ; and besides they shot another flight into the air, as we do bombs in Europe, whereof many, I suppose, fell on my body (though I felt them not) and some on my face, which I immediately covered with my left hand. When this

20 shower of arrows was over, I fell a groaning with grief and pain, and then striving again to get loose, they discharged another volley larger than the first, and some of them attempted with spears to stick me in the sides ; but, by good luck, I had on me a buff jerkin, which they could not pierce. I thought it the most prudent method to lie still, and my design was to continue so till night, when, my left hand being already loose, I could easily free myself : and as for the inhabitants, I had reason to believe I might be a match for

30 the greatest armies they could bring against me, if they were all of the same size with him that I saw. But fortune disposed otherwise of me. When the people observed I was quiet, they discharged no more arrows ; but, by the noise I heard, I knew their numbers increased ; and about four yards from me, over against my right ear,

I heard a knocking for above an hour, like that of people at work ; when turning my head that way, as well as the pegs and strings would permit me, I saw a stage erected, about a foot and a half from the ground, capable of holding four of the inhabitants, with two or three ladders to mount it : from whence one of them, who seemed to be a person of quality, made me a long speech, whereof I understood not one syllable. But I should have mentioned, that before the principal person began his oration, he cried out three times, *Langro dehul san* 10 (these words and the former were afterwards repeated and explained to me.) Whereupon immediately about fifty of the inhabitants came, and cut the strings that fastened the left side of my head, which gave me the liberty of turning it to the right, and of observing the person and gesture of him that was to speak. He appeared to be of a middle age, and taller than any of the other three who attended him, whereof one was a page that held up his train, and seemed to be somewhat longer than my middle finger ; the other two stood 20 one on each side to support him. He acted every part of an orator, and I could observe many periods of threatenings, and others of promises, pity, and kindness. I answered in a few words, but in the most submissive manner, lifting up my left hand and both my eyes to the sun, as calling him for a witness ; and being almost famished with hunger, having not eaten a morsel for some hours before I left the ship, I found the demands of nature so strong upon me, that I could not forbear showing my impatience (perhaps against the strict rules 30 of decency) by putting my finger frequently on my mouth, to signify that I wanted food. The *Hurgo* (for so they call a great lord, as I afterwards learnt) understood me very well. He descended from the stage, and commanded that several ladders should be applied to

my sides, on which above an hundred of the inhabitants mounted, and walked towards my mouth, laden with baskets full of meat, which had been provided, and sent thither by the King's orders, upon the first intelligence he received of me. I observed there was the flesh of several animals, but could not distinguish them by the taste. There were shoulders, legs, and loins, shaped like those of mutton, and very well dressed, but smaller than the wings of a lark. I ate them by two or three at  
10 a mouthful, and took three loaves at a time, about the bigness of musket bullets. They supplied me as they could, showing a thousand marks of wonder and astonishment at my bulk and appetite. I then made another sign that I wanted drink. They found by my eating that a small quantity would not suffice me, and being a most ingenious people, they slung up with great dexterity one of their largest hogshheads, then rolled it towards my hand, and beat out the top; I drank it off at a draught, which I might well do, for it did not hold  
20 half a pint, and tasted like a small wine of Burgundy, but much more delicious. They brought me a second hogshhead, which I drank in the same manner, and made signs for more, but they had none to give me. When I had performed these wonders, they shouted for joy, and danced upon my breast, repeating several times as they did at first, *Hekinah degul*. They made me a sign that I should throw down the two hogshheads, but first warning the people below to stand out of the way, crying aloud, *Borach mivola*, and when they saw the  
30 vessels in the air, there was an universal shout of *Hekinah degul*. I confess I was often tempted, while they were passing backwards and forwards on my body, to seize forty or fifty of the first that came in my reach, and dash them against the ground. But the remembrance of what I had felt, which probably might not be the worst

they could do, and the promise of honour I made them, for so I interpreted my submissive behaviour, soon drove out these imaginations. Besides, I now considered myself as bound by the laws of hospitality to a people who had treated me with so much expense and magnificence. However, in my thoughts I could not sufficiently wonder at the intrepidity of these diminutive mortals, who durst venture to mount and walk upon my body, while one of my hands was at liberty, without trembling at the very sight of so prodigious a creature as I must 10 appear to them. After some time, when they observed that I made no more demands for meat, there appeared before me a person of high rank from his Imperial Majesty. His Excellency, having mounted on the small of my right leg, advanced forwards up to my face, with about a dozen of his retinue. And producing his credentials under the Signet Royal, which he applied close to my eyes, spoke about ten minutes, without any signs of anger, but with a kind of determinate resolution; often pointing forwards, which, as I after- 20 wards found, was towards the capital city, about half a mile distant, whither it was agreed by his Majesty in council that I must be conveyed. I answered in few words, but to no purpose, and made a sign with my hand that was loose, putting it to the other (but over his Excellency's head, for fear of hurting him or his train) and then to my own head and body, to signify that I desired my liberty. It appeared that he understood me well enough, for he shook his head by way of disapprobation, and held his hand in a posture to show 30 that I must be carried as a prisoner. However, he made other signs to let me understand that I should have meat and drink enough, and very good treatment. Whereupon I once more thought of attempting to break my bonds, but again, when I felt the smart of their

arrows upon my face and hands, which were all in blisters, and many of the darts still sticking in them, and observing likewise that the number of my enemies increased, I gave tokens to let them know that they might do with me what they pleased. Upon this the *Hurgo* and his train withdrew with much civility and cheerful countenances. Soon after I heard a general shout, with frequent repetitions of the words, *Peplom selan*, and I felt great numbers of the people on my  
10 left side relaxing the cords to such a degree, that I was able to turn upon my right. But before this, they had daubed my face and both my hands with a sort of ointment very pleasant to the smell, which in a few minutes removed all the smart of their arrows. These circumstances, added to the refreshment I had received by their victuals and drink, which were very nourishing, disposed me to sleep. I slept about eight hours, as I was afterwards assured; and it was no wonder, for the physicians, by  
20 the Emperor's order, had mingled a sleepy potion in the hogshheads of wine.

It seems that upon the first moment I was discovered sleeping on the ground after my landing, the Emperor had early notice of it by an express; and determined in council that I should be tied in the manner I have related (which was done in the night while I slept), that plenty of meat and drink should be sent me, and a machine prepared to carry me to the capital city.

This resolution perhaps may appear very bold and  
30 dangerous, and I am confident would not be imitated by any prince in Europe on the like occasion; however, in my opinion, it was extremely prudent, as well as generous. For supposing these people had endeavoured to kill me with their spears and arrows while I was asleep, I should certainly have awaked with the first sense of



smart, which might so far have roused my rage and strength, as to have enabled me to break the strings wherewith I was tied ; after which, as they were not able to make resistance, so they could expect no mercy.

These people are most excellent mathematicians, and arrived to a great perfection in mechanics by the countenance and encouragement of the Emperor, who is a renowned patron of learning. This prince hath several machines fixed on wheels for the carriage of trees and other great weights. He often builds his 10 largest men of war, whereof some are nine foot long, in the woods where the timber grows, and has them carried on these engines three or four hundred yards to the sea. Five hundred carpenters and engineers were immediately set at work to prepare the greatest engine they had. It was a frame of wood raised three inches from the ground, about seven foot long and four wide, moving upon twenty-two wheels. The shout I heard was upon the arrival of this engine, which it seems set out in four hours after my landing. It was 20 brought parallel to me as I lay. But the principal difficulty was to raise and place me in this vehicle. Eighty poles, each of one foot high, were erected for this purpose, and very strong cords of the bigness of packthread were fastened by hooks to many bandages, which the workmen had girt round my neck, my hands, my body, and my legs. Nine hundred of the strongest men were employed to draw up these cords by many pulleys fastened on the poles, and thus, in less than three hours, I was raised and slung into the engine, and 30 there tied fast. All this I was told, for while the whole operation was performing, I lay in a profound sleep, by the force of that soporiferous medicine infused into my liquor. Fifteen hundred of the Emperor's largest horses, each about four inches and a half high, were

employed to draw me towards the metropolis, which, as I said, was half a mile distant.

About four hours after we began our journey, I awaked by a very ridiculous accident ; for the carriage being stopped a while to adjust something that was out of order, two or three of the young natives had the curiosity to see how I looked when I was asleep ; they climbed up into the engine, and advancing very sottly to my face, one of them, an officer in the Guards, put the sharp  
10 end of his half-pike a good way up into my left nostril, which tickled my nose like a straw, and made me sneeze violently : whereupon they stole off unperceived, and it was three weeks before I knew the cause of my awaking so suddenly. We made a long march the remaining part of that day, and rested at night with five hundred guards on each side of me, half with torches, and half with bows and arrows, ready to shoot me if I should offer to stir. The next morning at sunrise we continued our march, and arrived within two hundred yards of the city gates  
20 about noon. The Emperor, and all his court, came out to meet us ; but his great officers would by no means suffer his Majesty to endanger his person by mounting on my body.

At the place where the carriage stopped, there stood an ancient temple, esteemed to be the largest in the whole kingdom, which having been polluted some years before by an unnatural murder, was, according to the zeal of those people, looked on as profane, and therefore had been applied to common uses, and all the ornaments  
30 and furniture carried away. In this edifice it was determined I should lodge. The great gate fronting to the north was about four foot high, and almost two foot wide, through which I could easily creep. On each side of the gate was a small window not above six inches from the ground : into that on the left side, the King s

smiths conveyed fourscore and eleven chains, like those that hang to a lady's watch in Europe, and almost as large, which were locked to my left leg with six and thirty padlocks. Over against this temple, on t'other side of the great highway, at twenty foot distance, there was a turret at least five foot high. Here the Emperor ascended with many principal lords of his court, to have an opportunity of viewing me, as I was told, for I could not see them. It was reckoned that above an hundred thousand inhabitants came out of the town upon the <sup>10</sup> same errand ; and in spite of my guards, I believe there could not be fewer than ten thousand, at several times, who mounted upon my body by the help of ladders. But a proclamation was soon issued to forbid it upon pain of death. When the workmen found it was impossible for me to break loose, they cut all the strings that bound me ; whereupon I rose up with as melancholy a disposition as ever I had in my life. But the noise and astonishment of the people at seeing me rise and walk, are not to be expressed. The chains that held my <sup>20</sup> left leg were about two yards long, and gave me not only the liberty of walking backwards and forwards in a semi-circle ; but, being fixed within four inches of the gate, allowed me to creep in, and lie at my full length in the temple.

## CHAP. II

*The Emperor of Lilliput, attended by several of the nobility, come to see the Author in his confinement. The Emperor's person and habit described. Learned men appointed to teach the Author their language. He gains favour by his mild disposition. His pockets are searched, and his sword and pistols taken from him.*

WHEN I found myself on my feet, I looked about me, and must confess I never beheld a more entertaining prospect. The country round appeared like a continued  
10 garden, and the inclosed fields, which were generally forty foot square, resembled so many beds of flowers. These fields were intermingled with woods of half a stang, and the tallest trees, as I could judge, appeared to be seven foot high. I viewed the town on my left hand, which looked like the painted scene of a city in a theatre.

The Emperor was already descended from the tower, and advancing on horseback towards me, which had like to have cost him dear ; for the beast, though very well trained, yet wholly unused to such a sight, which  
20 appeared as if a mountain moved before him, reared up on his hinder feet : but that prince, who is an excellent horseman, kept his seat, till his attendants ran in, and held the bridle, while his master had time to dismount. When he alighted, he surveyed me round with great admiration, but kept without the length of my chain. He ordered his cooks and butlers, who were already prepared, to give me victuals and drink, which they pushed forward in a sort of vehicles upon wheels till I could reach them. I took these vehicles, and soon  
30 emptied them all ; twenty of them were filled with meat, and ten with liquor ; each of the former afforded me two or three good mouthfuls, and I emptied the liquor of ten

vessels, which was contained in earthen vials, into one vehicle, drinking it off at a draught ; and so I did with the rest. The Empress, and young Princes of the blood, of both sexes, attended by many ladies, sat at some distance in their chairs ; but upon the accident that happened to the Emperor's horse, they alighted, and came near his person, which I am now going to describe. He is taller by almost the breadth of my nail than any of his court, which alone is enough to strike an awe into the beholders. His features are strong and masculine,<sup>10</sup> with an Austrian lip and arched nose, his complexion olive, his countenance erect, his body and limbs well proportioned, all his motions graceful, and his deportment majestic. He was then past his prime, being twenty-eight years and three quarters old, of which he had reigned about seven, in great felicity, and generally victorious. For the better convenience of beholding him, I lay on my side, so that my face was parallel to his, and he stood but three yards off : however, I have had him since many times in my hand, and therefore cannot be<sup>20</sup> deceived in the description. His dress was very plain and simple, and the fashion of it between the Asiatic and the European ; but he had on his head a light helmet of gold, adorned with jewels, and a plume on the crest. He held his sword drawn in his hand, to defend himself, if I should happen to break loose ; it was almost three inches long, the hilt and scabbard were gold enriched with diamonds. His voice was shrill, but very clear and articulate, and I could distinctly hear it when I stood up. The ladies and courtiers were<sup>30</sup> all most magnificently clad, so that the spot they stood upon seemed to resemble a petticoat spread on the ground, embroidered with figures of gold and silver. His Imperial Majesty spoke often to me, and I returned answers, but neither of us could understand a syllable.

There were several of his priests and lawyers present (as I conjectured by their habits) who were commanded to address themselves to me, and I spoke to them in as many languages as I had the least smattering of, which were High and Low Dutch, Latin, French, Spanish, Italian, and *Lingua Franca*; but all to no purpose. After about two hours the court retired, and I was left with a strong guard, to prevent the impertinence, and probably the malice of the rabble, who were very  
10 impatient to crowd about me as near as they durst, and some of them had the impudence to shoot their arrows at me as I sat on the ground by the door of my house, whereof one very narrowly missed my left eye. But the colonel ordered six of the ringleaders to be seized, and thought no punishment so proper as to deliver them bound into my hands, which some of his soldiers accordingly did, pushing them forwards with the butt-ends of their pikes into my reach; I took them all in my right hand, put five of them into my coat-pocket,  
20 and as to the sixth, I made a countenance as if I would eat him alive. The poor man squalled terribly, and the colonel and his officers were in much pain, especially when they saw me take out my penknife: but I soon put them out of fear; for, looking mildly, and immediately cutting the strings he was bound with, I set him gently on the ground, and away he ran. I treated the rest in the same manner, taking them one by one out of my pocket, and I observed both the soldiers and people were highly obliged at this mark of my clemency,  
30 which was represented very much to my advantage at court.

Towards night I got with some difficulty into my house, where I lay on the ground, and continued to do so about a fortnight; during which time the Emperor gave orders to have a bed prepared for me. Six hundred

beds of the common measure were brought in carriages, and worked up in my house ; an hundred and fifty of their beds sewn together made up the breadth and length, and these were four double, which however kept me but very indifferently from the hardness of the floor, that was of smooth stone. By the same computation they provided me with sheets, blankets, and coverlets, tolerable enough for one who had been so long inured to hardships as I.

As the news of my arrival spread through the kingdom, 10 it brought prodigious numbers of rich, idle, and curious people to see me ; so that the villages were almost emptied, and great neglect of tillage and household affairs must have ensued, if his Imperial Majesty had not provided, by several proclamations and orders of state, against this inconveniency. He directed that those who had already beheld me should return home, and not presume to come within fifty yards of my house without licence from court ; whereby the secretaries of state got considerable fees. 20

In the mean time, the Emperor held frequent councils to debate what course should be taken with me ; and I was afterwards assured by a particular friend, a person of great quality, who was looked upon to be as much in the secret as any, that the court was under many difficulties concerning me. They apprehended my breaking loose, that my diet would be very expensive, and might cause a famine. Sometimes they determined to starve me, or at least to shoot me in the face and hands with poisoned arrows, which would soon dispatch 30 me : but again they considered, that the stench of so large a carcass might produce a plague in the metropolis, and probably spread through the whole kingdom. In the midst of these consultations, several officers of the army went to the door of the great council-chamber ;

and two of them being admitted, gave an account of my behaviour to the six criminals above-mentioned, which made so favourable an impression in the breast of his Majesty and the whole board in my behalf, that an Imperial Commission was issued out, obliging all the villages nine hundred yards round the city, to deliver in every morning six beeves, forty sheep, and other victuals for my sustenance ; together with a proportionable quantity of bread, and wine, and other liquors ;  
10 for the due payment of which his Majesty gave assignments upon his treasury. For this prince lives chiefly upon his own demesnes, seldom, except upon great occasions, raising any subsidies upon his subjects, who are bound to attend him in his wars at their own expense. An establishment was also made of six hundred persons to be my domestics, who had board-wages allowed for their maintenance, and tents built for them very conveniently on each side of my door. It was likewise ordered, that three hundred tailors should make me  
20 a suit of clothes after the fashion of the country : that six of his Majesty's greatest scholars should be employed to instruct me in their language : and, lastly, that the Emperor's horses, and those of the nobility, and troops of guards, should be frequently exercised in my sight, to accustom themselves to me. All these orders were duly put in execution, and in about three weeks I made a great progress in learning their language ; during which time the Emperor frequently honoured me with his visits, and was pleased to assist my masters in teaching  
30 me. We began already to converse together in some sort ; and the first words I learnt were to express my desire that he would please to give me my liberty, which I every day repeated on my knees. His answer, as I could apprehend it, was, that this must be a work of time, not to be thought on without the advice of his



council, and that first I must *Lumos kelmin pesso desmar lon emposo*; that is, swear a peace with him and his kingdom. However, that I should be used with all kindness; and he advised me to acquire, by my patience and discreet behaviour, the good opinion of himself and his subjects. He desired I would not take it ill, if he gave orders to certain proper officers to search me; for probably I might carry about me several weapons, which must needs be dangerous things, if they answered the bulk of so prodigious a person. I said, his Majesty 10 should be satisfied, for I was ready to strip myself, and turn up my pockets before him. This I delivered part in words, and part in signs. He replied, that by the laws of the kingdom I must be searched by two of his officers; that he knew this could not be done without my consent and assistance; that he had so good an opinion of my generosity and justice, as to trust their persons in my hands: that whatever they took from me should be returned when I left the country, or paid for at the rate which I would set upon them. I took up the two officers 20 in my hands, put them first into my coat-pockets, and then into every other pocket about me, except my two fobs, and another secret pocket I had no mind should be searched, wherein I had some little necessaries that were of no consequence to any but myself. In one of my fobs there was a silver watch, and in the other a small quantity of gold in a purse. These gentlemen, having pen, ink, and paper about them, made an exact inventory of every thing they saw; and when they had done, desired I would set them down, that they might deliver 30 it to the Emperor. This inventory I afterwards translated into English, and is word for word as follows.

*Imprimis*, In the right coat-pocket of the Great Man-Mountain (for so I interpret the words *Quinbus Flestrin*) after the strictest search, we found only one great piece

of coarse cloth, large enough to be a foot-cloth for your Majesty's chief room of state. In the left pocket we saw a huge silver chest, with a cover of the same metal, which we the searchers were not able to lift. We desired it should be opened, and one of us stepping into it, found himself up to the mid leg in a sort of dust, some part whereof flying up to our faces, set us both a sneezing for several times together. In his right waistcoat-pocket we found a prodigious bundle of white  
10 thin substances, folded one over another, about the bigness of three men, tied with a strong cable, and marked with black figures ; which we humbly conceive to be writings, every letter almost half as large as the palm of our hands. In the left there was a sort of engine, from the back of which were extended twenty long poles, resembling the palisados before your Majesty's court ; wherewith we conjecture the Man-Mountain combs his head, for we did not always trouble him with questions, because we found it a great difficulty to make  
20 him understand us. In the large pocket on the right side of his middle cover (so I translate the word *ranfu-lo*, by which they meant my breeches) we saw a hollow pillar of iron, about the length of a man, fastened to a strong piece of timber, larger than the pillar ; and upon one side of the pillar were huge pieces of iron sticking out, cut into strange figures, which we know not what to make of. In the left pocket, another engine of the same kind. In the smaller pocket on the right side, were several round flat pieces of white and red metal,  
30 of different bulk ; some of the white, which seemed to be silver, were so large and heavy, that my comrade and I could hardly lift them. In the left pocket were two black pillars irregularly shaped : we could not, without difficulty, reach the top of them as we stood at the bottom of his pocket. One of them was covered, and

seemed all of a piece : but at the upper end of the other, there appeared a white round substance, about twice the bigness of our heads. Within each of these was enclosed a prodigious plate of steel ; which, by our orders, we obliged him to show us, because we apprehended they might be dangerous engines. He took them out of their cases, and told us, that in his own country his practice was to shave his beard with one of these, and to cut his meat with the other. There were two pockets which we could not enter : these he called his fobs ; they were 10 two large slits cut into the top of his middle cover, but squeezed close by the pressure of his belly. Out of the right fob hung a great silver chain, with a wonderful kind of engine at the bottom. We directed him to draw out whatever was fastened to that chain ; which appeared to be a globe, half silver, and half of some transparent metal : for on the transparent side we saw certain strange figures circularly drawn, and thought we could touch them, till we found our fingers stopped by that lucid substance. He put this engine to our 20 ears, which made an incessant noise like that of a water-mill : and we conjecture it is either some unknown animal, or the god that he worships ; but we are more inclined to the latter opinion, because he assures us, (if we understood him right, for he expressed himself very imperfectly) that he seldom did any thing without consulting it : he called it his oracle, and said it pointed out the time for every action of his life. From the left fob he took out a net almost large enough for a fisherman, but contrived to open and shut like a purse, and served 30 him for the same use : we found therein several massy pieces of yellow metal, which, if they be real gold, must be of immense value.

Having thus, in obedience to your Majesty's commands, diligently searched all his pockets, we observed a girdle

about his waist made of the hide of some prodigious animal ; from which, on the left side, hung a sword of the length of five men ; and on the right, a bag or pouch divided into two cells, each cell capable of holding three of your Majesty's subjects. In one of these cells were several globes or balls of a most ponderous metal, about the bigness of our heads, and requiring a strong hand to lift them : the other cell contained a heap of certain black grains, but of no great bulk or weight, for we could  
10 hold above fifty of them in the palms of our hands.

This is an exact inventory of what we found about the body of the Man-Mountain, who used us with great civility, and due respect to your Majesty's commission. Signed and sealed on the fourth day of the eighty-ninth moon of your Majesty's auspicious reign.

CLEFREN FRELOCK, MARSI FRELOCK.

When this inventory was read over to the Emperor, he directed me, although in very gentle terms, to deliver up the several particulars. He first called for my scimitar,  
20 which I took out, scabbard and all. In the mean time he ordered three thousand of his choicest troops (who then attended him) to surround me at a distance, with their bows and arrows just ready to discharge : but I did not observe it, for my eyes were wholly fixed upon his Majesty. He then desired me to draw my scimitar, which, although it had got some rust by the sea-water, was in most parts exceeding bright. I did so, and immediately all the troops gave a shout between terror and surprise ; for the sun shone clear, and the reflection  
30 dazzled their eyes as I waved the scimitar to and fro in my hand. His Majesty, who is a most magnanimous prince, was less daunted than I could expect ; he ordered me to return it into the scabbard, and cast it on the ground as gently as I could, about six foot from the end

of my chain. The next thing he demanded was one of the hollow iron pillars, by which he meant my pocket-pistols. I drew it out, and at his desire, as well as I could, expressed to him the use of it; and charging it only with powder, which by the closeness of my pouch happened to escape wetting in the sea (an inconvenience against which all prudent mariners take special care to provide) I first cautioned the Emperor not to be afraid, and then I let it off in the air. The astonishment here was much greater than at the sight of my scimitar. 10 Hundreds fell down as if they had been struck dead; and even the Emperor, although he stood his ground, could not recover himself in some time. I delivered up both my pistols in the same manner as I had done my scimitar, and then my pouch of powder and bullets; begging him that the former might be kept from the fire, for it would kindle with the smallest spark, and blow up his imperial palace into the air. I likewise delivered up my watch, which the Emperor was very curious to see, and commanded two of his tallest yeomen 20 of the guards to bear it on a pole upon their shoulders, as draymen in England do a barrel of ale. He was amazed at the continual noise it made, and the motion of the minute-hand, which he could easily discern; for their sight is much more acute than ours; and asked the opinions of his learned men about him, which were various and remote, as the reader may well imagine without my repeating; although indeed I could not very perfectly understand them. I then gave up my silver and copper money, my purse with nine large 30 pieces of gold, and some smaller ones; my knife and razor, my comb and silver snuff-box, my handkerchief and journal-book. My scimitar, pistols, and pouch, were conveyed in carriages to his Majesty's stores; but the rest of my goods were returned me.

I had, as I before observed, one private pocket which escaped their search, wherein there was a pair of spectacles (which I sometimes use for the weakness of my eyes), a pocket perspective, and several other little conveniences ; which, being of no consequence to the Emperor, I did not think myself bound in honour to discover, and I apprehended they might be lost or spoiled if I ventured them out of my possession.

## CHAP. III

*The Author diverts the Emperor and his nobility of both sexes, in a very uncommon manner. The diversions of the court of Lilliput described. The Author hath his liberty granted him upon certain conditions.*

My gentleness and good behaviour had gained so far on the Emperor and his court, and indeed upon the army and people in general, that I began to conceive hopes of getting my liberty in a short time. I took all possible methods to cultivate this favourable disposition. 10 The natives came by degrees to be less apprehensive of any danger from me. I would sometimes lie down, and let five or six of them dance on my hand. And at last the boys and girls would venture to come and play at hide and seek in my hair. I had now made a good progress in understanding and speaking their language. The Emperor had a mind one day to entertain me with several of the country shows, wherein they exceed all nations I have known, both for dexterity and magnificence. I was diverted with none so much as that of the 20 rope-dancers, performed upon a slender white thread, extended about two foot, and twelve inches from the ground. Upon which I shall desire liberty, with the reader's patience, to enlarge a little.

This diversion is only practised by those persons who are candidates for great employments and high favour at court. They are trained in this art from their youth, and are not always of noble birth, or liberal education. When a great office is vacant either by death or disgrace (which often happens) five or six of those candidates 30 petition the Emperor to entertain his Majesty and the

*court with a dance on the rope, and whoever jumps the highest without falling, succeeds in the office. Very often the chief ministers themselves are commanded to show their skill, and to convince the Emperor that they have not lost their faculty. Flimnap, the Treasurer, is allowed to cut a caper on the straight rope, at least an inch higher than any other lord in the whole empire. I have seen him do the summerset several times together upon a trencher fixed on the rope, which is no thicker than*  
10 *a common pack-thread in England. My friend Reldresal, principal Secretary for Private Affairs, is, in my opinion, if I am not partial, the second after the Treasurer; the rest of the great officers are much upon a par.*

These diversions are often attended with fatal accidents, whereof great numbers are on record. I myself have seen two or three candidates break a limb. But the danger is much greater when the ministers themselves are commanded to show their dexterity; for by contending to excel themselves and their fellows, they strain so far,  
20 that there is hardly one of them who hath not received a fall, and some of them two or three. I was assured that a year or two before my arrival, Flimnap would have infallibly broke his neck, if one of the King's cushions, that accidentally lay on the ground, had not weakened the force of his fall.

There is likewise another diversion, which is only shown before the Emperor and Empress, and first minister, upon particular occasions. The Emperor lays on the table three fine silken threads of six inches long.  
30 One is blue, the other red, and the third green. These threads are proposed as prizes for those persons whom the Emperor hath a mind to distinguish by a peculiar mark of his favour. The ceremony is performed in his Majesty's great chamber of state, where the candidates are to undergo a trial of dexterity very different from the



former, and such as I have not observed the least resemblance of in any other country of the old or the new world. The Emperor holds a stick in his hands, both ends parallel to the horizon, while the candidates, advancing one by one, sometimes leap over the stick, sometimes creep under it backwards and forwards several times, according as the stick is advanced or depressed. Sometimes the Emperor holds one end of the stick, and his first minister the other ; sometimes the minister has it entirely to himself. Whoever 10 performs his part with most agility, and holds out the longest in leaping and creeping, is rewarded with the blue-coloured silk ; the red is given to the next, and the green to the third, which they all wear girt twice round about the middle ; and you see few great persons about this court who are not adorned with one of these girdles.

The horses of the army, and those of the royal stables, having been daily led before me, were no longer shy, but would come up to my very feet without starting. The riders would leap them over my hand as I held it on 20 the ground, and one of the Emperor's huntsmen, upon a large courser, took my foot, shoe and all ; which was indeed a prodigious leap. I had the good fortune to divert the Emperor one day after a very extraordinary manner. I desired he would order several sticks of two foot high, and the thickness of an ordinary cane, to be brought me ; whereupon his Majesty commanded the master of his woods to give directions accordingly ; and the next morning six woodmen arrived with as many carriages, drawn by eight horses to each. I took 30 nine of these sticks, and fixing them firmly in the ground in a quadrangular figure, two foot and a half square, I took four other sticks, and tied them parallel at each corner, about two foot from the ground ; then I fastened my handkerchief to the nine sticks that stood erect,

and extended it on all sides till it was as tight as the top of a drum ; and the four parallel sticks rising about five inches higher than the handkerchief served as ledges on each side. When I had finished my work, I desired the Emperor to let a troop of his best horse, twenty-four in number, come and exercise upon this plain. His Majesty approved of the proposal, and I took them up one by one in my hands, ready mounted and armed, with the proper officers to exercise them. As soon  
10 as they got into order, they divided into two parties, performed mock skirmishes, discharged blunt arrows, drew their swords, fled and pursued, attacked and retired, and in short discovered the best military discipline I ever beheld. The parallel sticks secured them and their horses from falling over the stage ; and the Emperor was so much delighted, that he ordered this entertainment to be repeated several days, and once was pleased to be lifted up and give the word of command ; and, with great difficulty, persuaded even the  
20 Empress herself to let me hold her in her close chair within two yards of the stage, from whence she was able to take a full view of the whole performance. It was my good fortune that no ill accident happened in these entertainments, only once a fiery horse that belonged to one of the captains pawing with his hoof struck a hole in my handkerchief, and his foot slipping, he overthrew his rider and himself ; but I immediately relieved them both, and covering the hole with one hand, I set down the troop with the other, in the same  
30 manner as I took them up. The horse that fell was strained in the left shoulder, but the rider got no hurt, and I repaired my handkerchief as well as I could : however, I would not trust to the strength of it any more in such dangerous enterprises.

About two or three days before I was set at liberty.

as I was entertaining the court with these kind of feats, there arrived an express to inform his Majesty that some of his subjects riding near the place where I was first taken up, had seen a great black substance lying on the ground, very oddly shaped, extending its edges round as wide as his Majesty's bedchamber, and rising up in the middle as high as a man ; that it was no living creature, as they at first apprehended, for it lay on the grass without motion, and some of them had walked round it several times : that by mounting upon each 10 other's shoulders, they had got to the top, which was flat and even, and stamping upon it they found it was hollow within ; that they humbly conceived it might be something belonging to the Man-Mountain, and if his Majesty pleased, they would undertake to bring it with only five horses. I presently knew what they meant, and was glad at heart to receive this intelligence. It seems upon my first reaching the shore after our shipwreck, I was in such confusion, that before I came to the place where I went to sleep, my hat, which I had 20 fastened with a string to my head while I was rowing, and had stuck on all the time I was swimming, fell off after I came to land ; the string, as I conjecture, breaking by some accident which I never observed, but thought my hat had been lost at sea. I entreated his Imperial Majesty to give orders it might be brought to me as soon as possible, describing to him the use and the nature of it : and the next day the waggoners arrived with it, but not in a very good condition ; they had bored two holes in the brim, within an inch and half of the edge, and fastened 30 two hooks in the holes ; these hooks were tied by a long cord to the harness, and thus my hat was dragged along for above half an English mile : but the ground in that country being extremely smooth and level, it received less damage than I expected.

Two days after this adventure, the Emperor having ordered that part of his army which quarters in and about his metropolis to be in a readiness, took a fancy of diverting himself in a very singular manner. He desired I would stand like a Colossus, with my legs as far asunder as I conveniently could. He then commanded his General (who was an old experienced leader, and a great patron of mine) to draw up the troops in close order, and march them under me, the foot by twenty-four in a breast, and  
10 the horse by sixteen, with drums beating, colours flying, and pikes advanced. This body consisted of three thousand foot, and a thousand horse.

I had sent so many memorials and petitions for my liberty, that his Majesty at length mentioned the matter, first in the cabinet, and then in a full council; where it was opposed by none, except Skyresh Bolgolam, who was pleased, without any provocation, to be my mortal enemy. But it was carried against him by the whole board, and confirmed by the Emperor. That minister  
20 was *Galbet*, or Admiral of the Realm, very much in his master's confidence, and a person well versed in affairs, but of a morose and sour complexion. However, he was at length persuaded to comply; but prevailed that the articles and conditions upon which I should be set free, and to which I must swear, should be drawn up by himself. These articles were brought to me by Skyresh Bolgolam in person, attended by two under-secretaries, and several persons of distinction. After they were read, I was demanded to swear to the performance of  
30 them; first in the manner of my own country, and afterwards in the method prescribed by their laws; which was to hold my right foot in my left hand, to place the middle finger of my right hand on the crown of my head, and my thumb on the tip of my right ear. But because the reader may perhaps be curious to have

some idea of the style and manner of expression peculiar to that people, as well as to know the articles upon which I recovered my liberty, I have made a translation of the whole instrument word for word, as near as I was able, which I here offer to the public.

GOLBASTO MOMAREN EVLAME GURDILO SHEFIN MULLY ULLY GUE, most mighty Emperor of Lilliput, delight and terror of the universe, whose dominions extend five thousand *blustrugs* (about twelve miles in circumference) to the extremities of the globe ; monarch of all monarchs, 10 taller than the sons of men ; whose feet press down to the centre, and whose head strikes against the sun ; at whose nod the princes of the earth shake their knees ; pleasant as the spring, comfortable as the summer, fruitful as autumn, dreadful as winter. His most sublime Majesty proposeth to the Man-Mountain, lately arrived to our celestial dominions, the following articles, which by a solemn oath he shall be obliged to perform.

First, The Man-Mountain shall not depart from our dominions, without our licence under our great seal. 20

2nd, He shall not presume to come into our metropolis, without our express order ; at which time the inhabitants shall have two hours warning to keep within their doors.

3rd, The said Man-Mountain shall confine his walks to our principal high roads, and not offer to walk or lie down in a meadow or field of corn

4th, As he walks the said roads, he shall take the utmost care not to trample upon the bodies of any of our loving subjects, their horses, or carriages, nor take any 30 of our said subjects into his hands, without their own consent.

5th. If an express requires extraordinary dispatch, the Man-Mountain shall be obliged to carry in his pocket the messenger and horse a six days journey once in every moon, and return the said messenger back (if so required) safe to our Imperial Presence.

6th, He shall be our ally against our enemies in the Island of Blefuscu, and do his utmost to destroy their fleet, which is now preparing to invade us.

7th, That the said Man-Mountain shall, at his times  
10 of leisure, be aiding and assisting to our workmen, in helping to raise certain great stones, towards covering the wall of the principal park, and other our royal buildings.

8th, That the said Man-Mountain shall, in two moons' time, deliver in an exact survey of the circumference of our dominions by a computation of his own paces round the coast.

Lastly, That upon his solemn oath to observe all the above articles, the said Man-Mountain shall have a daily  
20 allowance of meat and drink sufficient for the support of 1728 of our subjects, with free access to our Royal Person, and other marks of our favour. Given at our Palace at Belfaborac the twelfth day of the ninety-first moon of our reign.

I swore and subscribed to these articles with great cheerfulness and content, although some of them were not so honourable as I could have wished, which proceeded wholly from the malice of Skyresh Bolgolam the High Admiral — whereupon my chains were immedi-  
30 ately unlocked, and I was at full liberty, the Emperor himself in person did me the honour to be by at the whole ceremony. I made my acknowledgements by prostrating myself at his Majesty's feet. but he

commanded me to rise ; and after many gracious expressions, which, to avoid the censure of vanity, I shall not repeat, he added, that he hoped I should prove a useful servant, and well deserve all the favours he had already conferred upon me, or might do for the future.

The reader may please to observe, that in the last article for the recovery of my liberty the Emperor stipulates to allow me a quantity of meat and drink sufficient for the support of 1728 Lilliputians. Some time after, asking a friend at court how they came to <sup>10</sup> fix on that determinate number, he told me that his Majesty's mathematicians, having taken the height of my body by the help of a quadrant, and finding it to exceed theirs in the proportion of twelve to one, they concluded from the similarity of their bodies, that mine must contain at least 1728 of theirs, and consequently would require as much food as was necessary to support that number of Lilliputians. By which the reader may conceive an idea of the ingenuity of that people, as well as the prudent and exact economy of so great a prince. <sup>20</sup>

## CHAP. IV

*Mildendo the metropolis of Lilliput described, together with the Emperor's palace. A conversation between the Author and a principal Secretary, concerning the affairs of that empire. The Author's offers to serve the Emperor in his wars.*

THE first request I made after I had obtained my liberty, was, that I might have licence to see Mildendo, the metropolis ; which the Emperor easily granted me, but with a special charge to do no hurt either to the  
10 inhabitants or their houses. The people had notice by proclamation of my design to visit the town. The wall which encompassed it is two foot and an half high, and at least eleven inches broad, so that a coach and horses may be driven very safely round it ; and it is flanked with strong towers at ten foot distance. I stept over the great Western Gate, and passed very gently, and sideling through the two principal streets, only in my short waistcoat, for fear of damaging the roofs and eaves of the houses with the skirts of my coat. I walked with  
20 the utmost circumspection, to avoid treading on any stragglers, that might remain in the streets, although the orders were very strict, that all people should keep in their houses at their own peril. The garret windows and tops of houses were so crowded with spectators, that I thought in all my travels I had not seen a more populous place. The city is an exact square, each side of the wall being five hundred foot long. The two great streets, which run cross and divide it into four quarters, are five foot wide. The lanes and alleys, which I could not  
30 enter, but only viewed them as I passed, are from twelve to eighteen inches. The town is capable of holding five



hundred thousand souls. The houses are from three to five stories. The shops and markets well provided.

The Emperor's palace is in the centre of the city, where the two great streets meet. It is enclosed by a wall of two foot high, and twenty foot distant from the buildings. I had his Majesty's permission to step over this wall ; and the space being so wide between that and the palace, I could easily view it on every side. The outward court is a square of forty foot, and includes two other courts : in the inmost are the royal apartments, which I was <sup>10</sup> very desirous to see, but found it extremely difficult ; for the great gates, from one square into another, were but eighteen inches high and seven inches wide. Now the buildings of the outer court were at least five foot high, and it was impossible for me to stride over them without infinite damage to the pile, though the walls were strongly built of hewn stone, and four inches thick. At the same time the Emperor had a great desire that I should see the magnificence of his palace ; but this I was not able to do till three days after, which I spent in cutting down <sup>20</sup> with my knife some of the largest trees in the royal park, about an hundred yards distant from the city. Of these trees I made two stools, each about three foot high, and strong enough to bear my weight. The people having received notice a second time, I went again through the city to the palace, with my two stools in my hands. When I came to the side of the outer court, I stood upon one stool, and took the other in my hand : this I lifted over the roof, and gently set it down on the space between the first and second court, which was eight foot wide. <sup>30</sup> I then stept over the buildings very conveniently from one stool to the other, and drew up the first after me with a hooked stick. By this contrivance I got into the inmost court ; and lying down upon my side, I applied my face to the windows of the middle stories, which

were left open on purpose, and discovered the most splendid apartments that can be imagined. There I saw the Empress and the young Princes, in their several lodgings, with their chief attendants about them. Her Imperial Majesty was pleased to smile very graciously upon me, and gave me out of the window her hand to kiss.

But I shall not anticipate the reader with farther descriptions of this kind, because I reserve them for  
10 a greater work, which is now almost ready for the press, containing a general description of this empire, from its first erection, through a long series of princes, with a particular account of their wars and politics, laws, learning, and religion : their plants and animals, their peculiar manners and customs, with other matters very curious and useful ; my chief design at present being only to relate such events and transactions as happened to the public, or to myself, during a residence of about nine months in that empire.

20 One morning, about a fortnight after I had obtained my liberty, Reldresal, principal Secretary (as they style him) of Private Affairs, came to my house attended only by one servant. He ordered his coach to wait at a distance, and desired I would give him an hour's audience ; which I readily consented to, on account of his quality and personal merits, as well as the many good offices he had done me during my solicitations at court. I offered to lie down, that he might the more conveniently reach my ear ; but he chose rather to let me hold him  
30 in my hand during our conversation. He began with compliments on my liberty ; said he might pretend to some merit in it : but, however, added, that if it had not been for the present situation of things at court, perhaps I might not have obtained it so soon. For, said he, as flourishing a condition as we may appear to

be in to foreigners, we labour under two mighty evils ; a violent faction at home, and the danger of an invasion by a most potent enemy from abroad. As to the first, you are to understand, that for above seventy moons past there have been two struggling parties in this empire, under the names of *Tramecksan* and *Slamecksan*, from the high and low heels on their shoes, by which they distinguish themselves. It is alleged indeed, that the high heels are most agreeable to our ancient constitution : but however this be, his Majesty hath <sup>10</sup> determined to make use of only low heels in the administration of the government, and all offices in the gift of the Crown, as you cannot but observe ; and particularly, that his Majesty's Imperial heels are lower at least by a *drurr* than any of his court ; (*drurr* is a measure about the fourteenth part of an inch). The animosities between these two parties run so high, that they will neither eat nor drink, nor talk with each other. We compute the *Tramecksan*, or High-Heels, to exceed us in number ; but the power is wholly on our side. We apprehend <sup>20</sup> his Imperial Highness, the Heir to the Crown, to have some tendency towards the High-Heels ; at least we can plainly discover one of his heels higher than the other, which gives him a hobble in his gait. Now, in the midst of these intestine disquiets, we are threatened with an invasion from the Island of Blefuscu, which is the other great empire of the universe, almost as large and powerful as this of his Majesty. For as to what we have heard you affirm, that there are other kingdoms and states in the world inhabited by human creatures as <sup>30</sup> large as yourself, our philosophers are in much doubt, and would rather conjecture that you dropped from the moon, or one of the stars ; because it is certain, that an hundred mortals of your bulk would, in a short time, destroy all the fruits and cattle of his Majesty's dominions.

Besides, our histories of six thousand moons make no mention of any other regions, than the two great empires of Lilliput and Blefuscu. Which two mighty powers have, as I was going to tell you, been engaged in a most obstinate war for six and thirty moons past. It began upon the following occasion. It is allowed on all hands, that the primitive way of breaking eggs before we eat them, was upon the larger end : but his present Majesty's grandfather, while he was a boy, going to eat an egg, and  
10 breaking it according to the ancient practice, happened to cut one of his fingers. Whereupon the Emperor his father published an edict, commanding all his subjects, upon great penalties, to break the smaller end of their eggs. The people so highly resented this law, that our histories tell us there have been six rebellions raised on that account ; wherein one Emperor lost his life, and another his crown. These civil commotions were constantly fomented by the monarchs of Blefuscu ; and when they were quelled, the exiles always fled for  
20 refuge to that empire. It is computed, that eleven thousand persons have, at several times, suffered death, rather than submit to break their eggs at the smaller end. Many hundred large volumes have been published upon this controversy : but the books of the Big-Endians have been long forbidden, and the whole party rendered incapable by law of holding employments. During the course of these troubles, the Emperors of Blefuscu did frequently expostulate by their ambassadors, accusing us of making a schism in religion, by offending against  
30 a fundamental doctrine of our great prophet Lustrog, in the fifty-fourth chapter of the *Brundecral* (which is their Alcoran). This, however, is thought to be a mere strain upon the text : for the words are these ; *That all true believers shall break their eggs at the convenient end :* and which is the convenient end, seems, in my humble

opinion, to be left to every man's conscience, or at least in the power of the chief magistrate to determine. Now the Big-Indian exiles have found so much credit in the Emperor of Blefuscu's court, and so much private assistance and encouragement from their party here at home, that a bloody war hath been carried on between the two empires for six and thirty moons with various success ; during which time we have lost forty capital ships, and a much greater number of smaller vessels, together with thirty thousand of our best seamen and <sup>10</sup> soldiers ; and the damage received by the enemy is reckoned to be somewhat greater than ours. However, they have now equipped a numerous fleet, and are just preparing to make a descent upon us ; and his Imperial Majesty, placing great confidence in your valour and strength, hath commanded me to lay this account of his affairs before you.

I desired the Secretary to present my humble duty to the Emperor, and to let him know, that I thought it would not become me, who was a foreigner, to interfere <sup>20</sup> with parties ; but I was ready, with the hazard of my life, to defend his person and state against all invaders.

## CHAP. V

*The Author, by an extraordinary stratagem, prevents an invasion.  
A high title of honour is conferred upon him. Ambassadors arrive  
from the Emperor of Blefuscu, and sue for peace.*

THE Empire of Blefuscu is an island situated to the north-north-east side of Lilliput, from whence it is parted only by a channel of eight hundred yards wide. I had not yet seen it, and upon this notice of an intended invasion, I avoided appearing on that side of the coast, 10 for fear of being discovered by some of the enemy's ships, who had received no intelligence of me, all intercourse between the two empires having been strictly forbidden during the war, upon pain of death, and an embargo laid by our Emperor upon all vessels whatsoever. I communicated to his Majesty a project I had formed of seizing the enemy's whole fleet : which, as our scouts assured us, lay at anchor in the harbour ready to sail with the first fair wind. I consulted the most experienced seamen, upon the depth of the channel, which they had 20 often plumbed, who told me, that in the middle at high-water it was seventy *glumgluffs* deep, which is about six foot of European measure ; and the rest of it fifty *glumgluffs* at most. I walked towards the north-east coast over against Blefuscu ; and lying down behind a hillock, took out my small pocket perspective-glass, and viewed the enemy's fleet at anchor, consisting of about fifty men of war, and a great number of transports : I then came back to my house, and gave order (for which I had a warrant) for a great quantity of the strongest 30 cable and bars of iron. The cable was about as thick as

packthread, and the bars of the length and size of a knitting-needle. I trebled the cable to make it stronger, and for the same reason I twisted three of the iron bars together, binding the extremities into a hook. Having thus fixed fifty hooks to as many cables, I went back to the north-east coast, and putting off my coat, shoes, and stockings, walked into the sea in my leathern jerkin, about half an hour before high water. I waded with what haste I could, and swam in the middle about thirty yards till I felt ground ; I arrived at the fleet in 10 less than half an hour. The enemy was so frightened when they saw me, that they leaped out of their ships, and swam to shore, where there could not be fewer than thirty thousand souls. I then took my tackling, and fastening a hook to the hole at the prow of each, I tied all the cords together at the end. While I was thus employed, the enemy discharged several thousand arrows, many of which stuck in my hands and face ; and besides the excessive smart, gave me much disturbance in my work. My greatest apprehension was for my eyes, which I should 20 have infallibly lost, if I had not suddenly thought of an expedient. I kept among other little necessaries a pair of spectacles in a private pocket, which, as I observed before, had scaped the Emperor's searchers. These I took out and fastened as strongly as I could upon my nose, and thus armed went on boldly with my work in spite of the enemy's arrows, many of which struck against the glasses of my spectacles, but without any other effect, further than a little to discompose them. I had now fastened all the hooks, and taking the knot 30 in my hand, began to pull ; but not a ship would stir, for they were all too fast held by their anchors, so that the boldest part of my enterprise remained. I therefore let go the cord, and leaving the hooks fixed to the ships, I resolutely cut with my knife the cables that fastened

*the anchors, receiving above two hundred shots in my face and hands ; then I took up the knotted end of the cables to which my hooks were tied, and with great ease drew fifty of the enemy's largest men-of-war after me.*

The Blefuscudians, who had not the least imagination of what I intended, were at first confounded with astonishment. They had seen me cut the cables, and thought my design was only to let the ships run a-drift,  
10 or fall foul on each other : but when they perceived the whole fleet moving in order, and saw me pulling at the end, they set up such a scream of grief and despair, that it is almost impossible to describe or conceive. When I had got out of danger, I stopt awhile to pick out the arrows that stuck in my hands and face, and rubbed on some of the same ointment that was given me at my first arrival, as I have formerly mentioned. I then took off my spectacles, and waiting about an hour, till the tide was a little fallen, I waded through the middle  
20 with my cargo, and arrived safe at the royal port of Lilliput.

The Emperor and his whole court stood on the shore expecting the issue of this great adventure. They saw the ships move forward in a large half-moon, but could not discern me, who was up to my breast in water. When I advanced to the middle of the channel, they were yet in more pain, because I was under water to my neck. The Emperor concluded me to be drowned, and that the enemy's fleet was approaching in a hostile  
30 manner : but he was soon eased of his fears, for the channel growing shallower every step I made, I came in a short time within hearing, and holding up the end of the cable by which the fleet was fastened, I cried in a loud voice, *Long live the most puissant Emperor of Lilliput !* This great prince received me at my landing with all



possible encomiums, and created me a *Nardac* upon the spot, which is the highest title of honour among them.

His Majesty desired I would take some other opportunity of bringing all the rest of his enemy's ships into his ports. And so unmeasureable is the ambition of princes, that he seemed to think of nothing less than reducing the whole empire of Blefuscu into a province, and governing it by a Viceroy ; of destroying the Big-Indian exiles, and compelling that people to break the smaller end of their eggs, by which he would remain the 10 sole monarch of the whole world. But I endeavoured to divert him from this design, by many arguments drawn from the topics of policy as well as justice ; and I plainly protested, that I would never be an instrument of bringing a free and brave people into slavery. And when the matter was debated in council, the wisest part of the ministry were of my opinion.

This open bold declaration of mine was so opposite to the schemes and politics of his Imperial Majesty, that he could never forgive it ; he mentioned it in a very artful 20 manner at council, where I was told that some of the wisest appeared, at least by their silence, to be of my opinion ; but others, who were my secret enemies, could not forbear some expressions, which by a side-wind reflected on me. And from this time began an intrigue between his Majesty and a junto of ministers maliciously bent against me, which broke out in less than two months, and had like to have ended in my utter destruction. Of so little weight are the greatest services to princes, when put into the balance with a refusal to gratify their 30 passions.

About three weeks after this exploit, there arrived a solemn embassy from Blefuscu, with humble offers of a peace ; which was soon concluded upon conditions very advantageous to our Emperor, wherewith I shall

not trouble the reader. There were six ambassadors with a train of about five hundred persons, and their entry was very magnificent, suitable to the grandeur of their master, and the importance of their business. When their treaty was finished, wherein I did them several good offices by the credit I now had, or at least appeared to have at court, their Excellencies, who were privately told how much I had been their friend, made me a visit in form. They began with many compliments  
10 upon my valour and generosity, invited me to that kingdom in the Emperor their master's name, and desired me to show them some proofs of my prodigious strength, of which they had heard so many wonders; wherein I readily obliged them, but shall not trouble the reader with the particulars.

When I had for some time entertained their Excellencies, to their infinite satisfaction and surprise, I desired they would do me the honour to present my most humble respects to the Emperor their master, the renown of  
20 whose virtues had so justly filled the whole world with admiration, and whose royal person I resolved to attend before I returned to my own country: accordingly, the next time I had the honour to see our Emperor, I desired his general licence to wait on the Blefuscudian monarch, which he was pleased to grant me, as I could plainly perceive, in a very cold manner; but could not guess the reason, till I had a whisper from a certain person, that Flimnap and Bolgolam had represented my inter-  
course with those ambassadors as a mark of disaffection, from which I am sure my heart was wholly free. And  
30 this was the first time I began to conceive some imperfect idea of courts and ministers.

It is to be observed, that these ambassadors spoke to me by an interpreter, the languages of both empires differing as much from each other as any two in Europe,

and each nation priding itself upon the antiquity, beauty, and energy of their own tongues, with an avowed contempt for that of their neighbour; yet our Emperor, standing upon the advantage he had got by the seizure of their fleet, obliged them to deliver their credentials, and make their speech in the Lilliputian tongue. And it must be confessed, that from the great intercourse of trade and commerce between both realms, from the continual reception of exiles, which is mutual among them, and from the custom in each empire to send their 10 young nobility and richer gentry to the other, in order to polish themselves by seeing the world and understanding men and manners; there are few persons of distinction, or merchants, or seamen, who dwell in the maritime parts, but what can hold conversation in both tongues; as I found some weeks after, when I went to pay my respects to the Emperor of Blefuscu, which in the midst of great misfortunes, through the malice of my enemies, proved a very happy adventure to me, as I shall relate in its proper place. 20

The reader may remember, that when I signed those articles upon which I recovered my liberty, there were some which I disliked upon account of their being too servile, neither could anything but an extreme necessity have forced me to submit. But being now a *Nardac*, of the highest rank in that empire, such offices were looked upon as below my dignity, and the Emperor (to do him justice) never once mentioned them to me.

## CHAP. VI

*Of the inhabitants of Lilliput; their learning, laws, and customs, the manner of educating their children. The Author's way of living in that country. His vindication of a great lady.*

ALTHOUGH I intend to leave the description of this empire to a particular treatise, yet in the mean time I am content to gratify the curious reader with some general ideas. As the common size of the natives is somewhat under six inches high, so there is an exact  
10 proportion in all other animals, as well as plants and trees: for instance, the tallest horses and oxen are between four and five inches in height, the sheep an inch and a half, more or less: their geese about the bigness of a sparrow, and so the several gradations downwards till you come to the smallest, which, to my sight, were almost invisible; but nature hath adapted the eyes of the Lilliputians to all objects proper for their view: they see with great exactness, but at no great distance. And to show the sharpness of their sight  
20 towards objects that are near, I have been much pleased with observing a cook pulling a lark, which was not so large as a common fly; and a young girl threading an invisible needle with invisible silk. Their tallest trees are about seven foot high; I mean some of those in the great royal park, the tops whereof I could but just reach with my fist clenched. The other vegetables are in the same proportion; but this I leave to the reader's imagination.

I shall say but little at present of their learning, which  
30 for many ages hath flourished in all its branches among them: but their manner of writing is very peculiar,

being neither from the left to the right, like the Europeans ; nor from the right to the left, like the Arabians ; nor from up to down, like the Chinese ; nor from down to up, like the Cascagians ; but aslant from one corner of the paper to the other, like ladies in England.

They bury their dead with their heads directly downwards, because they hold an opinion, that in eleven thousand moons they are all to rise again, in which period the earth (which they conceive to be flat) will turn upside down, and by this means they shall, at their 10 resurrection, be found ready standing on their feet. The learned among them confess the absurdity of this doctrine, but the practice still continues, in compliance to the vulgar.

There are some laws and customs in this empire very peculiar ; and if they were not so directly contrary to those of my own dear country, I should be tempted to say a little in their justification. It is only to be wished that they were as well executed. The first I shall mention relates to informers. All crimes against the 20 state are punished here with the utmost severity ; but if the person accused maketh his innocence plainly to appear upon his trial, the accuser is immediately put to an ignominious death ; and out of his goods or lands, the innocent person is quadruply recompensed for the loss of his time, for the danger he underwent, for the hardship of his imprisonment, and for all the charges he hath been at in making his defence. Or, if that fund be deficient, it is largely supplied by the Crown. The Emperor does also confer on him some public mark of 30 his favour, and proclamation is made of his innocence through the whole city.

They look upon fraud as a greater crime than theft, and therefore seldom fail to punish it with death ; for they allege, that care and vigilance, with a very common

understanding, may preserve a man's goods from thieves, but honesty has no fence against superior cunning ; and since it is necessary that there should be a perpetual intercourse of buying and selling, and dealing upon credit, where fraud is permitted and connived at, or hath no law to punish it, the honest dealer is always undone, and the knave gets the advantage. I remember when I was once interceding with the King for a criminal who had wronged his master of a great sum of money  
10 which he had received by order, and ran away with ; and happening to tell his Majesty, by way of extenuation, that it was only a breach of trust ; the Emperor thought it monstrous in me to offer, as a defence, the greatest aggravation of the crime : and truly I had little to say in return, farther than the common answer, that different nations had different customs ; for, I confess, I was heartily ashamed.

Although we usually call reward and punishment the two hinges upon which all government turns, yet I could  
20 never observe this maxim to be put in practice by any nation except that of Lilliput. Whoever can there bring sufficient proof that he hath strictly observed the laws of his country for seventy three moons, hath a claim to certain privileges, according to his quality and condition of life, with a proportionable sum of money out of a fund appropriated for that use : he likewise acquires the title of *Snilpall*, or *Legal*, which is added to his name, but does not descend to his posterity. And these people thought it a prodigious defect of policy among us, when  
30 I told them that our laws were enforced only by penalties without any mention of reward. It is upon this account that the image of Justice, in their courts of judicature, is formed with six eyes, two before, as many behind, and on each side one, to signify circumspection ; with a bag of gold open in her right hand, and a sword sheathed in

her left, to show she is more disposed to reward than to punish.

In choosing persons for all employments, they have more regard to good morals than to great abilities ; for, since government is necessary to mankind, they believe that the common size of human understandings is fitted to some station or other, and that Providence never intended to make the management of public affairs a mystery, to be comprehended only by a few persons of sublime genius, of which there seldom are three born <sup>10</sup> in an age : but they suppose truth, justice, temperance, and the like, to be in every man's power ; the practice of which virtues, assisted by experience and a good intention, would qualify any man for the service of his country, except where a course of study is required. But they thought the want of moral virtues was so far from being supplied by superior endowments of the mind, that employments could never be put into such dangerous hands as those of persons so qualified ; and at least, that the mistakes committed by ignorance in <sup>20</sup> a virtuous disposition, would never be of such fatal consequence to the public weal, as the practices of a man whose inclinations led him to be corrupt, and had great abilities to manage, and multiply, and defend his corruptions.

In like manner, the disbelief of a Divine Providence renders a man incapable of holding any public station ; for, since kings avow themselves to be the deputies of Providence, the Lilliputians think nothing can be more absurd than for a prince to employ such men as disown <sup>30</sup> the authority under which he acts.

In relating these and the following laws, I would only be understood to mean the original institutions, and not the most scandalous corruptions into which these people are fallen by the degenerate nature of man. For as to

that infamous practice of acquiring great employments by dancing on the ropes, or badges of favour and distinction by leaping over sticks and creeping under them, the reader is to observe, that they were first introduced by the grandfather of the Emperor now reigning, and grew to the present height by the gradual increase of party and faction.

Ingratitude is among them a capital crime, as we read it to have been in some other countries ; for they  
10 reason thus, that whoever makes ill returns to his benefactor, must needs be a common enemy to the rest of mankind, from whom he hath received no obligation, and therefore such a man is not fit to live.

Their notions relating to the duties of parents and children differ extremely from ours. Their opinion is, that parents are the last of all others to be trusted with the education of their own children : and therefore they have in every town public nurseries, where all  
20 parents, except cottagers and labourers, are obliged to send their infants of both sexes to be reared and educated when they come to the age of twenty moons, at which time they are supposed to have some rudiments of docility. These schools are of several kinds, suited to different qualities, and to both sexes. They have certain professors well skilled in preparing children for such a condition of life as befits the rank of their parents, and their own capacities as well as inclinations. I shall first say something of the male nurseries, and then of the  
10 female.

The nurseries for males of noble or eminent birth, are provided with grave and learned professors, and their several deputies. The clothes and food of the children are plain and simple. They are bred up in the principles of honour, justice, courage, modesty, clemency, religion,



and love of their country ; they are always employed in some business, except in the times of eating and sleeping, which are very short, and two hours for diversions, consisting of bodily exercises. They are dressed by men till four years of age, and then are obliged to dress themselves, although their quality be ever so great ; and the women attendants, who are aged proportionably to ours at fifty, perform only the most menial offices. They are never suffered to converse with servants, but go together in small or greater numbers to take their 10 diversions, and always in the presence of a professor, or one of his deputies ; whereby they avoid those early bad impressions of folly and vice to which our children are subject. Their parents are suffered to see them only twice a year ; the visit is to last but an hour. They are allowed to kiss the child at meeting and parting ; but a professor, who always stands by on those occasions, will not suffer them to whisper, or use any fondling expressions, or bring any presents of toys, sweetmeats, and the like.

20

The pension from each family for the education and entertainment of a child. upon failure of due payment, is levied by the Emperor's officers.

The nurseries for children of ordinary gentlemen, merchants, traders, and handicrafts, are managed proportionably after the same manner ; only those designed for trades are put out apprentices at eleven years old, whereas those of persons of quality continue in their exercises till fifteen, which answers to one and twenty with us : but the confinement is gradually 30 lessened for the last three years.

In the female nurseries, the young girls of quality are educated much like the males, only they are dressed by orderly servants of their own sex ; but always in the presence of a professor or deputy, till they come to dress

themselves, which is at five years old. And if it be found that these nurses ever presume to entertain the girls with frightful or foolish stories, or the common follies practised by chambermaids among us, they are publicly whipped thrice about the city, imprisoned for a year, and banished for life to the most desolate part of the country. Thus the young ladies there are as much ashamed of being cowards and fools as the men, and despise all personal ornaments beyond decency and cleanliness : neither did  
10 I perceive any difference in their education, made by their difference of sex, only that the exercises of the females were not altogether so robust ; and that some rules were given them relating to domestic life, and a smaller compass of learning was enjoined them : for their maxim is, that among people of quality a wife should be always a reasonable and agreeable companion, because she cannot always be young. When the girls are twelve years old, which among them is the marriage-  
10 able age, their parents or guardians take them home, with great expressions of gratitude to the professors, and seldom without tears of the young lady and her companions.

In the nurseries of females of the meaner sort, the children are instructed in all kinds of works proper for their sex, and their several degrees : those intended for apprentices are dismissed at nine years old, the rest are kept to thirteen.

The meaner families who have children at these nurseries, are obliged, besides their annual pension,  
10 which is as low as possible, to return to the steward of the nursery a small monthly share of their gettings, to be a portion for the child ; and therefore all parents are limited in their expenses by the law. For the Lilliputians think nothing can be more unjust, than for people to bring children into the world and leave

the burthen of supporting them on the public. As to persons of quality, they give security to appropriate a certain sum for each child, suitable to their condition ; and these funds are always managed with good husbandry, and the most exact justice.

The cottagers and labourers keep their children at home, their business being only to till and cultivate the earth, and therefore their education is of little consequence to the public ; but the old and diseased among them are supported by hospitals : for begging is a trade 10 unknown in this kingdom.

And here it may perhaps divert the curious reader, to give some account of my domestics, and my manner of living in this country, during a residence of nine months and thirteen days. Having a head mechanically turned, and being likewise forced by necessity, I had made for myself a table and chair convenient enough, out of the largest trees in the royal park. Two hundred sempstresses were employed to make me shirts, and linen for my bed and table, all of the strongest and coarsest kind 20 they could get ; which, however, they were forced to quilt together in several folds, for the thickest was some degrees finer than lawn. Their linen is usually three inches wide, and three foot make a piece. The sempstresses took my measure as I lay on the ground, one standing at my neck, and another at my mid-leg, with a strong cord extended, that each held by the end, while the third measured the length of the cord with a rule of an inch long. Then they measured my right thumb, and desired no more ; for by a mathematical computation, 30 that twice round the thumb is once round the wrist, and so on to the neck and the waist, and by the help of my old shirt, which I displayed on the ground before them for a pattern, they fitted me exactly. Three hundred tailors were employed in the same manner to make me

clothes ; but they had another contrivance for taking my measure. I kneeled down, and they raised a ladder from the ground to my neck ; upon this ladder one of them mounted, and let fall a plumb-line from my collar to the floor, which just answered the length of my coat ; but my waist and arms I measured myself. When my clothes were finished, which was done in my house (for the largest of theirs would not have been able to hold them) they looked like the patch-work made by the  
10 ladies in England, only that mine were all of a colour.

I had three hundred cooks to dress my victuals, in little convenient huts built about my house, where they and their families lived, and prepared me two dishes a-piece. I took up twenty waiters in my hand, and placed them on the table ; an hundred more attended below on the ground, some with dishes of meat, and some with barrels of wine, and other liquors, slung on their shoulders ; all which the waiters above drew up as I wanted, in a very ingenious manner, by certain  
20 cords, as we draw the bucket up a well in Europe. A dish of their meat was a good mouthful, and a barrel of their liquor a reasonable draught. Their mutton yields to ours, but their beef is excellent. I have had a sirloin so large, that I have been forced to make three bits of it ; but this is rare. My servants were astonished to see me eat it bones and all, as in our country we do the leg of a lark. Their geese and turkeys I usually ate at a mouthful, and I must confess they far exceed ours. Of their smaller fowl I could take up twenty or thirty at  
30 the end of my knife.

One day his Imperial Majesty, being informed of my way of living, desired that himself and his Royal Consort, with the young Princes of the blood of both sexes, might have the happiness (as he was pleased to call it) of dining with me. They came accordingly, and I placed 'em

upon chairs of state on my table, just over against me, with their guards about them. Flimnap, the Lord High Treasurer, attended there likewise with his white staff ; and I observed he often looked on me with a sour countenance, which I would not seem to regard, but ate more than usual, in honour to my dear country, as well as to fill the court with admiration. I have some private reasons to believe, that this visit from his Majesty gave Flimnap an opportunity of doing me ill offices to his master. That minister had always been my <sup>10</sup> secret enemy, though he outwardly caressed me more than was usual to the moroseness of his nature. He represented to the Emperor the low condition of his treasury ; that he was forced to take up money at great discount ; that exchequer bills would not circulate under nine per cent. below par ; that in short I had cost his Majesty above a million and a half of *sprugs* (their greatest gold coin, about the bigness of a spangle) ; and upon the whole, that it would be advisable in the Emperor to take the first fair occasion of dismissing me. <sup>20</sup>

I am here obliged to vindicate the reputation of an excellent lady, who was an innocent sufferer upon my account. The Treasurer took a fancy to be jealous of his wife, from the malice of some evil tongues, who informed him that her Grace had taken a violent affection for my person ; and the court-scandal ran for some time, that she once came privately to my lodging. This I solemnly declare to be a most infamous falsehood, without any grounds, farther than that her Grace was pleased to treat me with all innocent marks of freedom <sup>30</sup> and friendship. I own she came often to my house, but always publicly, nor ever without three more in the coach, who were usually her sister and young daughter, and some particular acquaintance ; but this was common to many other ladies of the court. And I still appeal to

my servants round, whether they at any time saw a coach at my door without knowing what persons were in it. On those occasions, when a servant had given me notice, my custom was to go immediately to the door; and, after paying my respects, to take up the coach and two horses very carefully in my hands (for if there were six horses, the postillion always unharnessed four) and place them on a table, where I had fixed a moveable rim quite round, of five inches high, to prevent accidents. And  
10 I have often had four coaches and horses at once on my table full of company, while I sat in my chair leaning my face towards them; and when I was engaged with one set, the coachmen would gently drive the others round my table. I have passed many an afternoon very agreeably in these conversations. But I defy the Treasurer, or his two informers (I will name them, and let 'em make their best of it) Clustril and Drunlo, to prove that any person ever came to me *incognito*, except the secretary Reldresal, who was sent by express command  
20 of his Imperial Majesty, as I have before related. I should not have dwelt so long upon this particular, if it had not been a point wherein the reputation of a great lady is so nearly concerned, to say nothing of my own; though I then had the honour to be a *Nardac*, which the Treasurer himself is not; for all the world knows he is only a *Clumglum*, a title inferior by one degree, as that of a Marquis is to a Duke in England, although I allow he preceded me in right of his post. These false informations, which I afterwards came to the knowledge of, by  
30 an accident not proper to mention, made Flimnap the Treasurer show his lady for some time an ill countenance, and me a worse; and although he were at last undeceived and reconciled to her, yet I lost all credit with him, and found my interest decline very fast with the Emperor himself, who was indeed too much governed by that favourite.

## CHAP. VII

*The Author, being informed of a design to accuse him of high treason, makes his escape to Blefuscu. His reception there.*

BEFORE I proceed to give an account of my leaving this kingdom, it may be proper to inform the reader of a private intrigue which had been for two months forming against me.

I had been hitherto all my life a stranger to courts, for which I was unqualified by the meanness of my condition. I had indeed heard and read enough of the 10 dispositions of great princes and ministers ; but never expected to have found such terrible effects of them in so remote a country, governed, as I thought, by very different maxims from those in Europe.

When I was just preparing to pay my attendance on the Emperor of Blefuscu, a considerable person at court (to whom I had been very serviceable at a time when he lay under the highest displeasure of his Imperial Majesty) came to my house very privately at night in a close chair, and without sending his name, desired 20 admittance. The chairmen were dismissed ; I put the chair, with his Lordship in it, into my coat-pocket : and giving orders to a trusty servant to say I was indisposed and gone to sleep, I fastened the door of my house, placed the chair on the table, according to my usual custom, and sat down by it. After the common salutations were over, observing his Lordship's countenance full of concern, and enquiring into the reason, he desired I would hear him with patience in a matter that highly concerned my honour and my life. His speech was to 30 the following effect, for I took notes of it as soon as he left me.

You are to know, said he, that several Committees of Council have been lately called in the most private manner on your account ; and it is but two days since his Majesty came to a full resolution.

You are very sensible that Skyresh Bolgolam (*Galbet*, or High Admiral) hath been your mortal enemy almost ever since your arrival. His original reasons I know not, but his hatred is much increased since your great success against Blefuscu, by which his glory as Admiral<sup>10</sup> is obscured. This Lord, in conjunction with Flimnap the High Treasurer, whose enmity against you is notorious on account of his lady, Lintoc the General, Lalcon the Chamberlain, and Balmuff the Grand Justiciary, have prepared articles of impeachment against you, for treason, and other capital crimes.

This preface made me so impatient, being conscious of my own merits and innocence, that I was going to interrupt ; when he entreated me to be silent, and thus proceeded.

<sup>20</sup> Out of gratitude for the favours you have done me, I procured information of the whole proceedings, and a copy of the articles, wherein I venture my head for your service.

*Articles of Impeachment against Quinbus Flestrin  
(the Man-Mountain)*

ARTICLE I

That the said Quinbus Flestrin having brought the imperial fleet of Blefuscu into the royal port, and being afterwards commanded by his Imperial Majesty to seize<sup>30</sup> all the other ships of the said empire of Blefuscu, and reduce that empire to a province, to be governed by



a Viceroy from hence, and to destroy and put to death not only all the Big-Endian exiles, but likewise all the people of that empire, who would not immediately forsake the Big-Endian heresy : He, the said Flestrin, like a false traitor against his most Auspicious, Serene, Imperial Majesty, did petition to be excused from the said service, upon pretence of unwillingness to force the consciences, or destroy the liberties and lives of an innocent people.

## ARTICLE II

10

That, whereas certain ambassadors arrived from the court of Blefuscu, to sue for peace in his Majesty's court : He, the said Flestrin, did, like a false traitor, aid, abet, comfort, and divert the said ambassadors, although he knew them to be servants to a Prince who was lately an open enemy to his Imperial Majesty, and in open war against his said Majesty.

## ARTICLE III

That the said Quinbus Flestrin, contrary to the duty of a faithful subject, is now preparing to make a voyage <sup>20</sup> to the court and empire of Blefuscu, for which he hath received only verbal licence from his Imperial Majesty ; and under colour of the said licence, doth falsely and traitorously intend to take the said voyage, and thereby to aid, comfort, and abet the Emperor of Blefuscu, so late an enemy, and in open war with his Imperial Majesty aforesaid.

There are some other articles, but these are the most important, of which I have read you an abstract.

In the several debates upon this impeachment, it must <sup>30</sup> be confessed that his Majesty gave many marks of his great lenity, often urging the services you had done

him, and endeavouring to extenuate your crimes. The Treasurer and Admiral insisted that you should be put to the most painful and ignominious death, by setting fire on your house at night, and the General was to attend with twenty thousand men armed with poisoned arrows to shoot you on the face and hands. Some of your servants were to have private orders to strew a poisonous juice on your shirts, which would soon make you tear your own flesh, and die in the utmost torture.

10 The General came into the same opinion, so that for a long time there was a majority against you. But his Majesty resolving, if possible, to spare your life, at last brought off the Chamberlain.

Upon this incident, Reldresal, principal Secretary for Private Affairs, who always approved himself your true friend, was commanded by the Emperor to deliver his opinion, which he accordingly did ; and therein justified the good thoughts you have of him. He allowed your crimes to be great, but that still there was room for  
20 mercy, the most commendable virtue in a prince, and for which his Majesty was so justly celebrated. He said, the friendship between you and him was so well known to the world, that perhaps the most honourable board might think him partial : however, in obedience to the command he had received, he would freely offer his sentiments. That if his Majesty, in consideration of your services, and pursuant to his own merciful disposition, would please to spare your life, and only give order to put out both your eyes, he humbly conceived that by  
30 this expedient justice might in some measure be satisfied, and all the world would applaud the lenity of the Emperor, as well as the fair and generous proceedings of those who have the honour to be his counsellors. That the loss of your eyes would be no impediment to your bodily strength, by which you might still be

useful to his Majesty. That blindness is an addition to courage, by concealing dangers from us ; that the fear you had for your eyes was the greatest difficulty in bringing over the enemy's fleet, and it would be sufficient for you to see by the eyes of the ministers, since the greatest princes do no more.

This proposal was received with the utmost disapprobation by the whole board. Bolgolam, the Admiral, could not preserve his temper, but rising up in fury said he wondered how the Secretary durst presume to give <sup>10</sup> his opinion for preserving the life of a traitor : that the services you had performed, were, by all true reasons of state, the great aggravation of your crimes ; that the same strength which enabled you to bring over the enemy's fleet, might serve, upon the first discontent, to carry it back : that he had good reasons to think you were a Big-Indian in your heart ; and as treason begins in the heart, before it appears in overt acts, so he accused you as a traitor on that account, and therefore insisted you should be put to death. <sup>20</sup>

The Treasurer was of the same opinion ; he showed to what straits his Majesty's revenue was reduced by the charge of maintaining you, which would soon grow insupportable : that the Secretary's expedient of putting out your eyes was so far from being a remedy against this evil, it would probably increase it, as it is manifest from the common practice of blinding some kind of fowl, after which they fed the faster, and grew sooner fat : that his sacred Majesty and the Council, who are your judges, were in their own consciences fully convinced of <sup>30</sup> your guilt, which was a sufficient argument to condemn you to death, without the formal proofs required by the strict letter of the law.

But his Imperial Majesty, fully determined against capital punishment, was graciously pleased to say, that

since the Council thought the loss of your eyes too easy a censure, some other may be inflicted hereafter. And your friend the Secretary humbly desiring to be heard again, in answer to what the Treasurer had objected concerning the great charge his Majesty was at in maintaining you, said that his Excellency, who had the sole disposal of the Emperor's revenue, might easily provide against that evil, by gradually lessening your establishment ; by which, for want of sufficient food, you would  
10 grow weak and faint, and lose your appetite, and consequently decay and consume in a few months ; neither would the stench of your carcass be then so dangerous, when it should become more than half diminished ; and immediately upon your death, five or six thousand of his Majesty's subjects might, in two or three days, cut your flesh from your bones, take it away by cart-loads, and bury it in distant parts to prevent infection, leaving the skeleton as a monument of admiration to posterity.

Thus by the great friendship of the Secretary, the  
20 whole affair was compromised. It was strictly enjoined, that the project of starving you by degrees should be kept a secret, but the sentence of putting out your eyes was entered on the books ; none dissenting except Bolgolam the Admiral, who, being a creature of the Empress, was perpetually instigated by her Majesty to insist upon your death, she having borne perpetual malice against you.

In three days your friend the Secretary will be directed to come to your house, and read before you the articles  
30 of impeachment ; and then to signify the great lenity and favour of his Majesty and Council, whereby you are only condemned to the loss of your eyes, which his Majesty doth not question you will gratefully and humbly submit to ; and twenty of his Majesty's surgeons will attend, in order to see the operation well

performed, by discharging very sharp-pointed arrows into the balls of your eyes, as you lie on the ground.

I leave to your prudence what measures you will take ; and to avoid suspicion, I must immediately return in as private a manner as I came.

His Lordship did so, and I remained alone, under many doubts and perplexities of mind.

It was a custom introduced by this prince and his ministry (very different, as I have been assured, from the practices of former times) that after the court had <sup>10</sup> decreed any cruel execution, either to gratify the monarch's resentment, or the malice of a favourite, the Emperor always made a speech to his whole Council, expressing his great lenity and tenderness, as qualities known and confessed by all the world. This speech was immediately published through the kingdom ; nor did any thing terrify the people so much as those encomiums on his Majesty's mercy ; because it was observed, that the more these praises were enlarged and insisted on, the more inhuman was the punishment, and the sufferer <sup>20</sup> more innocent. And as to myself, I must confess, having never been designed for a courtier either by my birth or education, I was so ill a judge of things, that I could not discover the lenity and favour of this sentence, but conceived it (perhaps erroneously) rather to be rigorous than gentle. I sometimes thought of standing my trial, for although I could not deny the facts alleged in the several articles, yet I hoped they would admit of some extenuations. But having in my life perused many state trials, which I ever observed to terminate as the <sup>30</sup> judges thought fit to direct, I durst not rely on so dangerous a decision, in so critical a juncture, and against such powerful enemies. Once I was strongly bent upon resistance, for while I had liberty, the whole strength of that empire could hardly subdue me, and I might

easily with stones pelt the metropolis to pieces ; but I soon rejected that project with horror, by remembering the oath I had made to the Emperor, the favours I received from him, and the high title of *Nardac* he conferred upon me. Neither had I so soon learned the gratitude of courtiers, to persuade myself that his Majesty's present severities quitted me of all past obligations.

At last I fixed upon a resolution, for which it is probable I may incur some censure, and not unjustly ; for I confess I owe the preserving my eyes, and consequently my liberty, to my own great rashness and want of experience : because if I had then known the nature of princes and ministers, which I have since observed in many other courts, and their methods of treating criminals less obnoxious than myself, I should with great alacrity and readiness have submitted to so easy a punishment. But hurried on by the precipitancy of youth, and having his Imperial Majesty's licence to pay my attendance upon the Emperor of Blefuscu, I took this opportunity, before the three days were elapsed, to send a letter to my friend the Secretary, signifying my resolution of setting out that morning for Blefuscu pursuant to the leave I had got ; and without waiting for an answer, I went to that side of the island where our fleet lay. I seized a large man of war, tied a cable to the prow, and, lifting up the anchors, I stripped myself, put my clothes (together with my coverlet, which I brought under my arm) into the vessel, and drawing it after me between wading and swimming, arrived at the royal port of Blefuscu, where the people had long expected me ; they lent me two guides to direct me to the capital city, which is of the same name. I held them in my hands till I came within two hundred yards of the gate, and desired them to signify my arrival to one of the secretaries, and

let him know, I there waited his Majesty's commands. I had an answer in about an hour, that his Majesty, attended by the Royal Family, and great officers of the court, was coming out to receive me. I advanced an hundred yards. The Emperor and his train alighted from their horses, the Empress and ladies from their coaches, and I did not perceive they were in any fright or concern. I lay on the ground to kiss his Majesty's and the Empress's hand. I told his Majesty that I was come according to my promise, and with the licence 10 of the Emperor my master, to have the honour of seeing so mighty a monarch, and to offer him any service in my power, consistent with my duty to my own prince; not mentioning a word of my disgrace, because I had hitherto no regular information of it, and might suppose myself wholly ignorant of any such design; neither could I reasonably conceive that the Emperor would discover the secret while I was out of his power: wherein, however, it soon appeared I was deceived.

I shall not trouble the reader with the particular 20 account of my reception at this court, which was suitable to the generosity of so great a prince; nor of the difficulties I was in for want of a house and bed, being forced to lie on the ground, wrapped up in my coverlet.

## CHAP. VIII

*The Author, by a lucky accident, finds means to leave Blefuscu ; and, after some difficulties, returns safe to his native country.*

THREE days after my arrival, walking out of curiosity to the north-east coast of the island, I observed, about half a league off, in the sea, somewhat that looked like a boat overturned. I pulled off my shoes and stockings, and wading two or three hundred yards, I found the object to approach nearer by force of the tide ; and  
10 then plainly saw it to be a real boat, which I supposed might, by some tempest, have been driven from a ship ; whereupon I returned immediately towards the city, and desired his Imperial Majesty to lend me twenty of the tallest vessels he had left after the loss of his fleet, and three thousand seamen under the command of his Vice-Admiral. This fleet sailed round, while I went back the shortest way to the coast where I first discovered the boat ; I found the tide had driven it still nearer. The seamen were all provided with cordage,  
20 which I had beforehand twisted to a sufficient strength. When the ships came up, I stripped myself, and waded till I came within an hundred yards of the boat, after which I was forced to swim till I got up to it. The seamen threw me the end of the cord, which I fastened to a hole in the fore-part of the boat, and the other end to a man of war ; but I found all my labour to little purpose ; for being out of my depth, I was not able to work. In this necessity, I was forced to swim behind, and push the boat forwards as often as I could, with one of my  
30 hands ; and the tide favouring me, I advanced so far,



that I could just hold up my chin and feel the ground. I rested two or three minutes, and then gave the boat another shove, and so on till the sea was no higher than my arm-pits ; and now the most laborious part being over, I took out my other cables, which were stowed in one of the ships, and fastening them first to the boat, and then to nine of the vessels which attended me ; the wind being favourable, the seamen towed, and I shoved till we arrived within forty yards of the shore ; and waiting till the tide was out, I got dry to the boat, <sup>10</sup> and by the assistance of two thousand men, with ropes and engines, I made a shift to turn it on its bottom, and found it was but little damaged.

I shall not trouble the reader with the difficulties I was under by the help of certain paddles, which cost me ten days making, to get my boat to the royal port of Blefuscu, where a mighty concourse of people appeared upon my arrival, full of wonder at the sight of so prodigious a vessel. I told the Emperor that my good fortune had thrown this boat in my way, to carry me to <sup>20</sup> some place from whence I might return into my native country, and begged his Majesty's orders for getting materials to fit it up, together with his licence to depart ; which, after some kind expostulations, he was pleased to grant.

I did very much wonder, in all this time, not to have heard of any express relating to me from our Emperor to the court of Blefuscu. But I was afterwards given privately to understand, that his Imperial Majesty, never imagining I had the least notice of his designs, <sup>30</sup> believed I was only gone to Blefuscu in performance of my promise, according to the licence he had given me, which was well known at our court, and would return in a few days when that ceremony was ended. But he was at last in pain at my long absence ; and after con-

sulting with the Treasurer, and the rest of that cabal, a person of quality was dispatched with the copy of the articles against me. This envoy had instructions to represent to the monarch of Blefuscu the great lenity of his master, who was content to punish me no farther than with the loss of my eyes ; that I had fled from justice, and if I did not return in two hours, I should be deprived of my title of *Nardac*, and declared a traitor. The envoy further added, that in order to maintain the  
10 peace and amity between both empires, his master expected, that his brother of Blefuscu would give orders to have me sent back to Lilliput, bound hand and foot, to be punished as a traitor.

The Emperor of Blefuscu having taken three days to consult, returned an answer consisting of many civilities and excuses. He said, that as for sending me bound, his brother knew it was impossible ; that although I had deprived him of his fleet, yet he owed great obligations to me for many good offices I had done him in  
20 making the peace. That however both their Majesties would soon be made easy ; for I had found a prodigious vessel on the shore, able to carry me on the sea, which he had given order to fit up with my own assistance and direction ; and he hoped in a few weeks both empires would be freed from so insupportable an incumbrance.

With this answer the envoy returned to Lilliput, and the monarch of Blefuscu related to me all that had past, offering me at the same time (but under the strictest confidence) his gracious protection, if I would continue  
30 in his service ; wherein although I believed him sincere, yet I resolved never more to put any confidence in princes or ministers, where I could possibly avoid it ; and therefore, with all due acknowledgements for his favourable intentions, I humbly begged to be excused. I told him that since fortune, whether good or evil, had

thrown a vessel in my way, I was resolved to venture myself in the ocean, rather than be an occasion of difference between two such mighty monarchs. Neither did I find the Emperor at all displeased ; and I discovered by a certain accident, that he was very glad of my resolution, and so were most of his ministers.

These considerations moved me to hasten my departure somewhat sooner than I intended ; to which the court, impatient to have me gone, very readily contributed. Five hundred workmen were employed to 10 make two sails to my boat, according to my directions, by quilting thirteen fold of their strongest linen together. I was at the pains of making ropes and cables, by twisting ten, twenty or thirty of the thickest and strongest of theirs. A great stone that I happened to find, after a long search, by the sea-shore, served me for an anchor. I had the tallow of three hundred cows for greasing my boat, and other uses. I was at incredible pains in cutting down some of the largest timber-trees for oars and masts, wherein I was, however, much assisted by his 20 Majesty's ship-carpenters, who helped me in smoothing them, after I had done the rough work.

In about a month, when all was prepared, I sent to receive his Majesty's commands, and to take my leave. The Emperor and Royal Family came out of the palace ; I lay down on my face to kiss his hand, which he very graciously gave me : so did the Empress and young Princes of the blood. His Majesty presented me with fifty purses of two hundred *sprugs* a-piece, together with his picture at full length, which I put immediately into 30 one of my gloves, to keep it from being hurt. The ceremonies at my departure were too many to trouble the reader with at this time.

I stored the boat with the carcasses of an hundred oxen, and three hundred sheep, with bread and drink pro-

portionable, and as much meat ready dressed as four hundred cooks could provide. I took with me six cows and two bulls alive, with as many ewes and rams, intending to carry them into my own country, and propagate the breed. And to feed them on board, I had a good bundle of hay, and a bag of corn. I would gladly have taken a dozen of the natives, but this was a thing the Emperor would by no means permit; and besides a diligent search into my pockets, his Majesty engaged  
10 my honour not to carry away any of his subjects, although with their own consent and desire.

Having thus prepared all things as well as I was able, I set sail on the twenty-fourth day of September 1701, at six in the morning; and when I had gone about four leagues to the northward, the wind being at south-east, at six in the evening I descried a small island about half a league to the north-west. I advanced forward, and cast anchor on the lee-side of the island, which seemed to be uninhabited. I then took some  
20 refreshment, and went to my rest. I slept well, and I conjecture at least six hours, for I found the day broke in two hours after I awaked. It was a clear night. I ate my breakfast before the sun was up; and heaving anchor, the wind being favourable, I steered the same course that I had done the day before, wherein I was directed by my pocket-compass. My intention was to reach, if possible, one of those islands, which I had reason to believe lay to the north-east of Van Diemen's Land. I discovered nothing all that day; but upon the  
30 next, about three in the afternoon, when I had by my computation made twenty-four leagues from Blefuscu, I descried a sail steering to the south-east; my course was due east. I hailed her, but could get no answer; yet I found I gained upon her, for the wind slackened. I made all the sail I could, and in half an hour she spied

me, then hung out her ancient, and discharged a gun. It is not easy to express the joy I was in upon the unexpected hope of once more seeing my beloved country, and the dear pledges I had left in it. The ship slackened her sails, and I came up with her between five and six in the evening, September 26 ; but my heart leapt within me to see her English colours. I put my cows and sheep into my coat-pockets, and got on board with all my little cargo of provisions. The vessel was an English merchantman, returning from Japan by the North and South 10 Seas ; the Captain, Mr. John Biddle of Deptford, a very civil man, and an excellent sailor. We were now in the latitude of 30 degrees south ; there were about fifty men in the ship ; and here I met an old comrade of mine, one Peter Williams, who gave me a good character to the Captain. This gentleman treated me with kindness, and desired I would let him know what place I came from last, and whither I was bound ; which I did in few words, but he thought I was raving, and that the dangers I underwent had disturbed my head ; whereupon I took 20 my black cattle and sheep out of my pocket, which, after great astonishment, clearly convinced him of my veracity. I then showed him the gold given me by the Emperor of Blefuscu, together with his Majesty's picture at full length, and some other rarities of that country. I gave him two purses of two hundred *sprugs* each, and promised, when we arrived in England, to make him a present of a cow and a sheep.

I shall not trouble the reader with a particular account of this voyage, which was very prosperous for the most 30 part. We arrived in the Downs on the 13th of April, 1702. I had only one misfortune, that the rats on board carried away one of my sheep ; I found her bones in a hole, picked clean from the flesh. The rest of my cattle I got safe on shore, and set them a grazing in a bowling-green at

Greenwich, where the fineness of the grass made them feed very heartily, though I had always feared the contrary : neither could I possibly have preserved them in so long a voyage, if the Captain had not allowed me some of his best biscuit, which, rubbed to powder, and mingled with water, was their constant food. The short time I continued in England, I made a considerable profit by showing my cattle to many persons of quality, and others: and before I began my second voyage, I sold them  
10 for six hundred pounds. Since my last return, I find the breed is considerably increased, especially the sheep ; which I hope will prove much to the advantage of the woollen manufacture, by the fineness of the fleeces.

I stayed but two months with my wife and family ; for my insatiable desire of seeing foreign countries would suffer me to continue no longer. I left fifteen hundred pounds with my wife, and fixed her in a good house at Redriff. My remaining stock I carried with me, part in money, and part in goods, in hopes to  
20 improve my fortunes. My eldest uncle John had left me an estate in land, near Epping, of about thirty pounds a year ; and I had a long lease of the Black Bull in Fetter Lane, which yielded me as much more ; so that I was not in any danger of leaving my family upon the parish. My son Johnny, named so after his uncle, was at the Grammar School, and a towardly child. My daughter Betty (who is now well married, and has children) was then at her needlework. I took leave of my wife, and boy and girl, with tears on both sides, and  
30 went on board the *Adventure*, a merchant-ship of three hundred tons, bound for Surat, Captain John Nicholas of Liverpool Commander. But my account of this voyage must be referred to the second part of my Travels.

*The End of the First Part.*



T R A V E L S  
INTO SEVERAL  
Remote Nations  
OF THE  
W O R L D.

---

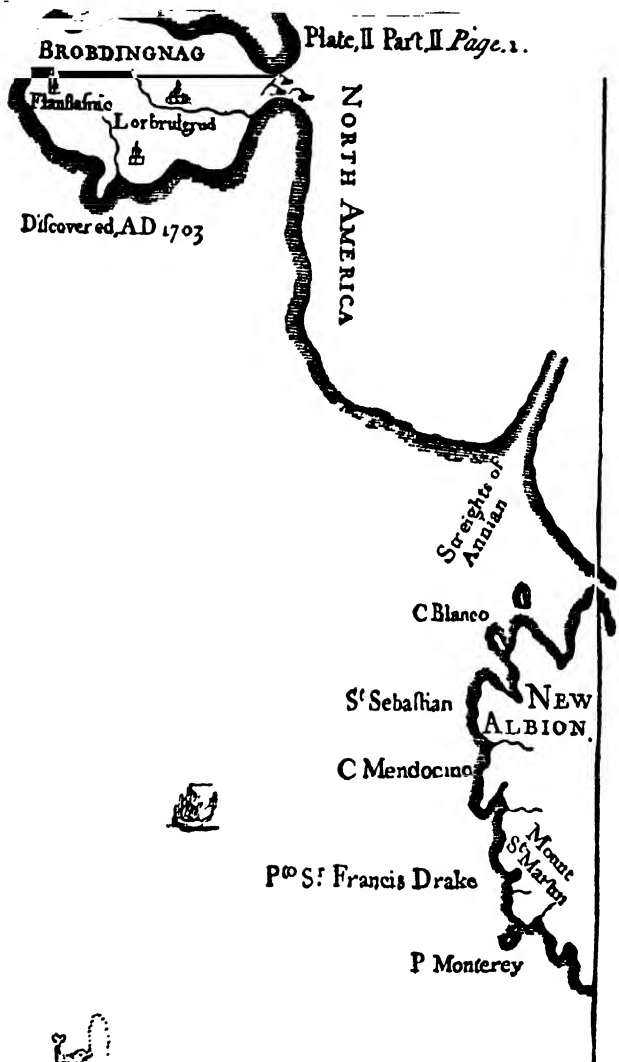
P A R T II.  
A VOYAGE to *BROBDINGNAG*.

---



L O N D O N:  
Printed in the Year MDCCXXVII.





## PART II

### A VOYAGE TO BROBDINGNAG

#### CHAP. I

*A great storm described ; the long-boat sent to fetch water ; the Author goes with it to discover the country. He is left on shore, is seized by one of the natives, and carried to a farmer's house. His reception there, with several accidents that happened there. A description of the inhabitants.*

HAVING been condemned by nature and fortune to an  
10 active and restless life, in two months after my return  
I again left my native country, and took shipping in the  
Downs on the 20th day of June, 1702, in the *Adventure*,  
Captain John Nicholas, a Cornish man, Commander,  
bound for Surat. We had a very prosperous gale till  
we arrived at the Cape of Good Hope, where we landed  
for fresh water, but discovering a leak we unshipped  
our goods and wintered there ; for the Captain falling  
sick of an ague, we could not leave the Cape till the end  
of March. We then set sail, and had a good voyage till  
20 we passed the Straits of Madagascar ; but having got  
northward of that island, and to about five degrees  
south latitude, the winds, which in those seas are  
observed to blow a constant equal gale between the  
north and west from the beginning of December to the  
beginning of May, on the 19th of April began to blow  
with much greater violence, and more westerly than  
usual, continuing so for twenty days together, during  
which time we were driven a little to the east of the  
Molucca Islands, and about three degrees northward of  
30 the Line, as our Captain found by an observation he

took the 2nd of May, at which time the wind ceased, and it was a perfect calm, whereat I was not a little rejoiced. But he, being a man well experienced in the navigation of those seas, bid us all prepare against a storm, which accordingly happened the day following : for a southern wind, called the southern monsoon, began to set in.

Finding it was likely to overblow, we took in our sprit-sail, and stood by to hand the fore-sail ; but making foul weather, we looked the guns were all fast, 10 and handed the mizen. The ship lay very broad off, so we thought it better spooning before the sea, than trying or hulling. We reefed the fore-sail and set him, we hauled aft the fore-sheet ; the helm was hard a weather. The ship wore bravely. We belayed the fore-down haul ; but the sail was split, and we hauled down the yard, and got the sail into the ship, and unbound all the things clear of it. It was a very fierce storm ; the sea broke strange and dangerous. We hauled off upon the lanyard of the whipstaff, and helped the man at helm. We would not 20 get down our top-mast, but let all stand, because she scudded before the sea very well, and we knew that the top-mast being aloft, the ship was the wholesomer, and made better way through the sea, seeing we had sea-room. When the storm was over, we set fore-sail and main-sail, and brought the ship to : then we set the mizen, main-top-sail, and the fore-top-sail. Our course was east-north-east, the wind was at south-west. We got the starboard tacks aboard, we cast off our weather-braces and lifts ; we set in the lee-braces, and hauled 30 forward by the weather-bowlings, and hauled them tight, and belayed them, and hauled over the mizen tack to windward, and kept her full and by as near as she would lie.

During this storm, which was followed by a strong

wind west-south-west, we were carried by my computation about five hundred leagues to the east, so that the oldest sailor on board could not tell in what part of the world we were. Our provisions held out well, our ship was staunch, and our crew all in good health; but we lay in the utmost distress for water. We thought it best to hold on the same course, rather than turn more northerly, which might have brought us to the north-west parts of Great Tartary, and into the frozen sea.

- 10 On the 16th day of June, 1703, a boy on the top-mast discovered land. On the 17th we came in full view of a great island or continent (for we knew not whether) on the south side whereof was a small neck of land jutting out into the sea, and a creek too shallow to hold a ship of above one hundred tons. We cast anchor within a league of this creek, and our Captain sent a dozen of his men well armed in the long-boat, with vessels for water if any could be found. I desired his leave to go with them, that I might see the country, and make what discoveries
- 20 I could. When we came to land we saw no river or spring, nor any sign of inhabitants. Our men therefore wandered on the shore to find out some fresh water near the sea, and I walked alone about a mile on the other side, where I observed the country all barren and rocky. I now began to be weary, and seeing nothing to entertain my curiosity, I returned gently down towards the creek; and the sea being full in my view, I saw our men already got into the boat, and rowing for life to the ship. I was going to hollow after them, although it had been to little
- 30 purpose, when I observed a huge creature walking after them in the sea, as fast as he could: he waded not much deeper than his knees, and took prodigious strides: but our men had the start of him half a league, and the sea thereabouts being full of sharp-pointed rocks, the monster was not able to overtake the boat. This I was

afterwards told, for I durst not stay to see the issue of that adventure ; but ran as fast as I could the way I first went, and then climbed up a steep hill, which gave me some prospect of the country. I found it fully cultivated ; but that which first surprised me was the length of the grass, which in those grounds that seemed to be kept for hay, was about twenty foot high.

I fell into a high road, for so I took it to be, though it served to the inhabitants only as a footpath through a field of barley. Here I walked on for some time, but <sup>10</sup> could see little on either side, it being now near harvest, and the corn rising at least forty foot. I was an hour walking to the end of this field, which was fenced in with a hedge of at least one hundred and twenty foot high, and the trees so lofty that I could make no computation of their altitude. There was a stile to pass from this field into the next. It had four steps, and a stone to cross over when you came to the uppermost. It was impossible for me to climb this stile, because every step was six foot high, and the upper stone above twenty. <sup>20</sup> I was endeavouring to find some gap in the hedge, when I discovered one of the inhabitants in the next field, advancing towards the stile, of the same size with him whom I saw in the sea pursuing our boat. He appeared as tall as an ordinary spire-steeple, and took about ten yards at every stride, as near as I could guess. I was struck with the utmost fear and astonishment, and ran to hide myself in the corn, from whence I saw him at the top of the stile, looking back into the next field on the right hand, and heard him call in a voice many degrees <sup>30</sup> louder than a speaking-trumpet : but the noise was so high in the air, that at first I certainly thought it was thunder. Whereupon seven monsters like himself came towards him with reaping-hooks in their hands, each hook about the largeness of six scythes. These people

were not so well clad as the first, whose servants or labourers they seemed to be. For upon some words he spoke, they went to reap the corn in the field where I lay. I kept from them at as great a distance as I could, but was forced to move with extreme difficulty, for the stalks of the corn were sometimes not above a foot distant, so that I could hardly squeeze my body betwixt them. However, I made a shift to go forward till I came to a part of the field where the corn had been laid by the  
10 rain and wind. Here it was impossible for me to advance a step; for the stalks were so interwoven that I could not creep through, and the beards of the fallen ears so strong and pointed that they pierced through my clothes into my flesh. At the same time I heard the reapers not above an hundred yards behind me. Being quite dispirited with toil, and wholly overcome by grief and despair, I lay down between two ridges, and heartily wished I might there end my days. I bemoaned my desolate widow, and fatherless children. I lamented  
20 my own folly and wilfulness in attempting a second voyage against the advice of all my friends and relations. In this terrible agitation of mind I could not forbear thinking of Lilliput, whose inhabitants looked upon me as the greatest prodigy that ever appeared in the world; where I was able to draw an Imperial Fleet in my hand, and perform those other actions which will be recorded for ever in the chronicles of that empire, while posterity shall hardly believe them, although attested by millions. I reflected what a mortification it must prove to me to  
30 appear as inconsiderable in this nation as one single Lilliputian would be among us. But this I conceived was to be the least of my misfortunes: for as human creatures are observed to be more savage and cruel in proportion to their bulk, what could I expect but to be a morsel in the mouth of the first among these enormous

barbarians that should happen to seize me ? Undoubtedly philosophers are in the right when they tell us, that nothing is great or little otherwise than by comparison. It might have pleased fortune to let the Lilliputians find some nation, where the people were as diminutive with respect to them, as they were to me. And who knows but that even this prodigious race of mortals might be equally overmatched in some distant part of the world, whereof we have yet no discovery ?

Scared and confounded as I was, I could not forbear 10 going on with these reflections, when one of the reapers approaching within ten yards of the ridge where I lay, made me apprehend that with the next step I should be squashed to death under his foot, or cut in two with his reaping-hook. And therefore when he was again about to move, I screamed as loud as fear could make me. Whereupon the huge creature trod short, and looking round about under him for some time, at last espied me as I lay on the ground. He considered a while with the caution of one who endeavours to lay hold on a small 20 dangerous animal in such a manner that it shall not be able either to scratch or to bite him, as I myself have sometimes done with a weasel in England. At length he ventured to take me up behind by the middle between his forefinger and thumb, and brought me within three yards of his eyes, that he might behold my shape more perfectly. I guessed his meaning, and my good fortune gave me so much presence of mind, that I resolved not to struggle in the least as he held me in the air about sixty foot from the ground, although he grievously 30 pinched my sides, for fear I should slip through his fingers. All I ventured was to raise my eyes towards the sun, and place my hands together in a supplicating posture, and to speak some words in an humble melancholy tone, suitable to the condition I then was in.

For I apprehended every moment that he would dash me against the ground, as we usually do any little hateful animal which we have a mind to destroy. But my good star would have it, that he appeared pleased with my voice and gestures, and began to look upon me as a curiosity, much wondering to hear me pronounce articulate words, although he could not understand them. In the mean time I was not able to forbear groaning and shedding tears, and turning my head towards my sides ;  
10 letting him know, as well as I could, how cruelly I was hurt by the pressure of his thumb and finger. He seemed to apprehend my meaning ; for, lifting up the lappet of his coat, he put me gently into it, and immediately ran along with me to his master, who was a substantial farmer, and the same person I had first seen in the field.

The farmer having (as I supposed by their talk) received such an account of me as his servant could give him, took a piece of a small straw, about the size of a walking staff, and therewith lifted up the lappets  
20 of my coat ; which it seems he thought to be some kind of covering that nature had given me. He blew my hairs aside to take a better view of my face. He called his hinds about him, and asked them (as I afterwards learned) whether they had ever seen in the fields any little creature that resembled me. He then placed me softly on the ground upon all four, but I got immediately up, and walked slowly backwards and forwards, to let those people see I had no intent to run away. They all sat down in a circle about me, the better to observe my  
30 motions. I pulled off my hat, and made a low bow towards the farmer. I fell on my knees, and lifted up my hands and eyes, and spoke several words as loud as I could : I took a purse of gold out of my pocket, and humbly presented it to him. He received it on the palm of his hand, then applied it close to his eye, to see what



it was, and afterwards turned it several times with the point of a pin (which he took out of his sleeve), but could make nothing of it. Whereupon I made a sign that he should place his hand on the ground. I took the purse, and opening it, poured all the gold into his palm. There were six Spanish pieces of four pistoles each, beside twenty or thirty smaller coins. I saw him wet the tip of his little finger upon his tongue, and take up one of my largest pieces, and then another, but he seemed to be wholly ignorant what they were. He made 10 me a sign to put them again into my purse, and the purse again into my pocket, which after offering to him several times, I thought it best to do.

The farmer by this time was convinced I must be a rational creature. He spoke often to me, but the sound of his voice pierced my ears like that of a water-mill, yet his words were articulate enough. I answered as loud as I could, in several languages, and he often laid his ear within two yards of me, but all in vain, for we were wholly unintelligible to each other. He then sent his servants 20 to their work, and taking his handkerchief out of his pocket, he doubled and spread it on his left hand, which he placed flat on the ground, with the palm upwards, making me a sign to step into it, as I could easily do, for it was not above a foot in thickness. I thought it my part to obey, and for fear of falling, laid myself at length upon the handkerchief, with the remainder of which he lapped me up to the head for further security, and in this manner carried me home to his house. There he called his wife, and showed me to her; but she 30 screamed and ran back, as women in England do at the sight of a toad or a spider. However, when she had a while seen my behaviour, and how well I observed the signs her husband made, she was soon reconciled, and by degrees grew extremely tender of me.

It was about twelve at noon, and a servant brought in dinner. It was only one substantial dish of meat (fit for the plain condition of an husbandman) in a dish of about four-and-twenty foot diameter. The company were the farmer and his wife, three children, and an old grandmother. When they were sat down, the farmer placed me at some distance from him on the table, which was thirty foot high from the floor. I was in a terrible fright, and kept as far as I could from the edge for fear of falling.

10 The wife minced a bit of meat, then crumbled some bread on a trencher, and placed it before me. I made her a low bow, took out my knife and fork, and fell to eat, which gave them exceeding delight. The mistress sent her maid for a small dram cup, which held about three gallons, and filled it with drink; I took up the vessel with much difficulty in both hands, and in a most respectful manner drank to her ladyship's health, expressing the words as loud as I could in English, which made the company laugh so heartily, that I was  
20 almost deafened with the noise. This liquor tasted like a small cyder, and was not unpleasant. Then the master made me a sign to come to his trencher side; but as I walked on the table, being in great surprise all the time, as the indulgent reader will easily conceive and excuse, I happened to stumble against a crust, and fell flat on my face, but received no hurt. I got up immediately, and observing the good people to be in much concern, I took my hat (which I held under my arm out of good manners) and waving it over my head, made  
30 three huzzas, to show I had got no mischief by my fall. But advancing forwards toward my master (as I shall henceforth call him) his youngest son who sat next him, an arch boy of about ten years old, took me up by the legs, and held me so high in the air, that I trembled every limb; but his father snatched me from him, and

at the same time gave him such a box on the left ear, as would have felled an European troop of horse to the earth, ordering him to be taken from the table. But being afraid the boy might owe me a spite, and well remembering how mischievous all children among us naturally are to sparrows, rabbits, young kittens, and puppy dogs, I fell on my knees, and pointing to the boy, made my master to understand, as well as I could, that I desired his son might be pardoned. The father complied, and the lad took his seat again ; whereupon 10 I went to him and kissed his hand, which my master took, and made him stroke me gently with it.

In the midst of dinner, my mistress's favourite cat leapt into her lap. I heard a noise behind me like that of a dozen stocking-weavers at work ; and turning my head, I found it proceeded from the purring of this animal, who seemed to be three times larger than an ox, as I computed by the view of her head, and one of her paws, while her mistress was feeding and stroking her. The fierceness of this creature's countenance altogether 20 discomposed me ; though I stood at the farther end of the table, above fifty foot off ; and although my mistress held her fast for fear she might give a spring, and seize me in her talons. But it happened there was no danger ; for the cat took not the least notice of me when my master placed me within three yards of her. And as I have been always told, and found true by experience in my travels, that flying, or discovering fear before a fierce animal, is a certain way to make it pursue or attack you, so I resolved in this dangerous juncture to 30 show no manner of concern. I walked with intrepidity five or six times before the very head of the cat, and came within half a yard of her ; whereupon she drew herself back, as if she were more afraid of me : I had less apprehension concerning the dogs, whereof three or four

came into the room, as it is usual in farmers' houses ; one of which was a mastiff, equal in bulk to four elephants, and a greyhound, somewhat taller than the mastiff, but not so large.

When dinner was almost done, the nurse came in with a child of a year old in her arms, who immediately spied me, and began a squall that you might have heard from London Bridge to Chelsea, after the usual oratory of infants, to get me for a plaything. The mother out of  
10 pure indulgence took me up, and put me towards the child, who presently seized me by the middle, and got my head in his mouth, where I roared so loud that the urchin was frightened, and let me drop ; and I should infallibly have broke my neck if the mother had not held her apron under me.

When dinner was done, my master went out to his labourers, and as I could discover by his voice and gesture, gave his wife a strict charge to take care of me. I was very much tired, and disposed to sleep, which my  
20 mistress perceiving, she put me on her own bed, and covered me with a clean white handkerchief, but larger and coarser than the mainsail of a man of war.

I slept about two hours, and dreamed I was at home with my wife and children, which aggravated my sorrows when I awaked and found myself alone in a vast room, between two and three hundred foot wide, and above two hundred high, lying in a bed twenty yards wide. My mistress was gone about her household affairs, and had locked me in. The bed was eight yards from the  
30 floor. While I was under these circumstances, two rats crept up the curtains, and ran smelling backwards and forwards on the bed. One of them came up almost to my face, whereupon I rose in a fright, and drew out my hanger to defend myself. These horrible animals had the boldness to attack me on both sides, and one of

them held his fore-feet at my collar ; but I had the good fortune to rip up his belly before he could do me any mischief. He fell down at my feet, and the other seeing the fate of his comrade, made his escape, but not without one good wound on the back, which I gave him as he fled, and made the blood run trickling from him. After this exploit, I walked gently to and fro on the bed, to recover my breath and loss of spirits. These creatures were of the size of a large mastiff, but infinitely more nimble and fierce, so that if I had taken off my belt 10 before I went to sleep, I must have infallibly been torn to pieces and devoured. I measured the tail of the dead rat, and found it to be two yards long, wanting an inch ; but it went against my stomach to drag the carcass off the bed, where it lay still bleeding ; I observed it had yet some life, but with a strong slash cross the neck, I thoroughly dispatched it.

Soon after my mistress came into the room, who seeing me all bloody, ran and took me up in her hand. I pointed to the dead rat, smiling and making other signs to show 20 I was not hurt, whereat she was extremely rejoiced, calling the maid to take up the dead rat with a pair of tongs, and throw it out of the window. Then she set me on a table, where I showed her my hanger all bloody, and wiping it on the lappet of my coat, returned it to the scabbard.

I hope the gentle reader will excuse me for dwelling on these and the like particulars, which however insignificant they may appear to grovelling vulgar minds, yet will certainly help a philosopher to enlarge his thoughts and 30 imagination, and apply them to the benefit of public as well as private life, which was my sole design in presenting this and other accounts of my travels to the world ; wherein I have been chiefly studious of truth, without affecting any ornaments of learning or of style. But the

whole scene of this voyage made so strong an impression on my mind, and is so deeply fixed in my memory, that in committing it to paper I did not omit one material circumstance : however, upon a strict review, I blotted out several passages of less moment which were in my first copy, for fear of being censured as tedious and trifling, whereof travellers are often, perhaps not without justice, accused.

## CHAP. II

*A description of the farmer's daughter. The Author carried to a market-town, and then to the metropolis. The particulars of his journey.*

MY mistress had a daughter of nine years old, a child of forward parts for her age, very dexterous at her needle, and skilful in dressing her baby. Her mother and she contrived to fit up the baby's cradle for me against night: the cradle was put into a small drawer of a cabinet, and the drawer placed upon a hanging shelf <sup>10</sup> for fear of the rats. This was my bed all the time I stayed with those people, though made more convenient by degrees, as I began to learn their language, and make my wants known. This young girl was so handy, that after I had once or twice pulled off my clothes before her, she was able to dress and undress me, though I never gave her that trouble when she would let me do either myself. She made me seven shirts, and some other linen, of as fine cloth as could be got, which indeed was coarser than sackcloth; and these she con- <sup>20</sup> stantly washed for me with her own hands. She was likewise my school-mistress to teach me the language: when I pointed to any thing, she told me the name of it in her own tongue, so that in a few days I was able to call for whatever I had a mind to. She was very good-natured, and not above forty foot high, being little for her age. She gave me the name of *Grildrig*, which the family took up, and afterwards the whole kingdom. The word imports what the Latins call *nanunculus*, the Italians *homuncelino*, and the English *mannikin*. To <sup>30</sup> her I chiefly owe my preservation in that country: we

never parted while I was there ; I called her my *Glum-dalclitch*, or little nurse : and I should be guilty of great ingratitude if I omitted this honourable mention of her care and affection towards me, which I heartily wish it lay in my power to requite as she deserves, instead of being the innocent but unhappy instrument of her disgrace, as I have too much reason to fear.

It now began to be known and talked of in the neighbourhood, that my master had found a strange animal  
10 in the field, about the bigness of a *splacknuck*, but exactly shaped in every part like a human creature ; which it likewise imitated in all its actions ; seemed to speak in a little language of its own, had already learned several words of theirs, went erect upon two legs, was tame and gentle, would come when it was called, do whatever it was bid, had the finest limbs in the world, and a complexion fairer than a nobleman's daughter of three years old. Another farmer who lived hard by, and was a particular friend of my master, came on a visit on  
20 purpose to enquire into the truth of this story. I was immediately produced, and placed upon a table, where I walked as I was commanded, drew my hanger, put it up again, made my reverence to my master's guest, asked him in his own language how he did, and told him he was welcome, just as my little nurse had instructed me. This man, who was old and dim-sighted, put on his spectacles to behold me better, at which I could not forbear laughing very heartily, for his eyes appeared like the full moon shining into a chamber at  
30 two windows. Our people, who discovered the cause of my mirth, bore me company in laughing, at which the old fellow was fool enough to be angry and out of countenance. He had the character of a great miser, and to my misfortune he well deserved it, by the cursed advice he gave my master to show me as a sight upon



a market-day in the next town, which was half an hour's riding, about two and twenty miles from our house. I guessed there was some mischief contriving, when I observed my master and his friend whispering long together, sometimes pointing at me ; and my fears made me fancy that I overheard and understood some of their words. But the next morning Glumdalclitch my little nurse told me the whole matter, which she had cunningly picked out from her mother. The poor girl laid me on her bosom, and fell a weeping with shame 10 and grief. She apprehended some mischief would happen to me from rude vulgar folks, who might squeeze me to death, or break one of my limbs by taking me in their hands. She had also observed how modest I was in my nature, how nicely I regarded my honour, and what an indignity I should conceive it to be exposed for money as a public spectacle to the meanest of the people. She said, her papa and mamma had promised that Grildrig should be hers, but now she found they meant to serve her as they did last year, when they 20 pretended to give her a lamb, and yet, as soon as it was fat, sold it to a butcher. For my own part, I may truly affirm that I was less concerned than my nurse. I had a strong hope which never left me, that I should one day recover my liberty ; and as to the ignominy of being carried about for a monster, I considered myself to be a perfect stranger in the country, and that such a misfortune could never be charged upon me as a reproach, if ever I should return to England ; since the King of Great Britain himself, in my condition, must have 30 undergone the same distress.

My master, pursuant to the advice of his friend, carried me in a box the next market-day to the neighbouring town, and took along with him his little daughter my nurse upon a pillion behind him. The box was close

on every side, with a little door for me to go in and out, and a few gimlet-holes to let in air. The girl had been so careful to put the quilt of her baby's bed into it, for me to lie down on. However, I was terribly shaken and discomposed in this journey, though it were but of half an hour. For the horse went about forty foot at every step, and trotted so high, that the agitation was equal to the rising and falling of a ship in a great storm, but much more frequent. Our journey was  
10 somewhat further than from London to St. Albans. My master alighted at an inn which he used to frequent ; and after consulting a while with the inn-keeper, and making some necessary preparations, he hired the *Grul-trud*, or crier, to give notice through the town of a strange creature to be seen at the Sign of the Green Eagle, not so big as a *splacknuck* (an animal in that country very finely shaped, about six foot long) and in every part of the body resembling an human creature, could speak several words, and perform an hundred diverting  
20 tricks.

I was placed upon a table in the largest room of the inn, which might be near three hundred foot square. My little nurse stood on a low stool close to the table, to take care of me, and direct what I should do. My master, to avoid a crowd, would suffer only thirty people at a time to see me. I walked about on the table as the girl commanded : she asked me questions as far as she knew my understanding of the language reached, and I answered them as loud as I could. I turned about  
30 several times to the company, paid my humble respects, said they were welcome, and used some other speeches I had been taught. I took up a thimble filled with liquor, which Glumdalclitch had given me for a cup, and drank their health. I drew out my hanger, and flourished with it after the manner of fencers in England.

My nurse gave me part of a straw, which I exercised as a pike, having learned the art in my youth. I was that day shown to twelve sets of company, and as often forced to go over again with the same fopperies, till I was half dead with weariness and vexation. For those who had seen me made such wonderful reports, that the people were ready to break down the doors to come in. My master for his own interest would not suffer any one to touch me except my nurse ; and, to prevent danger, benches were set round the table at such a distance as <sup>10</sup> put me out of every body's reach. However, an unlucky school-boy aimed a hazel nut directly at my head, which very narrowly missed me ; otherwise, it came with so much violence, that it would have infallibly knocked out my brains, for it was almost as large as a small pumpkin : but I had the satisfaction to see the young rogue well beaten, and turned out of the room.

My master gave public notice that he would show me again the next market-day, and in the meantime he prepared a more convenient vehicle for me, which <sup>20</sup> he had reason enough to do ; for I was so tired with my first journey, and with entertaining company for eight hours together, that I could hardly stand upon my legs or speak a word. It was at least three days before I recovered my strength ; and that I might have no rest at home, all the neighbouring gentlemen from an hundred miles round, hearing of my fame, came to see me at my master's own house. There could not be fewer than thirty persons with their wives and children (for the country is very populous) ; and my master demanded <sup>30</sup> the rate of a full room whenever he showed me at home, although it were only to a single family ; so that for some time I had but little ease every day of the week (except Wednesday, which is their Sabbath) although I were not carried to the town.

My master finding how profitable I was likely to be, resolved to carry me to the most considerable cities of the kingdom. Having therefore provided himself with all things necessary for a long journey, and settled his affairs at home, he took leave of his wife, and upon the 17th of August, 1703, about two months after my arrival, we set out for the metropolis, situated near the middle of that empire, and about three thousand miles distance from our house. My master made his daughter Glum-  
10 daleclitch ride behind him. She carried me on her lap in a box tied about her waist. The girl had lined it on all sides with the softest cloth she could get, well quilted underneath, furnished it with her baby's bed, provided me with linen and other necessaries, and made everything as convenient as she could. We had no other company but a boy of the house, who rode after us with the luggage.

My master's design was to show me in all the towns by the way, and to step out of the road for fifty or an  
20 hundred miles, to any village or person of quality's house where he might expect custom. We made easy journeys of not above seven or eight score miles a day : for Glumdaleclitch, on purpose to spare me, complained she was tired with the trotting of the horse. She often took me out of my box at my own desire, to give me air and show me the country, but always held me fast by a leading-string. We passed over five or six rivers many degrees broader and deeper than the Nile or the Ganges ; and there was hardly a rivulet so small as the  
30 Thames at London Bridge. We were ten weeks in our journey, and I was shown in eighteen large towns besides many villages and private families.

On the 26th day of October, we arrived at the metropolis, called in their language *Lorbrulgrud*, or Pride of the Universe. My master took a lodging in the principal

street of the city, not far from the royal palace, and put out bills in the usual form, containing an exact description of my person and parts. He hired a large room between three and four hundred foot wide. He provided a table sixty foot in diameter, upon which I was to act my part, and palisadoed it round three foot from the edge, and as many high, to prevent my falling over. I was shown ten times a day to the wonder and satisfaction of all people. I could now speak the language tolerably well, and perfectly understood every <sup>10</sup> word that was spoken to me. Besides, I had learnt their alphabet, and could make a shift to explain a sentence here and there ; for Glumdalclitch had been my instructor while we were at home, and at leisure hours during our journey. She carried a little book in her pocket, not much larger than a Sanson's Atlas ; it was a common treatise for the use of young girls, giving a short account of their religion : out of this she taught me my letters, and interpreted the words.

## CHAP. III

*The Author sent for to Court. The Queen buys him of his master the farmer, and presents him to the King. He disputes with his Majesty's great scholars. An apartment at Court provided for the Author. He is in high favour with the Queen. He stands up for the honour of his own country. His quarrels with the Queen's dwarf.*

THE frequent labours I underwent every day made in a few weeks a very considerable change in my health :  
10 the more my master got by me, the more unsatiable he grew. I had quite lost my stomach, and was almost reduced to a skeleton. The farmer observed it, and concluding I soon must die, resolved to make as good a hand of me as he could. While he was thus reasoning and resolving with himself, a *Slardral*, or Gentleman Usher, came from court, commanding my master to carry me immediately thither for the diversion of the Queen and her ladies. Some of the latter had already  
20 been to see me, and reported strange things of my beauty, behaviour, and good sense. Her Majesty and those who attended her were beyond measure delighted with my demeanour. I fell on my knees, and begged the honour of kissing her Imperial foot ; but this gracious princess held out her little finger towards me (after I was set on a table) which I embraced in both my arms, and put the tip of it with the utmost respect to my lip. She made me some general questions about my country and my travels, which I answered as distinctly and in as few words as I could. She asked whether I would be content  
30 to live at court. I bowed down to the board of the table, and humbly answered, that I was my master's slave, but if I were at my own disposal, I should be proud to devote

my life to her Majesty's service. She then asked my master whether he were willing to sell me at a good price. He, who apprehended I could not live a month, was ready enough to part with me, and demanded a thousand pieces of gold, which were ordered him on the spot, each piece being about the bigness of eight hundred moidores ; but, allowing for the proportion of all things between that country and Europe, and the high price of gold among them, was hardly so great a sum as a thousand guineas would be in England. I then said to the Queen, 10 since I was now her Majesty's most humble creature and vassal, I must beg the favour, that Glumdalelitch, who had always tended me with so much care and kindness, and understood to do it so well, might be admitted into her service, and continue to be my nurse and instructor. Her Majesty agreed to my petition, and easily got the farmer's consent, who was glad enough to have his daughter preferred at court : and the poor girl herself was not able to hide her joy. My late master withdrew, bidding me farewell, and saying he had left me in a good 20 service ; to which I replied not a word, only making him a slight bow.

The Queen observed my coldness, and when the farmer was gone out of the apartment, asked me the reason. I made bold to tell her Majesty that I owed no other obligation to my late master, than his not dashing out the brains of a poor harmless creature found by chance in his field ; which obligation was amply recompensed by the gain he had made in showing me through half the kingdom, and the price he had now sold me for. 30 That the life I had since led was laborious enough to kill an animal of ten times my strength. That my health was much impaired by the continual drudgery of entertaining the rabble every hour of the day, and that if my master had not thought my life in danger,

her Majesty perhaps would not have got so cheap a bargain. But as I was out of all fear of being ill treated under the protection of so great and good an Empress, the Ornament of Nature, the Darling of the World, the Delight of her Subjects, the Phoenix of the Creation ; so I hoped my late master's apprehensions would appear to be groundless, for I already found my spirits to revive by the influence of her most august presence.

10 This was the sum of my speech, delivered with great improprieties and hesitation ; the latter part was altogether framed in the style peculiar to that people, whereof I learned some phrases from Glumdalehitch, while she was carrying me to court.

The Queen giving great allowance for my defectiveness in speaking, was however surprised at so much wit and good sense in so diminutive an animal. She took me in her own hand, and carried me to the King, who was then retired to his cabinet. His Majesty, a prince  
20 of much gravity, and austere countenance, not well observing my shape at first view, asked the Queen after a cold manner, how long it was since she grew fond of a *splacknuck* ; for such it seems he took me to be, as I lay upon my breast in her Majesty's right hand. But this princess, who hath an infinite deal of wit and humour, set me gently on my feet upon the scrutore, and commanded me to give his Majesty an account of myself, which I did in a very few words ; and Glumdalehitch, who attended at the cabinet door, and could not endure  
30 I should be out of her sight, being admitted, confirmed all that had passed from my arrival at her father's house.

The King, although he be as learned a person as any in his dominions, and had been educated in the study of philosophy, and particularly mathematics ; yet when he



observed my shape exactly, and saw me walk erect, before I began to speak, conceived I might be a piece of clock-work, (which is in that country arrived to a very great perfection) contrived by some ingenious artist. But when he heard my voice, and found what I delivered to be regular and rational, he could not conceal his astonishment. He was by no means satisfied with the relation I gave him of the manner I came into his kingdom, but thought it a story concerted between Glumdaleclitch and her father, who had taught me a set 10 of words to make me sell at a higher price. Upon this imagination he put several other questions to me, and still received rational answers, no otherwise defective than by a foreign accent, and an imperfect knowledge in the language, with some rustic phrases which I had learned at the farmer's house, and did not suit the polite style of a court.

His Majesty sent for three great scholars who were then in their weekly waiting, according to the custom in that country. These gentlemen, after they had a while 20 examined my shape with much nicety, were of different opinions concerning me. They all agreed that I could not be produced according to the regular laws of nature, because I was not framed with a capacity of preserving my life, either by swiftness, or climbing of trees, or digging holes in the earth. They observed by my teeth, which they viewed with great exactness, that I was a carnivorous animal ; yet most quadrupeds being an overmatch for me, and field mice, with some others, too nimble, they could not imagine how I should be able to 30 support myself, unless I fed upon snails and other insects, which they offered, by many learned arguments, to evince that I could not possibly do. They would not allow me to be a dwarf, because my littleness was beyond all degrees of comparison ; for the Queen's favourite

dwarf, the smallest ever known in that kingdom, was near thirty foot high. After much debate, they concluded unanimously that I was only *relplum scalcath*, which is interpreted literally, *lusus naturæ*; a determination exactly agreeable to the modern philosophy of Europe, whose professors, disclaiming the old evasion of *occult causes*, whereby the followers of Aristotle endeavour in vain to disguise their ignorance, have invented this wonderful solution of all difficulties, to the unspeakable  
10 advancement of human knowledge.

After this decisive conclusion, I entreated to be heard a word or two. I applied myself to the King, and assured his Majesty, that I came from a country which abounded with several millions of both sexes, and of my own stature; where the animals, trees, and houses were all in proportion, and where by consequence I might be as able to defend myself, and to find sustenance, as any of his Majesty's subjects could do here; which I took for a full answer to those gentlemen's arguments. To  
20 this they only replied with a smile of contempt, saying that the farmer had instructed me very well in my lesson. The King, who had a much better understanding, dismissing his learned men, sent for the farmer, who by good fortune was not yet gone out of town. Having therefore first examined him privately, and then confronted him with me and the young girl, his Majesty began to think that what we told him might possibly be true. He desired the Queen to order that a particular care should be taken of me, and was of opinion that Glum-  
30 daleclitch should still continue in her office of tending me, because he observed we had a great affection for each other. A convenient apartment was provided for her at court; she had a sort of governess appointed to take care of her education, a maid to dress her, and two other servants for menial offices; but the care of me

was wholly appropriated to herself. The Queen commanded her own cabinet-maker to contrive a box that might serve me for a bed-chamber, after the model that Glumdalclitch and I should agree upon. This man was a most ingenious artist, and according to my directions, in three weeks finished for me a wooden chamber of sixteen foot square, and twelve high, with sash-windows, a door, and two closets, like a London bed-chamber. The board that made the ceiling was to be lifted up and down by two hinges, to put in a bed ready furnished <sup>10</sup> by her Majesty's upholsterer, which Glumdalclitch took out every day to air, made it with her own hands, and letting it down at night, locked up the roof over me. A nice workman, who was famous for little curiosities, undertook to make me two chairs, with backs and frames, of a substance not unlike ivory, and two tables, with a cabinet to put my things in. The room was quilted on all sides, as well as the floor and the ceiling, to prevent any accident from the carelessness of those who carried me, and to break the force of a jolt when <sup>20</sup> I went in a coach. I desired a lock for my door, to prevent rats and mice from coming in : the smith, after several attempts, made the smallest that ever was seen among them, for I have known a larger at the gate of a gentleman's house in England. I made a shift to keep the key in a pocket of my own, fearing Glumdalclitch might lose it. The Queen likewise ordered the thinnest silks that could be gotten, to make me clothes, not much thicker than an English blanket, very cumbersome till I was accustomed to them. They were after the fashion <sup>30</sup> of the kingdom, partly resembling the Persian, and partly the Chinese, and are a very grave and decent habit.

The Queen became so fond of my company, that she could not dine without me. I had a table placed upon

the same at which her Majesty ate, just at her left elbow, and a chair to sit on. Glumdalclitch stood upon a stool on the floor, near my table, to assist and take care of me. I had an entire set of silver dishes and plates, and other necessaries, which, in proportion to those of the Queen, were not much bigger than what I have seen of the same kind in a London toy-shop, for the furniture of a baby-house : these my little nurse kept in her pocket in a silver box, and gave me at meals as I wanted them, always  
10 cleaning them herself. No person dined with the Queen but the two Princesses Royal, the elder sixteen years old, and the younger at that time thirteen and a month. Her Majesty used to put a bit of meat upon one of my dishes, out of which I carved for myself, and her diversion was to see me eat in miniature. For the Queen (who had indeed but a weak stomach) took up at one mouthful as much as a dozen English farmers could eat at a meal, which to me was for some time a very nauseous sight. She would craunch the wing of a lark, bones and all,  
20 between her teeth, although it were nine times as large as that of a full-grown turkey ; and put a bit of bread into her mouth, as big as two twelve-penny loaves. She drank out of a golden cup, above a hogshead at a draught. Her knives were twice as long as a scythe set straight upon the handle. The spoons, forks, and other instruments were all in the same proportion. I remember when Glumdalclitch carried me out of curiosity to see some of the tables at court, where ten or a dozen of these enormous knives and forks were  
30 lifted up together, I thought I had never till then beheld so terrible a sight.

It is the custom that every Wednesday (which, as I have before observed, was their Sabbath) the King and Queen, with the royal issue of both sexes, dine together in the apartment of his Majesty, to whom I was now become

a great favourite ; and at these times my little chair and table were placed at his left hand, before one of the salt-cellars. This prince took a pleasure in conversing with me, enquiring into the manners, religion, laws, government, and learning of Europe ; wherein I gave him the best account I was able. His apprehension was so clear, and his judgment so exact, that he made very wise reflections and observations upon all I said. But, I confess, that after I had been a little too copious in talking of my own beloved country, of our trade, and 10 wars by sea and land, of our schisms in religion, and parties in the state, the prejudices of his education prevailed so far, that he could not forbear taking me up in his right hand, and stroking me gently with the other, after an hearty fit of laughing, asked me whether I were a Whig or a Tory. Then turning to his first minister, who waited behind him with a white staff, near as tall as the mainmast of the *Royal Sovereign*, he observed how contemptible a thing was human grandeur, which could be mimicked by such diminutive insects as I : and 20 yet, said he, I dare engage, these creatures have their titles and distinctions of honour, they contrive little nests and burrows, that they call houses and cities ; they make a figure in dress and equipage ; they love, they fight, they dispute, they cheat, they betray. And thus he continued on, while my colour came and went several times with indignation to hear our noble country, the mistress of arts and arms, the scourge of France, the arbitress of Europe, the seat of virtue, piety, honour and truth, the pride and envy of the world, so contemptuously 30 treated.

But as I was not in a condition to resent injuries, so, upon mature thoughts, I began to doubt whether I were injured or no. For, after having been accustomed several months to the sight and converse of this people, and

observed every object upon which I cast my eyes to be of proportionable magnitude, the horror I had first conceived from their bulk and aspect was so far worn off, that if I had then beheld a company of English lords and ladies in their finery and birth-day clothes, acting their several parts in the most courtly manner, of strutting, and bowing, and prating, to say the truth, I should have been strongly tempted to laugh as much at them as the King and his grantees did at me. Neither indeed  
10 could I forbear smiling at myself, when the Queen used to place me upon her hand towards a looking-glass, by which both our persons appeared before me in full view together ; and there could be nothing more ridiculous than the comparison ; so that I really began to imagine myself dwindled many degrees below my usual size.

Nothing angered and mortified me so much as the Queen's dwarf, who being of the lowest stature that was ever in that country (for I verily think he was not full thirty foot high) became insolent at seeing a creature  
20 so much beneath him, that he would always affect to swagger and look big as he passed by me in the Queen's antechamber, while I was standing on some table talking with the lords or ladies of the court, and he seldom failed of a smart word or two upon my littleness ; against which I could only revenge myself by calling him brother, challenging him to wrestle, and such repartees as are usual in the mouths of court pages. One day at dinner this malicious little cub was so nettled with something I had said to him, that raising himself upon the frame  
30 of her Majesty's chair, he took me up by the middle, as I was sitting down, not thinking any harm, and let me drop into a large silver bowl of cream, and then ran away as fast as he could. I fell over head and ears, and if I had not been a good swimmer, it might have gone

very hard with me ; for Glumdalelitch in that instant happened to be at the other end of the room, and the Queen was in such a fright that she wanted presence of mind to assist me. But my little nurse ran to my relief, and took me out, after I had swallowed above a quart of cream. I was put to bed ; however I received no other damage than the loss of a suit of clothes, which was utterly spoiled. The dwarf was soundly whipped, and as a farther punishment, forced to drink up the bowl of cream, into which he had thrown me ; neither was <sup>10</sup> he ever restored to favour : for soon after the Queen bestowed him to a lady of high quality, so that I saw him no more, to my very great satisfaction ; for I could not tell to what extremity such a malicious urchin might have carried his resentment.

He had before served me a scurvy trick, which set the Queen a laughing, although at the same time she were heartily vexed, and would have immediately cashiered him, if I had not been so generous as to intercede. Her Majesty had taken a marrow-bone upon her plate, <sup>20</sup> and after knocking out the marrow, placed the bone again in the dish erect as it stood before ; the dwarf watching his opportunity, while Glumdalelitch was gone to the sideboard, mounted upon the stool she stood on to take care of me at meals, took me up in both hands, and squeezing my legs together, wedged them into the marrow-bone above my waist, where I stuck for some time, and made a very ridiculous figure. I believe it was near a minute before any one knew what was become of me, for I thought it below me to cry out. But, as princes <sup>30</sup> seldom get their meat hot, my legs were not scalded, only my stockings and breeches in a sad condition. The dwarf at my entreaty had no other punishment than a sound whipping.

I was frequently rallied by the Queen upon account of

my fearfulness, and she used to ask me whether the people of my country were as great cowards as myself. The occasion was this. The kingdom is much pestered with flies in summer ; and these odious insects, each of them as big as a Dunstable lark, hardly gave me any rest while I sat at dinner, with their continual humming and buzzing about my ears. They would sometimes alight upon my victuals ; sometimes they would fix upon my nose or forehead, where they stung me to the  
10 quick, smelling very offensively, and I could easily trace that viscous matter, which our naturalists tell us enables those creatures to walk with their feet upwards upon a ceiling. I had much ado to defend myself against these detestable animals, and could not forbear starting when they came on my face. It was the common practice of the dwarf to catch a number of these insects in his hand, as schoolboys do among us, and let them out suddenly under my nose, on purpose to frighten me, and divert the Queen. My remedy was to cut them in  
20 pieces with my knife as they flew in the air, wherem my dexterity was much admired.

I remember one morning when Glumdalelitch had set me in my box upon a window, as she usually did in fair days to give me air (for I durst not venture to let the box be hung on a nail out of the window, as we do with cages in England) after I had lifted up one of my sashes, and sat down at my table to eat a piece of sweet cake for my breakfast, above twenty wasps, allured by the smell, came flying into the room, humming louder than  
30 the drones of as many bagpipes. Some of them seized my cake, and carried it piecemeal away, others flew about my head and face, confounding me with the noise, and putting me in the utmost terror of their stings. However I had the courage to rise and draw my hanger, and attack them in the air. I dispatched four of them,



but the rest got away, and I presently shut my window. These insects were as large as partridges : I took out their stings, found them an inch and a half long, and as sharp as needles. I carefully preserved them all, and having since shown them with some other curiosities in several parts of Europe, upon my return to England I gave three of them to Gresham College, and kept the fourth for myself.

## CHAP. IV

*The country described. A proposal for correcting modern maps. The King's palace, and some account of the metropolis. The Author's way of travelling. The chief temple described.*

I now intend to give the reader a short description of this country, as far as I travelled in it, which was not above two thousand miles round Lörbrulgrud the metropolis. For the Queen, whom I always attended, never went further when she accompanied the King in  
10 his progresses, and there stayed till his Majesty returned from viewing his frontiers. The whole extent of this prince's dominions reacheth about six thousand miles in length, and from three to five in breadth. From whence I cannot but conclude that our geographers of Europe are in a great error, by supposing nothing but sea between Japan and California ; for it was ever my opinion, that there must be a balance of earth to counterpoise the great continent of Tartary ; and therefore they ought to correct their maps and charts, by joining this  
20 vast tract of land to the north-west parts of America, wherein I shall be ready to lend them my assistance.

The kingdom is a peninsula, terminated to the north-east by a ridge of mountains thirty miles high, which are altogether impassable by reason of the volcanoes upon the tops. Neither do the most learned know what sort of mortals inhabit beyond those mountains, or whether they be inhabited at all. On the three other sides it is bounded by the ocean. There is not one sea-port in the whole kingdom, and those parts of the coasts into which  
30 the rivers issue are so full of pointed rocks, and the sea generally so rough, that there is no venturing with the

smallest of their boats, so that these people are wholly excluded from any commerce with the rest of the world. But the large rivers are full of vessels, and abound with excellent fish, for they seldom get any from the sea, because the sea-fish are of the same size with those in Europe, and consequently not worth catching ; whereby it is manifest, that nature, in the production of plants and animals of so extraordinary a bulk, is wholly confined to this continent, of which I leave the reasons to be determined by philosophers. However, now and <sup>10</sup> then they take a whale that happens to be dashed against the rocks, which the common people feed on heartily. These whales I have known so large that a man could hardly carry one upon his shoulders ; and sometimes for curiosity they are brought in hampers to Lorbrulgrud : I saw one of them in a dish at the King's table, which passed for a rarity, but I did not observe he was fond of it ; for I think indeed the bigness disgusted him, although I have seen one somewhat larger in Greenland. <sup>20</sup>

The country is well inhabited, for it contains fifty-one cities, near an hundred walled towns, and a great number of villages. To satisfy my curious reader, it may be sufficient to describe Lorbrulgrud. This city stands upon almost two equal parts on each side the river that passes through. It contains above eighty thousand houses, and about six hundred thousand inhabitants. It is in length three *glongluns* (which make about fifty-four English miles) and two and a half in breadth, as I measured it myself in the royal map made by the King's order, <sup>20</sup> which was laid on the ground on purpose for me, and extended an hundred feet : I paced the diameter and circumference several times bare-foot, and computing by the scale, measured it pretty exactly.

The King's palace is no regular edifice, but an heap of

buildings about seven miles round : the chief rooms are generally two hundred and forty foot high, and broad and long in proportion. A coach was allowed to Glumdalclitch and me, wherein her governess frequently took her out to see the town, or go among the shops ; and I was always of the party, carried in my box ; although the girl at my own desire would often take me out, and hold me in her hand, that I might more conveniently view the houses and the people, as we passed along the streets. I reckoned  
10 our coach to be about a square of Westminster Hall, but not altogether so high ; however, I cannot be very exact. One day the governess ordered our coachman to stop at several shops, where the beggars, watching their opportunity, crowded to the sides of the coach, and gave me the most horrible spectacles that ever an English eye beheld.

Besides the large box in which I was usually carried, the Queen ordered a smaller one to be made for me, of about twelve foot square, and ten high, for the convenience of travelling, because the other was somewhat  
20 too large for Glumdalclitch's lap, and cumbersome in the coach ; it was made by the same artist, whom I directed in the whole contrivance. This travelling closet was an exact square with a window in the middle of three of the squares, and each window was latticed with iron wire on the outside, to prevent accidents in long journeys. On the fourth side, which had no window, two strong staples were fixed, through which the person that carried me, when I had a mind to be on horseback put in a leathern belt, and buckled it about his waist.  
30 This was always the office of some grave trusty servant in whom I could confide, whether I attended the King and Queen in their progresses, or were disposed to see the gardens, or pay a visit to some great lady or minister of state in the court, when Glumdalclitch happened to be out of order : for I soon began to be known and esteemed

among the greatest officers, I suppose more upon account of their Majesties' favour, than any merit of my own. In journeys, when I was weary of the coach, a servant on horseback would buckle my box, and place it on a cushion before him ; and there I had a full prospect of the country on three sides from my three windows. I had in this closet a field-bed and a hammock hung from the ceiling, two chairs and a table, neatly screwed to the floor, to prevent being tossed about by the agitation of the horse or the coach. And having been long used to sea-voyages, <sup>10</sup> those motions, although sometimes very violent, did not much discompose me.

Whenever I had a mind to see the town, it was always in my travelling-closet, which Glumdalclitch held in her lap in a kind of open sedan, after the fashion of the country, borne by four men, and attended by two others in the Queen's livery. The people who had often heard of me, were very curious to crowd about the sedan, and the girl was complaisant enough to make the bearers stop, and to take me in her hand that I might be more <sup>20</sup> conveniently seen.

I was very desirous to see the chief temple, and particularly the tower belonging to it, which is reckoned the highest in the kingdom. Accordingly one day my nurse carried me thither, but I may truly say I came back disappointed ; for the height is not above three thousand foot, reckoning from the ground to the highest pinnacle top ; which allowing for the difference between the size of those people and us in Europe, is no great matter for admiration, nor at all equal in proportion (if I rightly <sup>30</sup> remember) to Salisbury steeple. But, not to detract from a nation to which during my life I shall acknowledge myself extremely obliged, it must be allowed that whatever this famous tower wants in height is amply

made up in beauty and strength. For the walls are near an hundred foot thick, built of hewn stone, whereof each is about forty foot square, and adorned on all sides with statues of gods and emperors cut in marble larger than the life, placed in their several niches. I measured a little finger which had fallen down from one of these statues, and lay unperceived among some rubbish, and found it exactly four foot and an inch in length. Glumdalclitch wrapped it up in a handkerchief, and carried it  
10 home in her pocket to keep among other trinkets, of which the girl was very fond, as children at her age usually are.

The King's kitchen is indeed a noble building, vaulted at top, and about six hundred foot high. The great oven is not so wide by ten paces as the cupola at St. Paul's : for I measured the latter on purpose after my return. But if I should describe the kitchen-grate, the prodigious pots and kettles, the joints of meat turning on the spits, with many other particulars, perhaps I should be hardly believed ; at least a severe critic would be apt to think  
20 I enlarged a little, as travellers are often suspected to do. To avoid which censure, I fear I have run too much into the other extreme ; and that if this treatise should happen to be translated into the language of Brobdingnag (which is the general name of that kingdom) and transmitted thither, the King and his people would have reason to complain that I had done them an injury by a false and diminutive representation.

His Majesty seldom keeps above six hundred horses in his stables : they are generally from fifty-four to  
30 sixty foot high. But when he goes abroad on solemn days, he is attended for state by a militia guard of five hundred horse, which indeed I thought was the most splendid sight that could be ever beheld, till I saw part of his army in battalia, whereof I shall find another occasion to speak.

## CHAP. V

*Several adventures that happened to the Author. The execution of a criminal. The Author shows his skill in navigation.*

I SHOULD have lived happy enough in that country, if my littleness had not exposed me to several ridiculous and troublesome accidents, some of which I shall venture to relate. Glumdalclitch often carried me into the gardens of the court in my smaller box, and would sometimes take me out of it and hold me in her hand, or set me down to walk. I remember, before the dwarf left the 10 Queen, he followed us one day into those gardens, and my nurse having set me down, he and I being close together, near some dwarf apple-trees, I must needs show my wit by a silly allusion between him and the trees, which happens to hold in their language as it doth in ours. Whereupon, the malicious rogue watching his opportunity, when I was walking under one of them, shook it directly over my head, by which a dozen apples, each of them near as large as a Bristol barrel, came tumbling about my ears ; one of them hit me on the 20 back as I chanced to stoop, and knocked me down flat on my face, but I received no other hurt, and the dwarf was pardoned at my desire, because I had given the provocation.

Another day Glumdalclitch left me on a smooth grass-plot to divert myself while she walked at some distance with her governess. In the meantime there suddenly fell such a violent shower of hail, that I was immediately by the force of it struck to the ground : and when I was down, the hailstones gave me such cruel bangs all over 30 the body, as if I had been pelted with tennis-balls ;

however I made a shift to creep on all four, and shelter myself by lying flat on my face on the lee-side of a border of lemon thyme, but so bruised from head to foot that I could not go abroad in ten days. Neither is this at all to be wondered at, because nature in that country observing the same proportion through all her operations, a hailstone is near eighteen hundred times as large as one in Europe, which I can assert upon experience, having been so curious to weigh and measure them.

- 10 But a more dangerous accident happened to me in the same garden, when my little nurse believing she had put me in a secure place, which I often entreated her to do, that I might enjoy my own thoughts, and having left my box at home to avoid the trouble of carrying it, went to another part of the garden with her governess and some ladies of her acquaintance. While she was absent and out of hearing, a small white spaniel belonging to one of the chief gardeners, having got by accident into the garden, happened to range near the place where I lay.
- 20 The dog following the scent, came directly up, and taking me in his mouth, ran straight to his master, wagging his tail, and set me gently on the ground. By good fortune he had been so well taught, that I was carried between his teeth without the least hurt, or even tearing my clothes. But the poor gardener, who knew me well, and had a great kindness for me, was in a terrible fright. He gently took me up in both his hands, and asked me how I did; but I was so amazed and out of breath, that I could not speak a word. In a few minutes I came to
- 30 myself, and he carried me safe to my little nurse, who by this time had returned to the place where she left me, and was in cruel agonies when I did not appear, nor answer when she called: she severely reprimanded the gardener on account of his dog. But the thing was hushed up, and never known at court; for the girl was



afraid of the Queen's anger, and truly as to myself, I thought it would not be for my reputation that such a story should go about.

This accident absolutely determined Glumdalclitch never to trust me abroad for the future out of her sight. I had been long afraid of this resolution, and therefore concealed from her some little unlucky adventures that happened in those times when I was left by myself. Once a kite hovering over the garden made a stoop at me, and if I had not resolutely drawn my hanger, and run <sup>10</sup> under a thick espalier, he would have certainly carried me away in his talons. Another time walking to the top of a fresh mole-hill, I fell to my neck in the hole through which that animal had cast up the earth, and coined some lie, not worth remembering, to excuse myself for spoiling my clothes. I likewise broke my right shin against the shell of a snail, which I happened to stumble over, as I was walking alone, and thinking on poor England.

I cannot tell whether I were more pleased or mortified, to observe in those solitary walks that the smaller birds <sup>20</sup> did not appear to be at all afraid of me, but would hop about within a yard distance, looking for worms and other food with as much indifference and security as if no creature at all were near them. I remember a thrush had the confidence to snatch out of my hand with his bill a piece of cake that Glumdalclitch had just given me for my breakfast. When I attempted to catch any of these birds, they would boldly turn against me, endeavouring to pick my fingers, which I durst not venture within their reach; and then they would hop <sup>30</sup> back unconcerned to hunt for worms or snails, as they did before. But one day I took a thick cudgel, and threw it with all my strength so luckily at a linnet that I knocked him down, and seizing him by the neck with both my hands, ran with him in triumph to my nurse.

However, the bird, who had only been stunned, recovering himself, gave me so many boxes with his wings on both sides of my head and body, though I held him at arm's length, and was out of the reach of his claws, that I was twenty times thinking to let him go. But I was soon relieved by one of our servants, who wrung off the bird's neck, and I had him next day for dinner, by the Queen's command. This linnet, as near as I can remember, seemed to be somewhat larger than an English swan.

- 10 The Maids of Honour often invited Glumdaleclitch to their apartments, and desired she would bring me along with her, on purpose to have the pleasure of seeing and touching me.

One day a young gentleman, who was nephew to my nurse's governess, came and pressed them both to see an execution. It was of a man who had murdered one of that gentleman's intimate acquaintance. Glumdaleclitch prevailed on to be of the company, very much against her inclination, for she was naturally tender-hearted :  
20 and as for myself, although I abhorred such kind of spectacles, yet my curiosity tempted me to see something that I thought must be extraordinary. The malefactor was fixed in a chair upon a scaffold erected for the purpose, and his head cut off at a blow with a sword of about forty foot long. The veins and arteries spouted up such a prodigious quantity of blood, and so high in the air, that the great *jet d'eau* at Versailles was not equal for the time it lasted ; and the head, when it fell on the scaffold floor, gave such a bounce, as made me start,  
30 although I were at least half an English mile distant.

The Queen, who often used to hear me talk of my sea-voyages, and took all occasions to divert me when I was melancholy, asked me whether I understood how to handle a sail or an oar, and whether a little exercise of rowing might not be convenient for my health.

I answered that I understood both very well. For although my proper employment had been to be surgeon or doctor to the ship, yet often, upon a pinch, I was forced to work like a common mariner. But I could not see how this could be done in their country, where the smallest wherry was equal to a first-rate man of war among us, and such a boat as I could manage would never live in any of their rivers. Her Majesty said, if I would contrive a boat, her own joiner should make it, and she would provide a place for me to sail in. The 10 fellow was an ingenious workman, and by my instructions in ten days finished a pleasure-boat with all its tackling, able conveniently to hold eight Europeans. When it was finished, the Queen was so delighted, that she ran with it in her lap to the King, who ordered it to be put in a cistern full of water, with me in it, by way of trial ; where I could not manage my two sculls, or little oars, for want of room. But the Queen had before contrived another project. She ordered the joiner to make a wooden trough of three hundred foot long, fifty broad, and eight deep ; which 20 being well pitched to prevent leaking, was placed on the floor along the wall, in an outer room of the palace. It had a cock near the bottom to let out the water when it began to grow stale, and two servants could easily fill it in half an hour. Here I often used to row for my own diversion, as well as that of the Queen and her ladies, who thought themselves well entertained with my skill and agility. Sometimes I would put up my sail, and then my business was only to steer, while the ladies gave me a gale with their fans ; and when they were weary, 30 some of the pages would blow my sail forward with their breath, while I showed my art by steering starboard or larboard as I pleased. When I had done, Glumdalclitch always carried my boat into her closet, and hung it on a nail to dry.

In this exercise I once met an accident which had like to have cost me my life. For one of the pages having put my boat into the trough, the governess who attended Glumdalclitch very officiously lifted me up to place me in the boat, but I happened to slip through her fingers, and should have infallibly fallen down forty feet upon the floor, if by the luckiest chance in the world, I had not been stopped by a corking-pin that stuck in the good gentlewoman's stomacher; the head of the pin passed  
10 between my shirt and the waistband of my breeches, and thus I was held by the middle in the air till Glumdalclitch ran to my relief.

Another time, one of the servants, whose office it was to fill my trough every third day with fresh water, was so careless to let a huge frog (not perceiving it) slip out of his pail. The frog lay concealed till I was put into my boat, but then seeing a resting-place, climbed up, and made it lean so much on one side, that I was forced to balance it with all my weight on the other, to prevent  
20 overturning. When the frog was got in, it hopped at once half the length of the boat, and then over my head, backwards and forwards, daubing my face and clothes with its odious slime. The largeness of its features made it appear the most deformed animal that can be conceived. However, I desired Glumdalclitch to let me deal with it alone. I banged it a good while with one of my sculls, and at last forced it to leap out of the boat.

But the greatest danger I ever underwent in that kingdom was from a monkey, who belonged to one of the  
30 clerks of the kitchen. Glumdalclitch had locked me up in her closet, while she went somewhere upon business or a visit. The weather being very warm, the closet window was left open, as well as the windows and the door of my bigger box, in which I usually lived, because of its largeness and conveniency. As I sat quietly meditating at my

table, I heard something bounce in at the closet window, and skip about from one side to the other; whereat, although I was much alarmed, yet I ventured to look out, but stirred not from my seat; and then I saw this frolicsome animal, frisking and leaping up and down, till at last he came to my box, which he seemed to view with great pleasure and curiosity, peeping in at the door and every window. I retreated to the farther corner of my room, or box, but the monkey looking in at every side, put me into such a fright, that I wanted presence of <sup>10</sup> mind to conceal myself under the bed, as I might easily have done. After some time spent in peeping, grinning, and chattering, he at last espied me, and reaching one of his paws in at the door, as a cat does when she plays with a mouse, although I often shifted place to avoid him, he at length seized the lappet of my coat (which being made of that country cloth, was very thick and strong) and dragged me out. He took me up in his right fore-foot, and held me as a nurse does a child she is going to suckle, just as I have seen the same sort of creature do <sup>20</sup> with a kitten in Europe: and when I offered to struggle, he squeezed me so hard, that I thought it more prudent to submit. I have good reason to believe that he took me for a young one of his own species, by his often stroking my face very gently with his other paw. In these diversions he was interrupted by a noise at the closet door, as if somebody were opening it; whereupon he suddenly leaped up to the window at which he had come in, and thence upon the leads and gutters, walking upon three legs, and holding me in the fourth, till he <sup>30</sup> clambered up to a roof that was next to ours. I heard Glumdaleclitch give a shriek at the moment he was carrying me out. The poor girl was almost distracted: that quarter of the palace was all in an uproar; the servants ran for ladders; the monkey was seen by

hundreds in the court, sitting upon the ridge of a building, holding me like a baby in one of his fore-paws, and feeding me with the other, by cramming into my mouth some victuals he had squeezed out of the bag on one side of his chaps, and patting me when I would not eat ; whereat many of the rabble below could not forbear laughing ; neither do I think they justly ought to be blamed, for without question the sight was ridiculous enough to every body but myself. Some of the people threw up  
10 stones, hoping to drive the monkey down ; but this was strictly forbidden, or else very probably my brains had been dashed out.

The ladders were now applied, and mounted by several men, which the monkey observing, and finding himself almost encompassed, not being able to make speed enough with his three legs, let me drop on a ridge tile, and made his escape. Here I sat for some time three hundred yards from the ground, expecting every moment to be blown down by the wind, or to fall by my own giddiness, and  
20 come tumbling over and over from the ridge to the eaves ; but an honest lad, one of my nurse's footmen, climbed up, and putting me into his breeches pocket, brought me down safe.

I was almost choked with the filthy stuff the monkey had crammed down my throat : but my dear little nurse picked it out of my mouth with a small needle, and then I fell a vomiting, which gave me great relief. Yet I was so weak and bruised in the sides with the squeezes given me by this odious animal, that I was forced to keep my  
30 bed a fortnight. The King, Queen, and all the court, sent every day to enquire after my health, and her Majesty made me several visits during my sickness. The monkey was killed, and an order made that no such animal should be kept about the palace.

When I attended the King after my recovery, to return

him thanks for his favours, he was pleased to rally me a good deal upon this adventure. He asked me what my thoughts and speculations were while I lay in the monkey's paw, how I liked the victuals he gave me, his manner of feeding, and whether the fresh air on the roof had sharpened my stomach. He desired to know what I would have done upon such an occasion in my own country. I told his Majesty that in Europe we had no monkeys, except such as were brought for curiosities from other places, and so small that I could deal with a dozen of 10 them together, if they presumed to attack me. And as for that monstrous animal with whom I was so lately engaged, (it was indeed as large as an elephant) if my fears had suffered me to think so far as to make use of my hanger (looking fiercely and clapping my hand upon the hilt as I spoke) when he poked his paw into my chamber, perhaps I should have given him such a wound, as would have made him glad to withdraw it with more haste than he put it in. This I delivered in a firm tone, like a person who was jealous lest his courage should 20 be called in question. However, my speech produced nothing else besides a loud laughter, which all the respect due to his Majesty from those about him could not make them contain. This made me reflect how vain an attempt it is for a man to endeavour doing himself honour among those who are out of all degree of equality or comparison with him. And yet I have seen the moral of my own behaviour very frequent in England since my return, where a little contemptible varlet, without the least title to birth, person, wit, or common sense, shall presume to 30 look with importance, and put himself upon a foot with the greatest persons of the kingdom.

## CHAP. VI

*Several contrivances of the Author to please the King and Queen. He shows his skill in music. The King enquires into the state of Europe, which the Author relates to him. The King's observations thereon.*

I USED to attend the King's levee once or twice a week, and had often seen him under the barber's hand, which indeed was at first very terrible to behold ; for the razor was almost twice as long as an ordinary scythe. His  
10 Majesty, according to the custom of the country, was only shaved twice a week. I once prevailed on the barber to give me some of the suds or lather, out of which I picked forty or fifty of the strongest stumps of hair. I then took a piece of fine wood, and cut it like the back of a comb, making several holes in it at equal distance with as small a needle as I could get from Glumdalelitch. I fixed in the stumps so artificially, scraping and sloping them with my knife toward the points, that I made a very tolerable comb ; which  
20 was a seasonable supply, my own being so much broken in the teeth, that it was almost useless : neither did I know any artist in that country so nice and exact, as would undertake to make me another.

And this puts me in mind of an amusement wherein I spent many of my leisure hours. I desired the Queen's woman to save for me the combings of her Majesty's hair, whereof in time I got a good quantity, and consulting with my friend the cabinet-maker, who had received general orders to do little jobs for me, I directed  
30 him to make two chair-frames, no larger than those I had in my box, and then to bore little holes with a fine awl round those parts where I designed the backs and



seats ; through these holes I wove the strongest hairs I could pick out, just after the manner of cane-chairs in England. When they were finished, I made a present of them to her Majesty, who kept them in her cabinet, and used to show them for curiosities, as indeed they were the wonder of every one that beheld them. The Queen would have had me sit upon one of these chairs, but I absolutely refused to obey her, protesting I would rather die a thousand deaths than place my body on those precious hairs that once adorned her Majesty's 10 head. Of these hairs (as I had always a mechanical genius) I likewise made a neat little purse about five foot long, with her Majesty's name deciphered in gold letters, which I gave to Glumdalclitch, by the Queen's consent. To say the truth, it was more for show than use, being not of strength to bear the weight of the larger coins, and therefore she kept nothing in it but some little toys that girls are fond of.

The King, who delighted in music, had frequent concerts at court, to which I was sometimes carried, 20 and set in my box on a table to hear them ; but the noise was so great, that I could hardly distinguish the tunes. I am confident that all the drums and trumpets of a royal army, beating and sounding together just at your ears, could not equal it. My practice was to have my box removed from the places where the performers sat, as far as I could, then to shut the doors and windows of it, and draw the window curtains ; after which I found their music not disagreeable.

I had learned in my youth to play a little upon the 30 spinet. Glumdalclitch kept one in her chamber, and a master attended twice a week to teach her : I call it a spinet, because it somewhat resembled that instrument, and was played upon in the same manner. A fancy came into my head that I would entertain the King and

Queen with an English tune upon this instrument. But this appeared extremely difficult; for the spinet was near sixty foot long, each key being almost a foot wide, so that, with my arms extended, I could not reach to above five keys, and to press them down required a good smart stroke with my fist, which would be too great a labour, and to no purpose. The method I contrived was this. I prepared two round sticks about the bigness of common cudgels; they were thicker at one end than  
10 the other, and I covered the thicker ends with a piece of a mouse's skin, that by rapping on them I might neither damage the tops of the keys, nor interrupt the sound. Before the spinet a bench was placed, about four foot below the keys, and I was put upon the bench. I ran sideling upon it that way and this, as fast as I could, banging the proper keys with my two sticks, and made a shift to play a jig, to the great satisfaction of both their Majesties: but it was the most violent exercise I ever underwent, and yet I could not strike above  
20 sixteen keys, nor, consequently, play the bass and treble together, as other artists do; which was a great disadvantage to my performance.

The King, who, as I before observed, was a prince of excellent understanding, would frequently order that I should be brought in my box, and set upon the table in his closet. He would then command me to bring one of my chairs out of the box, and sit down within three yards distance upon the top of the cabinet, which brought me almost to a level with his face. In this  
30 manner I had several conversations with him. I one day took the freedom to tell his Majesty, that the contempt he discovered towards Europe, and the rest of the world, did not seem answerable to those excellent qualities of the mind he was master of. That reason did not extend itself with the bulk of the body: on

the contrary, we observed in our country that the tallest persons were usually least provided with it. That among other animals, bees and ants had the reputation of more industry, art and sagacity, than many of the larger kinds. And that, as inconsiderable as he took me to be, I hoped I might live to do his Majesty some signal service. The King heard me with attention, and began to conceive a much better opinion of me than he had ever before. He desired I would give him as exact an account of the government of England as I possibly <sup>10</sup> could ; because, as fond as princes commonly are of their own customs (for so he conjectured of other monarchs, by my former discourses), he should be glad to hear of any thing that might deserve imitation.

Imagine with thyself, courteous reader, how often I then wished for the tongue of Demosthenes or Cicero, that might have enabled me to celebrate the praise of my own dear native country in a style equal to its merits and felicity.

I began my discourse by informing his Majesty that our dominions consisted of two islands, which composed <sup>20</sup> three mighty kingdoms under one sovereign, beside our plantations in America. I dwelt long upon the fertility of our soil, and the temperature of our climate. I then spoke at large upon the constitution of an English Parliament, partly made up of an illustrious body called the House of Peers, persons of the noblest blood, and of the most ancient and ample patrimonies. I described that extraordinary care always taken of their education in arts and arms, to qualify them for being counsellors born to the king and kingdom, to have a share in the <sup>30</sup> legislature, to be members of the highest Court of Judicature, from whence there could be no appeal, and to be champions always ready for the defence of their prince and country, by their valour, conduct, and fidelity. That these were the ornament and bulwark

of the kingdom, worthy followers of their most renowned ancestors, whose honour had been the reward of their virtue, from which their posterity were never once known to degenerate. To these were joined several holy persons, as part of that assembly, under the title of Bishops, whose peculiar business it is to take care of religion, and of those who instruct the people therein. These were searched and sought out through the whole nation, by the prince and his wisest counsellors, among such of the  
10 priesthood as were most deservedly distinguished by the sanctity of their lives, and the depth of their erudition ; who were indeed the spiritual fathers of the clergy and the people.

That the other part of the Parliament consisted of an assembly called the House of Commons, who were all principal gentlemen, freely picked and culled out by the people themselves, for their great abilities and love of their country, to represent the wisdom of the whole nation. And these two bodies make up the most august  
20 assembly in Europe, to whom, in conjunction with the prince, the whole legislature is committed.

I then descended to the Courts of Justice, over which the Judges, those venerable sages and interpreters of the law, presided, for determining the disputed rights and properties of men, as well as for the punishment of vice, and protection of innocence. I mentioned the prudent management of our treasury ; the valour and achievements of our forces by sea and land. I computed the number of our people, by reckoning how many mil-  
30 lions there might be of each religious sect, or political party among us. I did not omit even our sports and pastimes, or any other particular which I thought might redound to the honour of my country. And I finished all with a brief historical account of affairs and events in England for about an hundred years past.

This conversation was not ended under five audiences, each of several hours, and the King heard the whole with great attention, frequently taking notes of what I spoke, as well as memorandums of several questions he intended to ask me.

When I had put an end to these long discourses, his Majesty in a sixth audience, consulting his notes, proposed many doubts, queries, and objections, upon every article. He asked what methods were used to cultivate the minds and bodies of our young nobility, and in what 10 kind of business they commonly spent the first and teachable part of their lives. What course was taken to supply that assembly when any noble family became extinct. What qualifications were necessary in those who were to be created new lords. Whether the humour of the prince, a sum of money to a court lady, or a prime minister, or a design of strengthening a party opposite to the public interest, ever happened to be motives in those advancements. What share of knowledge these lords had in the laws of their country, and how they 20 came by it, so as to enable them to decide the properties of their fellow-subjects in the last resort. Whether they were always so free from avarice, partialities, or want, that a bribe, or some other sinister view, could have no place among them. Whether those holy lords I spoke of were always promoted to that rank upon account of their knowledge in religious matters, and the sanctity of their lives, had never been compliers with the times while they were common priests, or slavish prostitute chaplains to some nobleman, whose opinions 30 they continued servilely to follow after they were admitted into that assembly.

He then desired to know what arts were practised in electing those whom I called commoners: whether a stranger with a strong purse might not influence the

vulgar voters to choose him before their own landlord, or the most considerable gentleman in the neighbourhood. How it came to pass, that people were so violently bent upon getting into this assembly, which I allowed to be a great trouble and expense, often to the ruin of their families, without any salary or pension : because this appeared such an exalted strain of virtue and public spirit, that his Majesty seemed to doubt it might possibly not be always sincere : and he desired  
10 to know whether such zealous gentlemen could have any views of refunding themselves for the charges and trouble they were at, by sacrificing the public good to the designs of a weak and vicious prince in conjunction with a corrupted ministry. He multiplied his questions, and sifted me thoroughly upon every part of this head, proposing numberless enquiries and objections, which I think it not prudent or convenient to repeat.

Upon what I said in relation to our Courts of Justice, his Majesty desired to be satisfied in several points :  
20 and this I was the better able to do, having been formerly almost ruined by a long suit in chancery, which was decreed for me with costs. He asked, what time was usually spent in determining between right and wrong, and what degree of expense. Whether advocates and orators had liberty to plead in causes manifestly known to be unjust, vexatious, or oppressive. Whether party in religion or politics were observed to be of any weight in the scale of justice. Whether those pleading orators were persons educated in the general knowledge  
30 of equity, or only in provincial, national, and other local customs. Whether they or their judges had any part in penning those laws which they assumed the liberty of interpreting and glossing upon at their pleasure. Whether they had ever at different times pleaded for and against the same cause, and cited precedents to

prove contrary opinions. Whether they were a rich or a poor corporation. Whether they received any pecuniary reward for pleading or delivering their opinions. And particularly whether they were ever admitted as members in the lower senate.

He fell next upon the management of our treasury ; and said he thought my memory had failed me, because I computed our taxes at about five or six millions a year, and when I came to mention the issues, he found they sometimes amounted to more than double ; for the <sup>10</sup> notes he had taken were very particular in this point, because he hoped, as he told me, that the knowledge of our conduct might be useful to him, and he could not be deceived in his calculations. But, if what I told him were true, he was still at a loss how a kingdom could run out of its estate like a private person. He asked me, who were our creditors ; and where we should find money to pay them. He wondered to hear me talk of such chargeable and extensive wars ; that certainly we must be a quarrelsome people, or live among very bad <sup>20</sup> neighbours, and that our generals must needs be richer than our kings. He asked what business we had out of our own islands, unless upon the score of trade or treaty, or to defend the coasts with our fleet. Above all, he was amazed to hear me talk of a mercenary standing army in the midst of peace, and among a free people. He said, if we were governed by our own consent in the persons of our representatives, he could not imagine of whom we were afraid, or against whom we were to fight ; and would hear my opinion, whether a private man's <sup>30</sup> house might not better be defended by himself, his children, and family, than by half a dozen rascals picked up at a venture in the streets, for small wages, who might get an hundred times more by cutting their throats.

He laughed at my odd kind of arithmetic (as he was

pleased to call it) in reckoning the numbers of our people by a computation drawn from the several sects among us in religion and politics. He said, he knew no reason, why those who entertain opinions prejudicial to the public, should be obliged to change, or should not be obliged to conceal them. And as it was tyranny in any government to require the first, so it was weakness not to enforce the second : for a man may be allowed to keep poisons in his closet, but not to vend them about  
10 for cordials.

He observed that among the diversions of our nobility and gentry I had mentioned gaming. He desired to know at what age this entertainment was usually taken up, and when it was laid down ; how much of their time it employed ; whether it ever went so high as to affect their fortunes ; whether mean vicious people, by their dexterity in that art, might not arrive at great riches, and sometimes keep our very nobles in dependence, as well as habituate them to vile companions, wholly take  
20 them from the improvement of their minds, and force them, by the losses they have received, to learn and practise that infamous dexterity upon others.

He was perfectly astonished with the historical account I gave him of our affairs during the last century, protesting it was only an heap of conspiracies, rebellions, murders, massacres, revolutions, banishments, the very worst effects that avarice, faction, hypocrisy, perfidiousness, cruelty, rage, madness, hatred, envy, lust, malice or ambition could produce.

30 His Majesty in another audience was at the pains to recapitulate the sum of all I had spoken, compared the questions he made with the answers I had given, then taking me into his hands, and stroking me gently, delivered himself in these words, which I shall never forget nor the manner he spoke them in : My little



friend Grildrig, you have made a most admirable panegyric upon your country ; you have clearly proved that ignorance, idleness, and vice, may be sometimes the only ingredients for qualifying a legislator ; that laws are best explained, interpreted, and applied by those whose interest and abilities lie in perverting, confounding, and eluding them. I observe among you some lines of an institution, which in its original might have been tolerable, but these half erased, and the rest wholly blurred and blotted by corruptions. It doth 10 not appear from all you have said, how any one virtue is required towards the procurement of any one station among you ; much less that men are ennobled on account of their virtue, that priests are advanced for their piety or learning, soldiers for their conduct or valour, judges for their integrity, senators for the love of their country, or counsellors for their wisdom. As for yourself (continued the King) who have spent the greatest part of your life in travelling, I am well disposed to hope you may hitherto have escaped many vices of your country. 20 But by what I have gathered from your own relation, and the answers I have with much pains wringed and extorted from you, I cannot but conclude the bulk of your natives to be the most pernicious race of little odious vermin that nature ever suffered to crawl upon the surface of the earth.

## CHAP. VII

*The Author's love of his country. He makes a proposal of much advantage to the King, which is rejected. The King's great ignorance in politics. The learning of that country very imperfect and confined. Their laws, and military affairs, and parties in the State.*

NOTHING but an extreme love of truth could have hindered me from concealing this part of my story. It was in vain to discover my resentments, which were always turned into ridicule ; and I was forced to rest  
10 with patience while my noble and most beloved country was so injuriously treated. I am heartily sorry as any of my readers can possibly be, that such an occasion was given : but this prince happened to be so curious and inquisitive upon every particular, that it could not consist either with gratitude or good manners to refuse giving him what satisfaction I was able. Yet thus much I may be allowed to say in my own vindication, that I artfully eluded many of his questions, and gave to every point a more favourable turn by many degrees  
20 than the strictness of truth would allow. For I have always borne that laudable partiality to my own country, which Dionysius Halicarnassensis with so much justice recommends to an historian. I would hide the frailties and deformities of my political mother, and place her virtues and beauties in the most advantageous light. This was my sincere endeavour in those many discourses I had with that mighty monarch, although it unfortunately failed of success.

But great allowances should be given to a King who  
30 lives wholly secluded from the rest of the world, and must therefore be altogether unacquainted with the manners and customs that most prevail in other nations ;

the want of which knowledge will ever produce many prejudices, and a certain narrowness of thinking, from which we and the politer countries of Europe are wholly exempted. And it would be hard indeed, if so remote a prince's notions of virtue and vice were to be offered as a standard for all mankind.

To confirm what I have now said, and further, to show the miserable effects of a confined education, I shall here insert a passage which will hardly obtain belief. In hopes to ingratiate myself farther into his Majesty's favour, <sup>10</sup> I told him of an invention discovered between three and four hundred years ago, to make a certain powder, into an heap of which the smallest spark of fire falling, would kindle the whole in a moment, although it were as big as a mountain, and make it all fly up in the air together, with a noise and agitation greater than thunder. That a proper quantity of this powder rammed into an hollow tube of brass or iron, according to its bigness, would drive a ball of iron or lead with such violence and speed, as nothing was able to sustain its force. That the largest <sup>20</sup> balls thus discharged, would not only destroy whole ranks of an army at once, but batter the strongest walls to the ground, sink down ships, with a thousand men in each, to the bottom of the sea ; and, when linked together by a chain, would cut through masts and rigging, divide hundreds of bodies in the middle, and lay all waste before them. That we often put this powder into large hollow balls of iron, and discharged them by an engine into some city we were besieging, which would rip <sup>30</sup> up the pavements, tear the houses to pieces, burst and throw splinters on every side, dashing out the brains of all who came near. That I knew the ingredients very well, which were cheap, and common ; I understood the manner of compounding them, and could direct his workmen how to make those tubes of a size proportionable

to all other things in his Majesty's kingdom, and the largest need not be above an hundred foot long ; twenty or thirty of which tubes, charged with the proper quantity of powder and balls, would batter down the walls of the strongest town in his dominions in a few hours, or destroy the whole metropolis, if ever it should pretend to dispute his absolute commands. This I humbly offered to his Majesty, as a small tribute of acknowledgment in return of so many marks that I had received of his royal favour  
10 and protection.

The King was struck with horror at the description I had given of those terrible engines, and the proposal I had made. He was amazed how so impotent and grovelling an insect as I (these were his expressions) could entertain such inhuman ideas, and in so familiar a manner as to appear wholly unmoved at all the scenes of blood and desolation, which I had painted as the common effects of those destructive machines, whereof he said some evil genius, enemy to mankind, must have  
20 been the first contriver. As for himself, he protested that although few things delighted him so much as new discoveries in art or in nature, yet he would rather lose half his kingdom than be privy to such a secret, which he commanded me, as I valued my life, never to mention any more.

A strange effect of narrow principles and short views ; that a prince possessed of every quality which procures veneration, love, and esteem ; of strong parts, great wisdom, and profound learning, endued with admirable  
30 talents for government, and almost adored by his subjects, should from a nice unnecessary scruple, whereof in Europe we can have no conception, let slip an opportunity put into his hands, that would have made him absolute master of the lives, the liberties, and the fortunes of his people. Neither do I say this

with the least intention to detract from the many virtues of that excellent King, whose character I am sensible will on this account be very much lessened in the opinion of an English reader : but I take this defect among them to have risen from their ignorance, they not having hitherto reduced politics into a science, as the more acute wits of Europe have done. For I remember very well, in a discourse one day with the King, when I happened to say there were several thousand books among us written upon the art of government, it gave him (directly 10 contrary to my intention) a very mean opinion of our understandings. He professed both to abominate and despise all mystery, refinement, and intrigue, either in a prince or a minister. He could not tell what I meant by secrets of state, where an enemy or some rival nation were not in the case. He confined the knowledge of governing within very narrow bounds; to common sense and reason, to justice and lenity, to the speedy determination of civil and criminal causes; with some other obvious topics, which are not worth considering. 20 And he gave it for his opinion, that whoever could make two ears of corn or two blades of grass to grow upon a spot of ground where only one grew before, would deserve better of mankind, and do more essential service to his country than the whole race of politicians put together.

The learning of this people is very defective, consisting only in morality, history, poetry, and mathematics, wherein they must be allowed to excel. But the last of these is wholly applied to what may be useful in life, 30 to the improvement of agriculture, and all mechanical arts; so that among us it would be little esteemed. And as to ideas, entities, abstractions, and transcendentals, I could never drive the least conception into their heads.

No law of that country must exceed in words the

number of letters in their alphabet, which consists only in two and twenty. But indeed few of them extend even to that length. They are expressed in the most plain and simple terms, wherein those people are not mercurial enough to discover above one interpretation ; and to write a comment upon any law is a capital crime. As to the decision of civil causes, or proceedings against criminals, their precedents are so few, that they have little reason to boast of any extraordinary skill in either.

10 They have had the art of printing, as well as the Chinese, time out of mind. But their libraries are not very large ; for that of the King's, which is reckoned the biggest, doth not amount to above a thousand volumes, placed in a gallery of twelve hundred foot long, from whence I had liberty to borrow what books I pleased. The Queen's joiner had contrived in one of Glumdalelitch's rooms a kind of wooden machine five and twenty foot high, formed like a standing ladder ; the steps were each fifty foot long. It was indeed a moveable pair of stairs,  
20 the lowest end placed at ten foot distance from the wall of the chamber. The book I had a mind to read was put up leaning against the wall. I first mounted to the upper step of the ladder, and turning my face towards the book, began at the top of the page, and so walking to the right and left about eight or ten paces, according to the length of the lines, till I had gotten a little below the level of my eyes, and then descending gradually till I came to the bottom ; after which I mounted again, and began the other page in the same manner, and so  
30 turned over the leaf, which I could easily do with both my hands, for it was as thick and stiff as a pasteboard, and in the largest folios not above eighteen or twenty foot long.

Their style is clear, masculine, and smooth, but not florid, for they avoid nothing more than multiplying

unnecessary words, or using various expressions. I have perused many of their books, especially those in history and morality. Among the rest, I was much diverted with a little old treatise, which always lay in Glumdalelitch's bed-chamber, and belonged to her governess, a grave elderly gentlewoman, who dealt in writings of morality and devotion. The book treats of the weakness of human kind, and is in little esteem, except among the women and the vulgar. However, I was curious to see what an author of that country could say upon such a subject. 10 This writer went through all the usual topics of European moralists, showing how diminutive, contemptible, and helpless an animal was man in his own nature ; how unable to defend himself from the inclemencies of the air, or the fury of wild beasts ; how much he was excelled by one creature in strength, by another in speed, by a third in foresight, by a fourth in industry. He added, that nature was degenerated in these latter declining ages of the world, and could now produce only small abortive births in comparison of those in ancient times. He said, 20 it was very reasonable to think, not only that the species of men were originally much larger, but also, that there must have been giants in former ages, which, as it is asserted by history and tradition, so it hath been confirmed by huge bones and skulls casually dug up in several parts of the kingdom, far exceeding the common dwindled race of man in our days. He argued, that the very laws of nature absolutely required we should have been made in the beginning, of a size more large and robust, not so liable to destruction from every little 30 accident of a tile falling from a house, or a stone cast from the hand of a boy, or of being drowned in a little brook. From this way of reasoning the author drew several moral applications useful in the conduct of life, but needless here to repeat. For my own part, I could

not avoid reflecting how universally this talent was spread, of drawing lectures in morality, or indeed rather matter of discontent and repining, from the quarters we raise with nature. And I believe, upon a strict enquiry, those quarrels might be shown as all grounded among us as they are among that people.

As to their military affairs, they boast that the King's army consists of an hundred and seventy six thousand foot, and thirty-two thousand horse if that may be called  
10 an army which is made up of tradesmen in the several cities, and farmers in the country, whose commanders are only the nobility and gentry, without pay or reward. They are indeed perfect enough in their exercises, and under very good discipline, where in I saw no great merit, for how should it be otherwise, where every farmer is under the command of his own landlord, and every citizen under that of the principal men in his own city, chosen after the manner of Venice by ballot?

I have often seen the militia of Lorbrulgrud drawn  
20 out to exercise in a great field near the city of twenty miles square. They were in all not above twenty five thousand foot, and six thousand horse, but it was impossible for me to compute their number, considering the space of ground they took up. A cavalier mounted on a large steed, might be about an hundred foot high. I have seen this whole body of horse, upon a word of command, draw their swords at once, and brandish them in the air. Imagination can figure nothing so grand, so surprising, and so astonishing. It looked as if  
30 ten thousand flashes of lightning were darting at the same time from every quarter of the sky.

I was curious to know how this prince, to whose dominions there is no access from any other country, came to think of armies, or to teach his people the practice of military discipline. But I was soon informed,



both by conversation and reading their histories. For in the course of many ages they have been troubled with the same disease to which the whole race of mankind is subject; the nobility often contending for power, the people for liberty, and the King for absolute dominion. All which, however happily tempered by the laws of the kingdom, have been sometimes violated by each of the three parties, and have once or more occasioned civil wars, the last whereof was happily put an end to by this prince's grandfather by a general composition; and the 10 militia, then settled with common consent, hath been ever since kept in the strictest duty.

8 Faulkner's and later editions read, 'more than once'.

## CHAP. VIII

*The King and Queen make a progress to the frontiers. The Author attends them. The manner in which he leaves the country very particularly related. He returns to England.*

I HAD always a strong impulse that I should some time recover my liberty, though it was impossible to conjecture by what means, or to form any project with the least hope of succeeding. The ship in which I sailed was the first ever known to be driven within sight of  
10 that coast, and the King had given strict orders, that if at any time another appeared, it should be taken ashore, and with all its crew and passengers brought in a tumbril to Lorbrulgrud. He was strongly bent to get me a woman of my own size, by whom I might propagate the breed : but I think I should rather have died than undergone the disgrace of leaving a posterity to be kept in cages like tame canary birds, and perhaps, in time, sold about the kingdom to persons of quality for curiosities. I was, indeed, treated with much kind-  
20 ness ; I was the favourite of a great King and Queen, and the delight of the whole court, but it was upon such a foot as ill became the dignity of human kind. I could never forget those domestic pledges I had left behind me. I wanted to be among people with whom I could converse upon even terms, and walk about the streets and fields without fear of being trod to death like a frog or a young puppy. But my deliverance came sooner than I expected, and in a manner not very common ; the whole story and circumstances of which I shall  
30 faithfully relate.

I had now been two years in this country ; and about

the beginning of the third, Glumdalclitch and I attended the King and Queen in a progress to the south coast of the kingdom. I was carried, as usual, in my travelling-box, which, as I have already described, was a very convenient closet of twelve foot wide. And I had ordered a hammock to be fixed by silken ropes from the four corners at the top, to break the jolts, when a servant carried me before him on horseback, as I sometimes desired, and would often sleep in my hammock while we were upon the road. On the roof of my closet, just 10 over the middle of the hammock, I ordered the joiner to cut out a hole of a foot square, to give me air in hot weather as I slept, which hole I shut at pleasure with a board that drew backwards and forwards through a groove.

When we came to our journey's end, the King thought proper to pass a few days at a palace he hath near Flanflasnio, a city within eighteen English miles of the sea-side. Glumdalclitch and I were much fatigued; I had gotten a small cold, but the poor girl was so ill as to be 20 confined to her chamber. I longed to see the ocean, which must be the only scene of my escape, if ever it should happen. I pretended to be worse than I really was, and desired leave to take the fresh air of the sea, with a page whom I was very fond of, and who had sometimes been trusted with me. I shall never forget with what unwillingness Glumdalclitch consented, nor the strict charge she gave the page to be careful of me, bursting at the same time into a flood of tears, as if she had some foreboding of what was to happen. The 30 boy took me out in my box about half an hour's walk from the palace, towards the rocks on the sea-shore. I ordered him to set me down, and lifting up one of my sashes, cast many a wistful melancholy look towards the sea. I found myself not very well, and told the

page that I had a mind to take a nap in my hammock, which I hoped would do me good. I got in, and the boy shut the window close down to keep out the cold. I soon fell asleep, and all I can conjecture is, that while I slept, the page, thinking no danger could happen, went among the rocks to look for birds' eggs, having before observed him from my window searching about, and picking up one or two in the clefts. Be that as it will, I found myself suddenly awaked with a violent pull  
10 upon the ring which was fastened at the top of my box for the conveniency of carriage. I felt my box raised very high in the air, and then borne forward with prodigious speed. The first jolt had like to have shaken me out of my hammock, but afterwards the motion was easy enough. I called out several times as loud as I could raise my voice, but all to no purpose. I looked towards my windows, and could see nothing but the clouds and sky. I heard a noise just over my head like the clapping of wings, and then began to perceive the  
20 woful condition I was in ; that some eagle had got the ring of my box in his beak, with an intent to let it fall on a rock like a tortoise in a shell, and then pick out my body, and devour it. For the sagacity and smell of this bird enable him to discover his quarry at a great distance, though better concealed than I could be within a two-inch board.

In a little time I observed the noise and flutter of wings to increase very fast, and my box was tossed up and down, like a sign-post in a windy day. I heard  
30 several bangs or buffets, as I thought, given to the eagle (for such I am certain it must have been that held the ring of my box in his beak), and then all on a sudden felt myself falling perpendicularly down for above a minute, but with such incredible swiftness that I almost lost my breath. My fall was stopped by a terrible squash.

that sounded louder to my ears than the cataract of Niagara ; after which I was quite in the dark for another minute, and then my box began to rise so high that I could see light from the tops of my windows. I now perceived that I was fallen into the sea. My box, by the weight of my body, the goods that were in, and the broad plates of iron fixed for strength at the four corners of the top and bottom, floated about five foot deep in water. I did then, and do now suppose that the eagle which flew away with my box was pursued by two or <sup>10</sup> three others, and forced to let me drop while he was defending himself against the rest, who hoped to share in the prey. The plates of iron fastened at the bottom of the box (for those were the strongest) preserved the balance while it fell, and hindered it from being broken on the surface of the water. Every joint of it was well grooved, and the door did not move on hinges, but up and down like a sash, which kept my closet so tight that very little water came in. I got with much difficulty out of my hammock, having first ventured to draw back <sup>20</sup> the slip-board on the roof already mentioned, contrived on purpose to let in air, for want of which I found myself almost stifled.

How often did I then wish myself with my dear Glumdalclitch, from whom one single hour had so far divided me ! And I may say with truth, that in the midst of my own misfortunes I could not forbear lamenting my poor nurse, the grief she would suffer for my loss, the displeasure of the Queen, and the ruin of her fortune. Perhaps many travellers have not been under greater <sup>30</sup> difficulties and distress than I was at this juncture, expecting every moment to see my box dashed in pieces, or at least upset by the first violent blast, or a rising wave. A breach in one single pane of glass would have been immediate death : nor could any thing have pre-

served the windows, but the strong lattice wires placed on the outside against accidents in travelling. I saw the water ooze in at several crannies, although the leaks were not considerable, and I endeavoured to stop them as well as I could. I was not able to lift up the roof of my closet, which otherwise I certainly should have done, and sat on the top of it, where I might at least preserve myself some hours longer than by being shut up, as I may call it, in the hold. Or, if I escaped these  
10 dangers for a day or two, what could I expect but a miserable death of cold and hunger ! I was four hours under these circumstances, expecting and indeed wishing every moment to be my last.

I have already told the reader that there were two strong staples fixed upon that side of my box which had no window, and into which the servant who used to carry me on horseback would put a leathern belt, and buckle it about his waist. Being in this disconsolate state, I heard or at least thought I heard some kind of  
20 grating noise on that side of my box where the staples were fixed, and soon after I began to fancy that the box was pulled or towed along in the sea ; for I now and then felt a sort of tugging, which made the waves rise near the tops of my windows, leaving me almost in the dark. This gave me some faint hopes of relief, although I was not able to imagine how it could be brought about. I ventured to unscrew one of my chairs, which were always fastened to the floor ; and having made a hard shift to screw it down again directly  
30 under the slipping-board that I had lately opened, I mounted on the chair, and putting my mouth as near as I could to the hole, I called for help in a loud voice, and in all the languages I understood. I then fastened my handkerchief to a stick I usually carried, and thrusting it up the hole, waved it several times in the air.

that if any boat or ship were near, the seamen might conjecture some unhappy mortal to be shut up in the box.

I found no effect from all I could do, but plainly perceived my closet to be moved along ; and in the space of an hour, or better, that side of the box where the staples were, and had no window, struck against something that was hard. I apprehended it to be a rock, and found myself tossed more than ever. I plainly heard a noise upon the cover of my closet, like that of <sup>10</sup> a cable, and the grating of it as it passed through the ring. I then found myself hoisted up by degrees at least three foot higher than I was before. Whereupon I again thrust up my stick and handkerchief, calling for help till I was almost hoarse. In return to which, I heard a great shout repeated three times, giving me such transports of joy, as are not to be conceived but by those who feel them. I now heard a trampling over my head, and somebody calling through the hole with a loud voice in the English tongue : If there be any <sup>20</sup> body below, let them speak. I answered, I was an Englishman, drawn by ill fortune into the greatest calamity that ever any creature underwent, and begged, by all that is moving, to be delivered out of the dungeon I was in. The voice replied, I was safe, for my box was fastened to their ship ; and the carpenter should immediately come and saw an hole in the cover, large enough to pull me out. I answered, that was needless and would take up too much time, for there was no more to be done, but let one of the crew put his finger into the <sup>30</sup> ring, and take the box out of the sea into the ship, and so into the captain's cabin. Some of them upon hearing me talk so wildly thought I was mad ; others laughed ; for indeed it never came into my head that I was now got among people of my own stature and strength.

The carpenter came, and in a few minutes sawed a passage about four foot square, then let down a small ladder, upon which I mounted, and from thence was taken into the ship in a very weak condition.

The sailors were all in amazement, and asked me a thousand questions, which I had no inclination to answer. I was equally confounded at the sight of so many pigmies, for such I took them to be, after having so long accustomed my eyes to the monstrous objects  
10 I had left. But the Captain, Mr. Thomas Wilcocks, an honest worthy Shropshire man, observing I was ready to faint, took me into his cabin, gave me a cordial to comfort me, and made me turn in upon his own bed, advising me to take a little rest, of which I had great need. Before I went to sleep I gave him to understand that I had some valuable furniture in my box, too good to be lost, a fine hammock, an handsome field-bed, two chairs, a table, and a cabinet ; that my closet was  
20 hung on all sides, or rather quilted, with silk and cotton ; that if he would let one of the crew bring my closet into his cabin, I would open it there before him, and show him my goods. The Captain hearing me utter these absurdities, concluded I was raving : however, (I suppose to pacify me) he promised to give order as I desired, and going upon deck sent some of his men down into my closet, from whence (as I afterwards found) they drew up all my goods, and stripped off the quilting ; but the chairs, cabinet, and bedstead, being screwed to the floor, were much damaged by the ignorance of  
30 the seamen, who tore them up by force. Then they knocked off some of the boards for the use of the ship, and when they had got all they had a mind for, let the hull drop into the sea, which by reason of many breaches made in the bottom and sides, sunk to rights. And indeed I was glad not to have been a spectator of the



havoc they made ; because I am confident it would have sensibly touched me, by bringing former passages into my mind, which I had rather forget.

I slept some hours, but perpetually disturbed with dreams of the place I had left, and the dangers I had escaped. However, upon waking I found myself much recovered. It was now about eight o'clock at night, and the Captain ordered supper immediately, thinking I had already fasted too long. He entertained me with great kindness, observing me not to look wildly, or talk <sup>10</sup> inconsistently : and when we were left alone, desired I would give him a relation of my travels, and by what accident I came to be set adrift in that monstrous wooden chest. He said, that about twelve o'clock at noon, as he was looking through his glass, he spied it at a distance, and thought it was a sail, which he had a mind to make, being not much out of his course, in hopes of buying some biscuit, his own beginning to fall short. That upon coming nearer, and finding his error, he sent out his long-boat to discover what I was ; that <sup>20</sup> his men came back in a fright, swearing they had seen a swimming house. That he laughed at their folly, and went himself in the boat, ordering his men to take a strong cable along with them. That the weather being calm, he rowed round me several times, observed my windows, and the wire lattices that defended them. That he discovered two staples upon one side, which was all of boards, without any passage for light. He then commanded his men to row up to that side, and fastening a cable to one of the staples, ordered them to <sup>30</sup> tow my chest (as he called it) towards the ship. When it was there, he gave directions to fasten another cable to the ring fixed in the cover, and to raise up my chest with pulleys, which all the sailors were not able to do above two or three foot. He said they saw my stick

and handkerchief thrust out of the hole, and concluded that some unhappy men must be shut up in the cavity. I asked whether he or the crew had seen any prodigious birds in the air about the time he first discovered me. To which he answered, that discoursing this matter with the sailors while I was asleep, one of them said he had observed three eagles flying towards the north, but remarked nothing of their being larger than the usual size, which I suppose must be imputed to the great height  
10 they were at; and he could not guess the reason of my question. I then asked the Captain how far he reckoned we might be from land; he said, by the best computation he could make, we were at least an hundred leagues. I assured him, that he must be mistaken by almost half, for I had not left the country from whence I came above two hours before I dropt into the sea. Whereupon he began again to think that my brain was disturbed, of which he gave me a hint, and advised me to go to bed in a cabin he had provided. I assured him I was well  
20 refreshed with his good entertainment and company, and as much in my senses as ever I was in my life. He then grew serious, and desired to ask me freely whether I were not troubled in mind by the consciousness of some enormous crime, for which I was punished at the command of some prince, by exposing me in that chest, as great criminals in other countries have been forced to sea in a leaky vessel without provisions; for although he should be sorry to have taken so ill a man into his ship, yet he would engage his word to set me safe on  
30 shore in the first port where we arrived. He added, that his suspicions were much increased by some very absurd speeches I had delivered at first to the sailors, and afterwards to himself, in relation to my closet or chest, as well as by my odd looks and behaviour while I was at supper.

I begged his patience to hear me tell my story, which I faithfully did from the last time I left England to the moment he first discovered me. And as truth always forceth its way into rational minds, so this honest worthy gentleman, who had some tincture of learning, and very good sense, was immediately convinced of my candour and veracity. But further to confirm all I had said, I entreated him to give order that my cabinet should be brought, of which I had the key in my pocket (for he had already informed me how the seamen disposed of my closet), I opened it in his presence and showed him the small collection of rarities I made in the country from whence I had been so strangely delivered. There was the comb I had contrived out of the stumps of the King's beard, and another of the same materials, but fixed into a paring of her Majesty's thumb-nail, which served for the back. There was a collection of needles and pins from a foot to half a yard long ; four wasp-stings, like joiners' tacks ; some combings of the Queen's hair ; a gold ring which one day she made me a present of in a most obliging manner, taking it from her little finger, and throwing it over my head like a collar. I desired the Captain would please to accept this ring in return of his civilities, which he absolutely refused. I showed him a corn that I had cut off with my own hand, from a maid of honour's too ; it was about the bigness of a Kentish pippin, and grown so hard that when I returned to England, I got it hollowed into a cup, and set in silver. Lastly, I desired him to see the breeches I had then on, which were made of a mouse's skin. 10 20 30

I could force nothing on him but a footman's tooth, which I observed him to examine with great curiosity, and found he had a fancy for it. He received it with abundance of thanks, more than such a trifle could

deserve. It was drawn by an unskilful surgeon, in a mistake, from one of Glumdalclitch's men, who was afflicted with the tooth-ache, but it was as sound as any in his head. I got it cleaned, and put it into my cabinet. It was about a foot long, and four inches in diameter.

The Captain was very well satisfied with this plain relation I had given him, and said he hoped when we returned to England I would oblige the world by putting  
10 it in paper and making it public. My answer was that I thought we were already overstocked with books of travels; that nothing could now pass which was not extraordinary; wherein I doubted some authors less consulted truth than their own vanity, or interest, or the diversion of ignorant readers. That my story could contain little besides common events, without those ornamental descriptions of strange plants, trees, birds, and other animals, or of the barbarous customs and idolatry of savage people, with which most writers  
20 abound. However, I thanked him for his good opinion, and promised to take the matter into my thoughts.

He said he wondered at one thing very much, which was, to hear me speak so loud, asking me whether the King or Queen of that country were thick of hearing. I told him it was what I had been used to for above two years past, and that I admired as much at the voices of him and his men, who seemed to me only to whisper, and yet I could hear them well enough. But when I spoke in that country, it was like a man talking in the  
30 street to another looking out from the top of a steeple, unless when I was placed on a table, or held in any person's hand. I told him, I had likewise observed another thing, that when I first got into the ship, and the sailors stood all about me, I thought they were the most little contemptible creatures I had ever beheld.

For indeed while I was in that prince's country, I could never endure to look in a glass after my eyes had been accustomed to such prodigious objects, because the comparison gave me so despicable a conceit of myself. The Captain said that while we were at supper he observed me to look at every thing with a sort of wonder, and that I often seemed hardly able to contain my laughter, which he knew not well how to take, but imputed it to some disorder in my brain. I answered, it was very true ; and I wondered how I could forbear, <sup>10</sup> when I saw his dishes of the size of a silver three-pence, a leg of pork hardly a mouthful, a cup not so big as a nut-shell ; and so I went on, describing the rest of his household-stuff and provisions after the same manner. For, although the Queen had ordered a little equipage of all things necessary for me while I was in her service, yet my ideas were wholly taken up with what I saw on every side of me, and I winked at my own littleness as people do at their own faults. The Captain understood my raillery very well, and merrily replied with the old <sup>20</sup> English proverb, that he doubted my eyes were bigger than my belly, for he did not observe my stomach so good, although I had fasted all day ; and continuing in his mirth, protested he would have gladly given an hundred pounds to have seen my closet in the eagle's bill, and afterwards in its fall from so great an height into the sea ; which would certainly have been a most astonishing object, worthy to have the description of it transmitted to future ages : and the comparison of Phaeton was so obvious, that he could not forbear <sup>30</sup> applying it, although I did not much admire the conceit.

The Captain having been at Tonquin, was in his return to England driven north-eastward to the latitude of 44 degrees, and of longitude 143. But meeting a trade-wind two days after I came on board him, we

sailed southward a long time, and coasting New Holland kept our course west-south-west, and then south-south-west till we doubled the Cape of Good Hope. Our voyage was very prosperous, but I shall not trouble the reader with a journal of it. The Captain called in at one or two ports, and sent in his long-boat for provisions and fresh water, but I never went out of the ship till we came into the Downs, which was on the third day of June, 1706, about nine months after my escape.

10 I offered to leave my goods in security for payment of my freight ; but the Captain protested he would not receive one farthing. We took kind leave of each other, and I made him promise he would come to see me at my house in Redriff. I hired a horse and guide for five shillings, which I borrowed of the Captain.

As I was on the road, observing the littleness of the houses, the trees, the cattle, and the people, I began to think myself in Lilliput. I was afraid of trampling on every traveller I met, and often called aloud to have

20 them stand out of the way, so that I had like to have gotten one or two broken heads for my impertinence.

When I came to my own house, for which I was forced to enquire, one of the servants opening the door, I bent down to go in (like a goose under a gate) for fear of striking my head. My wife ran out to embrace me, but I stooped lower than her knees, thinking she could otherwise never be able to reach my mouth. My daughter kneeled to ask my blessing, but I could not see her till she arose, having been so long used to stand with my

30 head and eyes erect to above sixty foot ; and then I went to take her up with one hand, by the waist. I looked down upon the servants and one or two friends who were in the house, as if they had been pigmies, and I a giant. I told my wife, she had been too thrifty, for I found she had starved herself and her daughter to

nothing. In short, I behaved myself so unaccountably, that they were all of the Captain's opinion when he first saw me, and concluded I had lost my wits. This I mention as an instance of the great power of habit and prejudice.

In a little time I and my family and friends came to a right understanding : but my wife protested I should never go to sea any more ; although my evil destiny so ordered that she had not power to hinder me, as the reader may know hereafter. In the mean time I here <sup>10</sup> conclude the second part of my unfortunate voyages.

*The End of the Second Part.*

# TRAVELS

INTO SEVERAL

Remote Nations

OF THE

# WORLD.

---

*By* Captain LEMUEL GULLIVER.

---

PART III.

A VOYAGE TO LAPUTA, BALNIBARBI,  
GLUBBDUBDRIB, LUGGNAGG and  
JAPAN.

PART IV.

A VOYAGE to the HOUYHNHNMS.

---

VOL. II.

---

The SECOND EDITION, Corrected.

---

L O N D O N :

Printed for BENJAMIN MOTTE, at the *Middle-  
Temple-Gate.* MDCCXXVII.





## PART III

### A VOYAGE TO LAPUTA, BALNIBARBI, LUGGNAGG, GLUBBDUBDRIB, AND JAPAN

#### CHAP. I

*The Author sets out on his third voyage, is taken by pirates. The malice of a Dutchman. His arrival at an island. He is received into Laputa.*

I HAD not been at home above ten days, when Captain William Robinson, a Cornish man, Commander of the  
10 *Hope-well*, a stout ship of three hundred tons, came to my house. I had formerly been surgeon of another ship where he was master, and a fourth part owner, in a voyage to the Levant ; he had always treated me more like a brother than an inferior officer, and hearing of my arrival made me a visit, as I apprehended only out of friendship, for nothing passed more than what is usual after long absences. But repeating his visits often, expressing his joy to find me in good health, asking whether I were now settled for life, adding that he  
20 intended a voyage to the East Indies in two months ; at last he plainly invited me, though with some apologies, to be surgeon of the ship ; that I should have another surgeon under me besides our two mates ; that my salary should be double to the usual pay ; and that having experienced my knowledge in sea-affairs to be at least equal to his, he would enter into any engagement to follow my advice, as much as if I had share in the command.

He said so many other obliging things, and I knew

him to be so honest a man, that I could not reject his proposal ; the thirst I had of seeing the world, notwithstanding my past misfortunes, continuing as violent as ever. The only difficulty that remained, was to persuade my wife, whose consent however I at last obtained by the prospect of advantage she proposed to her children.

We set out the 5th of August, 1706, and arrived at Fort St. George the 11th of April, 1707. We stayed there three weeks to refresh our crew, many of whom were sick. 10 From thence we went to Tonquin, where the Captain resolved to continue some time, because many of the goods he intended to buy were not ready, nor could he expect to be dispatched in some months. Therefore in hopes to defray some of the charges he must be at, he bought a sloop, loaded it with several sorts of goods, wherewith the Tonquinese usually trade to the neighbouring islands, and putting fourteen men on board, whereof three were of the country, he appointed me master of the sloop, and gave me power to traffic for two 20 months, while he transacted his affairs at Tonquin.

We had not sailed above three days, when a great storm arising, we were driven five days to the north-north-east, and then to the east ; after which we had fair weather, but still with a pretty strong gale from the west. Upon the tenth day we were chased by two pirates, who soon overtook us ; for my sloop was so deep loaden, that she sailed very slow, neither were we in a condition to defend ourselves.

We were boarded about the same time by both the 30 pirates, who entered furiously at the head of their men, but finding us all prostrate upon our faces (for so I gave order) they pinioned us with strong ropes, and setting a guard upon us, went to search the sloop.

I observed among them a Dutchman, who seemed to

be of some authority, though he was not commander of either ship. He knew us by our countenances to be Englishmen, and jabbering to us in his own language, swore we should be tied back to back, and thrown into the sea. I spoke Dutch tolerably well ; I told him who we were, and begged him in consideration of our being Christians and Protestants, of neighbouring countries, in strict alliance, that he would move the Captains to take some pity on us. This inflamed his rage ; he  
10 repeated his threatenings, and turning to his companions, spoke with great vehemence, in the Japanese language, as I suppose, often using the word *Christianos*.

The largest of the two pirate ships was commanded by a Japanese Captain, who spoke a little Dutch, but very imperfectly. He came up to me, and after several questions, which I answered in great humility, he said we should not die. I made the Captain a very low bow, and then turning to the Dutchman, said, I was sorry to find more mercy in a heathen, than in a brother Christian.  
20 But I had soon reason to repent those foolish words ; for that malicious reprobate, having often endeavoured in vain to persuade both the Captains that I might be thrown into the sea (which they would not yield to after the promise made me, that I should not die), however prevailed so far as to have a punishment inflicted on me, worse in all human appearance than death itself. My men were sent by an equal division into both the pirate ships, and my sloop new manned. As to myself, it was determined that I should be set adrift in a small canoe,  
30 with paddles and a sail, and four days' provisions, which last the Japanese Captain was so kind to double out of his own stores, and would permit no man to search me. I got down into the canoe, while the Dutchman standing upon the deck, loaded me with all the curses and injurious terms his language could afford.

About an hour before we saw the pirates, I had taken an observation, and found we were in the latitude of 46 N. and of longitude 183. When I was at some distance from the pirates, I discovered by my pocket-glass several islands to the south-east. I set up my sail, the wind being fair, with a design to reach the nearest of those islands, which I made a shift to do in about three hours. It was all rocky; however I got many birds' eggs, and striking fire, I kindled some heath and dry sea-weed, by which I roasted my eggs. I ate no other supper, being <sup>10</sup> resolved to spare my provisions as much as I could. I passed the night under the shelter of a rock, strowing some heath under me, and slept pretty well.

The next day I sailed to another island, and thence to a third and fourth, sometimes using my sail, and sometimes my paddles. But not to trouble the reader with a particular account of my distresses, let it suffice that on the fifth day I arrived at the last island in my sight, which lay south-south-east to the former.

This island was at a greater distance than I expected, <sup>20</sup> and I did not reach it in less than five hours. I encompassed it almost round before I could find a convenient place to land in, which was a small creek about three times the wideness of my canoe. I found the island to be all rocky, only a little intermingled with tufts of grass and sweet smelling herbs. I took out my small provisions, and after having refreshed myself, I secured the remainder in a cave, whereof there were great numbers. I gathered plenty of eggs upon the rocks, and got a quantity of dry sea-weed and parched grass, which I designed to kindle <sup>30</sup> the next day, and roast my eggs as well as I could. (For I had about me my flint, steel, match, and burning-glass). I lay all night in the cave where I had lodged my provisions. My bed was the same dry grass and sea-weed which I intended for fuel. I slept very little, for the

disquiets of my mind prevailed over my weariness, and kept me awake. I considered how impossible it was to preserve my life in so desolate a place, and how miserable my end must be. Yet I found myself so listless and desponding that I had not the heart to rise, and before I could get spirits enough to creep out of my cave the day was far advanced. I walked a while among the rocks; the sky was perfectly clear, and the sun so hot that I was forced to turn my face from it: when all on  
10 a sudden it became obscured, as I thought, in a manner very different from what happens by the interposition of a cloud. I turned back, and perceived a vast opaque body between me and the sun, moving forwards towards the island: it seemed to be about two miles high, and hid the sun six or seven minutes, but I did not observe the air to be much colder, or the sky more darkened, than if I had stood under the shade of a mountain. As it approached nearer over the place where I was, it appeared to be a firm substance, the bottom flat, smooth, and  
20 shining very bright from the reflection of the sea below. I stood upon a height about two hundred yards from the shore, and saw this vast body descending almost to a parallel with me, at less than an English mile distance. I took out my pocket-perspective, and could plainly discover numbers of people moving up and down the sides of it, which appeared to be sloping, but what those people were doing, I was not able to distinguish.

The natural love of life gave me some inward motions  
30 of joy, and I was ready to entertain a hope that this adventure might some way or other help to deliver me from the desolate place and condition I was in. But at the same time the reader can hardly conceive my astonishment, to behold an island in the air, inhabited by men, who were able (as it should seem) to raise or sink, or put

it into a progressive motion, as they pleased. But not being at that time in a disposition to philosophise upon this phenomenon, I rather chose to observe what course the island would take, because it seemed for a while to stand still. Yet soon after it advanced nearer, and I could see the sides of it, encompassed with several gradations of galleries, and stairs at certain intervals, to descend from one to the other. In the lowest gallery I beheld some people fishing with long angling rods, and others looking on. I waved my cap (for my hat was 10 long since worn out) and my handkerchief towards the island; and upon its nearer approach, I called and shouted with the utmost strength of my voice; and then looking circumspectly, I beheld a crowd gather to that side which was most in my view. I found by their pointing towards me and to each other, that they plainly discovered me, although they made no return to my shouting. But I could see four or five men running in great haste up the stairs to the top of the island, who then disappeared. I happened rightly to conjecture, 20 that these were sent for orders to some person in authority upon this occasion.

The number of people increased, and in less than half an hour the island was moved and raised in such a manner, that the lowest gallery appeared in a parallel of less than an hundred yards distance from the height where I stood. I then put myself into the most supplicating postures, and spoke in the humblest accent, but received no answer. Those who stood nearest over against me seemed to be persons of distinction, as I supposed by their habit. 30 They conferred earnestly with each other, looking often upon me. At length one of them called out in a clear, polite, smooth dialect, not unlike in sound to the Italian; and therefore I returned an answer in that language, hoping at least that the cadence might be more agreeable

to his ears. Although neither of us understood the other, yet my meaning was easily known, for the people saw the distress I was in.

They made signs for me to come down from the rock, and go towards the shore, which I accordingly did ; and the flying island being raised to a convenient height, the verge directly over me, a chain was let down from the lowest gallery, with a seat fastened to the bottom, to which I fixed myself, and was drawn up by pulleys.



## CHAP. II

*The humours and dispositions of the Laputians described. An account of their learning. Of the King and his Court. The Author's reception there. The inhabitants subject to fear and disquietudes. An account of the women.*

At my alighting I was surrounded by a crowd of people, but those who stood nearest seemed to be of better quality. They beheld me with all the marks and circumstances of wonder; neither indeed was I much in their debt, having never till then seen a race 10 of mortals so singular in their shapes, habits, and countenances. Their heads were all reclined either to the right or the left; one of their eyes turned inward, and the other directly up to the zenith. Their outward garments were adorned with the figures of suns, moons, and stars, interwoven with those of fiddles, flutes, harps, trumpets, guitars, harpsichords, and many other instruments of music, unknown to us in Europe. I observed here and there many in the habit of servants, with a blown bladder fastened like a flail to the end of a short 20 stick, which they carried in their hands. In each bladder was a small quantity of dried pease, or little pebbles (as I was afterwards informed). With these bladders they now and then flapped the mouths and ears of those who stood near them, of which practice I could not then conceive the meaning; it seems the minds of these people are so taken up with intense speculations, that they neither can speak, nor attend to the discourses of others, without being roused by some external taction upon the organs of speech and hearing; for which 30 reason those persons who are able to afford it always

keep a flapper (the original is *climenole*) in their family, as one of their domestics, nor ever walk abroad or make visits without him. And the business of this officer is, when two or more persons are in company, gently to strike with his bladder the mouth of him who is to speak, and the right ear of him or them to whom the speaker addresseth himself. This flapper is likewise employed diligently to attend his master in his walks, and upon occasion to give him a soft flap on his eyes, 10 because he is always so wrapped up in cogitation, that he is in manifest danger of falling down every precipice, and bouncing his head against every post, and in the streets, of justling others, or being justled himself into the kennel.

It was necessary to give the reader this information, without which he would be at the same loss with me, to understand the proceedings of these people, as they conducted me up the stairs, to the top of the island, and from thence to the royal palace. While we were 20 ascending, they forgot several times what they were about, and left me to myself, till their memories were again roused by their flappers; for they appeared altogether unmoved by the sight of my foreign habit and countenance, and by the shouts of the vulgar, whose thoughts and minds were more disengaged.

At last we entered the palace, and proceeded into the chamber of presence, where I saw the King seated on his throne, attended on each side by persons of prime quality. Before the throne was a large table filled with 10 globes and spheres, and mathematical instruments of all kinds. His Majesty took not the least notice of us, although our entrance was not without sufficient noise, by the concourse of all persons belonging to the court. But he was then deep in a problem, and we attended at

least an hour, before he could solve it. There stood by him on each side a young page, with flaps in their hands, and when they saw he was at leisure, one of them gently struck his mouth, and the other his right ear ; at which he started like one awaked on the sudden, and looking towards me and the company I was in, recollected the occasion of our coming, whereof he had been informed before. He spoke some words, whereupon immediately a young man with a flap came up to my side, and flapped me gently on the right ear ; but I <sup>10</sup> made signs, as well as I could, that I had no occasion for such an instrument ; which, as I afterwards found, gave his Majesty and the whole court a very mean opinion of my understanding. The King, as far as I could conjecture, asked me several questions, and I addressed myself to him in all the languages I had. When it was found that I could neither understand nor be understood, I was conducted by the King's order to an apartment in his palace (this prince being distinguished above all his predecessors for his hospitality <sup>20</sup> to strangers), where two servants were appointed to attend me. My dinner was brought, and four persons of quality, whom I remembered to have seen very near the King's person, did me the honour to dine with me. We had two courses of three dishes each. In the first course there was a shoulder of mutton, cut into an equilateral triangle, a piece of beef into a rhomboides, and a pudding into a cycloid. The second course was two ducks, trussed up into the form of fiddles ; sausages and puddings resembling flutes and hautboys, and a <sup>30</sup> breast of veal in the shape of a harp. The servants cut our bread into cones, cylinders, parallelograms, and several other mathematical figures.

While we were at dinner, I made bold to ask the names of several things in their language ; and those noble

persons, by the assistance of their flappers, delighted to give me answers, hoping to raise my admiration of their great abilities, if I could be brought to converse with them. I was soon able to call for bread and drink, or whatever else I wanted.

After dinner my company withdrew, and a person was sent to me by the King's order, attended by a flapper. He brought with him pen, ink, and paper, and three or four books, giving me to understand by  
10 signs, that he was sent to teach me the language. We sat together four hours, in which time I wrote down a great number of words in columns, with the translations over against them. I likewise made a shift to learn several short sentences. For my tutor would order one of my servants to fetch something, to turn about, to make a bow, to sit, or stand, or walk, and the like. Then I took down the sentence in writing. He showed me also in one of his books the figures of the sun, moon, and stars, the zodiac, the tropics, and polar  
20 circles, together with the denominations of many figures of planes and solids. He gave me the names and descriptions of all the musical instruments, and the general terms of art in playing on each of them. After he had left me, I placed all my words with their interpretations in alphabetical order. And thus in a few days, by the help of a very faithful memory, I got some insight into their language.

The word, which I interpret the *Flying* or *Floating Island*, is in the original *Laputa*, whereof I could never  
30 learn the true etymology. *Lap* in the old obsolete language signifieth *high*, and *untuh*, a *governor*, from which they say by corruption was derived *Laputa*, from *Lapuntuh*. But I do not approve of this derivation, which seems to be a little strained. I ventured to offer to the learned among them a conjecture of my own,

that *Laputa* was *quasi lap outed* ; *lap* signifying properly the dancing of the sunbeams in the sea, and *outed*, a wing, which however I shall not obtrude, but submit to the judicious reader.

Those to whom the King had entrusted me, observing how ill I was clad, ordered a tailor to come next morning, and take my measure for a suit of clothes. This operator did his office after a different manner from those of his trade in Europe. He first took my altitude by a quadrant, and then with a rule and compasses described the dimensions and outlines of my whole body, all which he entered upon paper, and in six days brought my clothes very ill made, and quite out of shape, by happening to mistake a figure in the calculation. But my comfort was, that I observed such accidents very frequent, and little regarded.

During my confinement for want of clothes, and by an indisposition that held me some days longer, I much enlarged my dictionary ; and when I went next to court, was able to understand many things the King spoke, and to return him some kind of answers. His Majesty had given orders that the island should move north-east and by east, to the vertical point over Lagado, the metropolis of the whole kingdom below upon the firm earth. It was about ninety leagues distant, and our voyage lasted four days and an half. I was not in the least sensible of the progressive motion made in the air by the island. On the second morning about eleven o'clock, the King himself in person, attended by his nobility, courtiers, and officers, having prepared all their musical instruments, played on them for three hours without intermission, so that I was quite stunned with the noise ; neither could I possibly guess the meaning, till my tutor informed me. He said that the people of their island had their ears adapted to hear

the music of the spheres, which always played at certain periods, and the court was now prepared to bear their part in whatever instrument they most excelled.

In our journey towards Lagado, the capital city, his Majesty ordered that the island should stop over certain towns and villages, from whence he might receive the petitions of his subjects. And to this purpose several packthreads were let down with small weights at the bottom. On these packthreads the people strung their  
10 petitions, which mounted up directly like the scraps of paper fastened by school-boys at the end of the string that holds their kite. Sometimes we received wine and victuals from below, which were drawn up by pulleys.

The knowledge I had in mathematics gave me great assistance in acquiring their phraseology, which depended much upon that science and music ; and in the latter I was not unskilled. Their ideas are perpetually conversant in lines and figures. If they would, for example, praise the beauty of a woman, or any other animal, they  
20 describe it by rhombs, circles, parallelograms, ellipses, and other geometrical terms, or by words of art drawn from music, needless here to repeat. I observed in the King's kitchen all sorts of mathematical and musical instruments, after the figures of which they cut up the joints that were served to his Majesty's table.

Their houses are very ill built, the walls bevil, without one right angle in any apartment, and this defect ariseth from the contempt they bear to practical geometry, which they despise as vulgar and mechanic, those instruc-  
30 tions they give being too refined for the intellectuals of their workmen, which occasions perpetual mistakes. And although they are dexterous enough upon a piece of paper in the management of the rule, the pencil, and the divider, yet in the common actions and behaviour of life, I have not seen a more clumsy, awkward, and

unhandy people, nor so slow and perplexed in their conceptions upon all other subjects, except those of mathematics and music. They are very bad reasoners, and vehemently given to opposition, unless when they happen to be of the right opinion, which is seldom their case. Imagination, fancy, and invention, they are wholly strangers to, nor have any words in their language by which those ideas can be expressed ; the whole compass of their thoughts and mind being shut up within the two forementioned sciences. 10

Most of them, and especially those who deal in the astronomical part, have great faith in judicial astrology, although they are ashamed to own it publicly. But what I chiefly admired, and thought altogether unaccountable, was the strong disposition I observed in them towards news and politics, perpetually enquiring into public affairs, giving their judgments in matters of state, and passionately disputing every inch of a party opinion. I have indeed observed the same disposition among most of the mathematicians I have known in Europe, although 20 I could never discover the least analogy between the two sciences ; unless those people suppose, that because the smallest circle hath as many degrees as the largest, therefore the regulation and management of the world require no more abilities than the handling and turning of a globe. But I rather take this quality to spring from a very common infirmity of human nature, inclining us to be more curious and conceited in matters where we have least concern, and for which we are least adapted either by study or nature. 30

These people are under continual disquietudes, never enjoying a minute's peace of mind ; and their disturbances proceed from causes which very little affect the rest of mortals. Their apprehensions arise from several changes they dread in the celestial bodies. For instance,

that the earth, by the continual approaches of the sun towards it, must in course of time be absorbed or swallowed up. That the face of the sun will by degrees be encrusted with its own effluvia, and give no more light to the world. That the earth very narrowly escaped a brush from the tail of the last comet, which would have infallibly reduced it to ashes ; and that the next, which they have calculated for one and thirty years hence, will probably destroy us. For if in its perihelion  
10 it should approach within a certain degree of the sun (as by their calculations they have reason to dread) it will conceive a degree of heat ten thousand times more intense than that of red-hot glowing iron ; and in its absence from the sun, carry a blazing tail ten hundred thousand and fourteen miles long ; through which if the earth should pass at the distance of one hundred thousand miles from the nucleus or main body of the comet, it must in its passage be set on fire, and reduced to ashes. That the sun daily spending its rays without  
20 any nutriment to supply them, will at last be wholly consumed and annihilated ; which must be attended with the destruction of this earth, and of all the planets that receive their light from it.

They are so perpetually alarmed with the apprehensions of these and the like impending dangers, that they can neither sleep quietly in their beds, nor have any relish for the common pleasures or amusements of life. When they meet an acquaintance in the morning, the first question is about the sun's health, how he looked  
30 at his setting and rising, and what hopes they have to avoid the stroke of the approaching comet. This conversation they are apt to run into with the same temper that boys discover, in delighting to hear terrible stories of sprites and hobgoblins, which they greedily listen to, and dare not go to bed for fear.



The women of the island have abundance of vivacity : they contemn their husbands, and are exceedingly fond of strangers, whereof there is always a considerable number from the continent below, attending at court, either upon affairs of the several towns and corporations, or their own particular occasions, but are much despised, because they want the same endowments. Among these the ladies choose their gallants : but the vexation is, that they act with too much ease and security, for the husband is always so rapt in speculation, that the mis- 10 tress and lover may proceed to the greatest familiarities before his face, if he be but provided with paper and implements, and without his flapper at his side.

The wives and daughters lament their confinement to the island, although I think it the most delicious spot of ground in the world ; and although they live here in the greatest plenty and magnificence, and are allowed to do whatever they please, they long to see the world, and take the diversions of the metropolis, which they are not allowed to do without a particular licence from 20 the King ; and this is not easy to be obtained, because the people of quality have found by frequent experience how hard it is to persuade their women to return from below. I was told that a great court lady, who had several children, is married to the prime minister, the richest subject in the kingdom, a very graceful person, extremely fond of her, and lives in the finest palace of the island, went down to Lagado, on the pretence of health, there hid herself for several months, till the King sent a warrant to search for her, and she was found 30 in an obscure eating-house all in rags, having pawned her clothes to maintain an old deformed footman, who beat her every day, and in whose company she was taken much against her will. And although her husband received her with all possible kindness, and without

the least reproach, she soon after contrived to steal down again with all her jewels, to the same gallant, and hath not been heard of since.

This may perhaps pass with the reader rather for an European or English story, than for one of a country so remote. But he may please to consider, that the caprices of womankind are not limited by any climate or nation, and that they are much more uniform than can be easily imagined.

- 10 In about a month's time I had made a tolerable proficiency in their language, and was able to answer most of the King's questions, when I had the honour to attend him. His Majesty discovered not the least curiosity to enquire into the laws, government, history, religion, or manners of the countries where I had been, but confined his questions to the state of mathematics, and received the account I gave him with great contempt and indifference, though often roused by his flapper on each side.

## CHAP. III

*A phenomenon solved by modern philosophy and astronomy. The Laputians' great improvements in the latter. The King's method of suppressing insurrections.*

I DESIRED leave of this prince to see the curiosities of the island, which he was graciously pleased to grant, and ordered my tutor to attend me. I chiefly wanted to know to what cause in art or in nature it owed its several motions, whereof I will now give a philosophical account to the reader.

10

The Flying or Floating Island is exactly circular, its diameter 7837 yards, or about four miles and an half, and consequently contains ten thousand acres. It is three hundred yards thick. The bottom or under surface, which appears to those who view it from below, is one even regular plate of adamant, shooting up to the height of about two hundred yards. Above it lie the several minerals in their usual order, and over all is a coat of rich mould, ten or twelve foot deep. The declivity of the upper surface, from the circumference to the centre, 20 is the natural cause why all the dews and rains which fall upon the island, are conveyed in small rivulets toward the middle, where they are emptied into four large basins, each of about half a mile in circuit, and two hundred yards distant from the centre. From these basins the water is continually exhaled by the sun in the daytime, which effectually prevents their overflowing. Besides, as it is in the power of the monarch to raise the island above the region of clouds and vapours, he can prevent the falling of dews and rains whenever he pleases. 30

For the highest clouds cannot rise above two miles, as naturalists agree, at least they were never known to do so in that country.

At the centre of the island there is a chasm about fifty yards in diameter, from whence the astronomers descend into a large dome, which is therefore called *Flandona Gagnole*, or the Astronomer's Cave, situated at the depth of a hundred yards beneath the upper surface of the adamant. In this cave are twenty lamps continually  
10 burning, which from the reflection of the adamant cast a strong light into every part. The place is stored with great variety of sextants, quadrants, telescopes, astrolabes, and other astronomical instruments. But the greatest curiosity, upon which the fate of the island depends, is a loadstone of a prodigious size, in shape resembling a weaver's shuttle. It is in length six yards, and in the thickest part at least three yards over. This magnet is sustained by a very strong axle of adamant passing through its middle, upon which it plays, and is poised so  
20 exactly that the weakest hand can turn it. It is hooped round with an hollow cylinder of adamant, four foot deep, as many thick, and twelve yards in diameter, placed horizontally, and supported by eight adamantine feet, each six yards high. In the middle of the concave side there is a groove twelve inches deep, in which the extremities of the axle are lodged, and turned round as there is occasion.

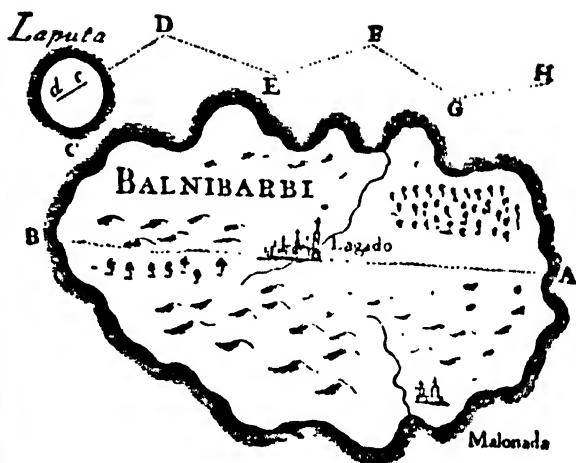
The stone cannot be moved from its place by any force, because the hoop and its feet are one continued piece with  
30 that body of adamant which constitutes the bottom of the island.

By means of this loadstone, the island is made to rise and fall, and move from one place to another. For with respect to that part of the earth over which the monarch presides, the stone is endued at one of its sides with an

attractive power, and at the other with a repulsive. Upon placing the magnet erect with its attracting end towards the earth, the island descends; but when the repelling extremity points downwards, the island mounts directly upwards. When the position of the stone is oblique, the motion of the island is so too. For in this magnet the forces always act in lines parallel to its direction.

By this oblique motion the island is conveyed to different parts of the monarch's dominions. To explain 10 the manner of its progress, let  $AB$  represent a line drawn cross the dominions of Balnibarbi, let the line  $cd$  represent the loadstone, of which let  $d$  be the repelling end, and  $c$  the attracting end, the island being over  $C$ ; let the stone be placed in the position  $cd$ , with its repelling end downwards; then the island will be driven upwards obliquely towards  $D$ . When it is arrived at  $D$ , let the stone be turned upon its axle, till its attracting end points towards  $E$ , and then the island will be carried obliquely towards  $E$ ; where if the stone be again turned 20 upon its axle till it stands in the position  $EF$ , with its repelling point downwards, the island will rise obliquely towards  $F$ , where by directing the attracting end towards  $G$ , the island may be carried to  $G$ , and from  $G$  to  $H$ , by turning the stone, so as to make its repelling extremity point directly downwards. And thus by changing the situation of the stone as often as there is occasion, the island is made to rise and fall by turns in an oblique direction, and by those alternate risings and fallings (the obliquity being not considerable) is conveyed from 30 one part of the dominions to the other.

But it must be observed that this island cannot move beyond the extent of the dominions below, nor can it rise above the height of four miles. For which the astronomers (who have written large systems concerning



the stone) assign the following reason : that the magnetic virtue does not extend beyond the distance of four miles, and that the mineral which acts upon the stone in the bowels of the earth, and in the sea about six leagues distant from the shore, is not diffused through the whole globe, but terminated with the limits of the King's dominions ; and it was easy from the great advantage of such a superior situation, for a prince to bring under his obedience whatever country lay within the attraction of that magnet.

10

When the stone is put parallel to the plane of the horizon, the island standeth still ; for in that case the extremities of it being at equal distance from the earth, act with equal force, the one in drawing downwards, the other in pushing upwards, and consequently no motion can ensue.

This loadstone is under the care of certain astronomers, who from time to time give it such positions as the monarch directs. They spend the greatest part of their lives in observing the celestial bodies, which they do by <sup>20</sup> the assistance of glasses far excelling ours in goodness. For although their largest telescopes do not exceed three feet, they magnify much more than those of an hundred yards among us, and at the same time show the stars with greater clearness. This advantage hath enabled them to extend their discoveries much further than our astronomers in Europe ; for they have made a catalogue of ten thousand fixed stars, whereas the largest of ours do not contain above one third part of that number. They have likewise discovered two lesser stars, or <sup>30</sup> satellites, which revolve about Mars, whereof the innermost is distant from the centre of the primary planet exactly three of the diameters, and the outermost five ; the former revolves in the space of ten hours, and the latter in twenty one and an half ; so that the squares

of their periodical times are very near in the same proportion with the cubes of their distance from the centre of Mars, which evidently shows them to be governed by the same law of gravitation, that influences the other heavenly bodies.

They have observed ninety-three different comets, and settled their periods with great exactness. If this be true, (and they affirm it with great confidence) it is much to be wished that their observations were made public, whereby  
10 the theory of comets, which at present is very lame and defective, might be brought to the same perfection with other parts of astronomy.

The King would be the most absolute prince in the universe, if he could but prevail on a ministry to join with him ; but these having their estates below on the continent, and considering that the office of a favourite hath a very uncertain tenure, would never consent to the enslaving their country.

If any town should engage in rebellion or mutiny, fall  
20 into violent factions, or refuse to pay the usual tribute, the King hath two methods of reducing them to obedience. The first and the mildest course is by keeping the island hovering over such a town, and the lands about it, whereby he can deprive them of the benefit of the sun and the rain, and consequently afflict the inhabitants with dearth and diseases. And if the crime deserve it, they are at the same time pelted from above with great stones, against which they have no defence but by creeping into cellars or caves, while the roofs of their  
30 houses are beaten to pieces. But if they still continue obstinate, or offer to raise insurrections, he proceeds to the last remedy, by letting the island drop directly upon their heads, which makes a universal destruction both of houses and men. However, this is an extremity to which the prince is seldom driven, neither indeed is he



willing to put it in execution, nor dare his ministers advise him to an action, which as it would render them odious to the people, so it would be a great damage to their own estates, which lie all below, for the island is the King's demesne.

But there is still indeed a more weighty reason, why the kings of this country have been always averse from executing so terrible an action, unless upon the utmost necessity. For if the town intended to be destroyed should have in it any tall rocks, as it generally falls out <sup>10</sup> in the larger cities, a situation probably chosen at first with a view to prevent such a catastrophe ; or if it abound in high spires, or pillars of stone, a sudden fall might endanger the bottom or under surface of the island, which, although it consist, as I have said, of one entire adamant two hundred yards thick, might happen to crack by too great a shock, or burst by approaching too near the fires from the houses below, as the backs both of iron and stone will often do in our chimneys. Of all this the people are well apprised, and understand <sup>20</sup> how far to carry their obstinacy, where their liberty or property is concerned. And the King, when he is highest provoked, and most determined to press a city to rubbish, orders the island to descend with great gentleness, out of a pretence of tenderness to his people, but indeed for fear of breaking the adamantine bottom ; in which case it is the opinion of all their philosophers that the loadstone could no longer hold it up, and the whole mass would fall to the ground.

About three years before my arrival among them, <sup>30</sup> while the King was in his progress over his dominions, there happened an extraordinary accident which had like to have put a period to the fate of that monarchy, at least as it is now instituted. Lindalino, the second city in the kingdom, was the first his Majesty visited

in his progress. Three days after his departure the inhabitants, who had often complained of great oppressions, shut the town gates, seized on the governor, and with incredible speed and labour erected four large towers, one at every corner of the city (which is an exact square), equal in height to a strong pointed rock that stands directly in the centre of the city. Upon the top of each tower, as well as upon the rock, they fixed a great loadstone, and in case their design should fail, they had  
10 provided a vast quantity of the most combustible fuel, hoping to burst therewith the adamantine bottom of the island, if the loadstone project should miscarry.

It was eight months before the King had perfect notice that the Lindalinians were in rebellion. He then commanded that the island should be wafted over the city. The people were unanimous, and had laid in store of provisions, and a great river runs through the middle of the town. The King hovered over them several days to deprive them of the sun and the rain. He ordered many  
20 packthreads to be let down, yet not a person offered to send up a petition, but instead thereof very bold demands, the redress of all their grievances, great immunities, the choice of their own governor, and other the like exorbitances. Upon which his Majesty commanded all the inhabitants of the island to cast great stones from the lower gallery into the town; but the citizens had provided against this mischief by conveying their persons and effects into the four towers, and other strong buildings, and vaults underground.

30 The King being now determined to reduce this proud people, ordered that the island should descend gently within forty yards of the top of the towers and rock. This was accordingly done; but the officers employed in that work found the descent much speedier than usual, and by turning the loadstone could not without

great difficulty keep it in a firm position, but found the island inclining to fall. They sent the King immediate intelligence of this astonishing event, and begged his Majesty's permission to raise the island higher; the King consented, a general council was called, and the officers of the loadstone ordered to attend. One of the oldest and expertest among them obtained leave to try an experiment. He took a strong line of an hundred yards, and the island being raised over the town above the attracting power they had felt, he fastened a piece of adamant to the end of his line, which had in it a mixture of iron mineral, of the same nature with that whereof the bottom or lower surface of the island is composed, and from the lower gallery let it down slowly towards the top of the towers. The adamant was not descended four yards, before the officer felt it drawn so strongly downwards that he could hardly pull it back. He then threw down several small pieces of adamant, and observed that they were all violently attracted by the top of the tower. The same experiment was made on the other three towers, and on the rock with the same effect. 10

This incident broke entirely the King's measures, and (to dwell no longer on other circumstances) he was forced to give the town their own conditions.

I was assured by a great minister that if the island had descended so near the town as not to be able to raise itself, the citizens were determined to fix it for ever, to kill the King and all his servants, and entirely change the government. 20

By a fundamental law of this realm, neither the king, nor either of his two elder sons, are permitted to leave the island; nor the queen, till she is past child-bearing.

## CHAP. IV

*The Author leaves Laputa ; is conveyed to Balnibarbi, arrives at the metropolis. A description of the metropolis, and the country adjoining. The Author hospitably received by a great Lord. His conversation with that Lord.*

ALTHOUGH I cannot say that I was ill treated in this island, yet I must confess I thought myself too much neglected, not without some degree of contempt. For neither prince nor people appeared to be curious in any  
10 part of knowledge, except mathematics and music, wherein I was far their inferior, and upon that account very little regarded.

On the other side, after having seen all the curiosities of the island, I was very desirous to leave it, being heartily weary of those people. They were indeed excellent in two sciences for which I have great esteem, and wherein I am not unversed ; but at the same time so abstracted and involved in speculation, that I never met with such disagreeable companions. I conversed only with women,  
20 tradesmen, flappers, and court-pages, during two months of my abode there, by which at last I rendered myself extremely contemptible ; yet these were the only people from whom I could ever receive a reasonable answer.

I had obtained by hard study a good degree of knowledge in their language ; I was weary of being confined to an island where I received so little countenance, and resolved to leave it with the first opportunity.

There was a great lord at court, nearly related to the King, and for that reason alone used with respect. He  
30 was universally reckoned the most ignorant and stupid person among them. He had performed many eminent

services for the crown, had great natural and acquired parts, adorned with integrity and honour, but so ill an ear for music, that his detractors reported he had been often known to beat time in the wrong place ; neither could his tutors without extreme difficulty teach him to demonstrate the most easy proposition in the mathematics. He was pleased to show me many marks of favour, often did me the honour of a visit, desired to be informed in the affairs of Europe, the laws and customs, the manners and learning of the several countries where 10 I had travelled. He listened to me with great attention, and made very wise observations on all I spoke. He had two flappers attending him for state, but never made use of them except at court, and in visits of ceremony, and would always command them to withdraw when we were alone together.

I entreated this illustrious person to intercede in my behalf with his Majesty for leave to depart, which he accordingly did, as he was pleased to tell me, with regret : for indeed he had made me several offers very advantageous, which however I refused with expressions of the highest acknowledgement.

On the 16th day of February I took leave of his Majesty and the court. The King made me a present to the value of about two hundred pounds English, and my protector his kinsman as much more, together with a letter of recommendation to a friend of his in Lagado, the metropolis. The island being then hovering over a mountain about two miles from it, I was let down from the lowest gallery, in the same manner as I had 20 been taken up.

The continent, as far as it is subject to the monarch of the Flying Island, passes under the general name of *Balnibarbi*, and the metropolis, as I said before, is called *Lagado*. I felt some little satisfaction in finding myself

on firm ground. I walked to the city without any concern, being clad like one of the natives, and sufficiently instructed to converse with them. I soon found out the person's house to whom I was recommended, presented my letter from his friend the grandee in the island, and was received with much kindness. This great lord, whose name was Munodi, ordered me an apartment in his own house, where I continued during my stay, and was entertained in a most hospitable manner.

- 10 The next morning after my arrival, he took me in his chariot to see the town, which is about half the bigness of London, but the houses very strangely built, and most of them out of repair. The people in the streets walked fast, looked wild, their eyes fixed, and were generally in rags. We passed through one of the town gates, and went about three miles into the country, where I saw many labourers working with several sorts of tools in the ground, but was not able to conjecture what they were about; neither did I observe any  
20 expectation either of corn or grass, although the soil appeared to be excellent. I could not forbear admiring at these odd appearances both in town and country, and I made bold to desire my conductor, that he would be pleased to explain to me what could be meant by so many busy heads, hands, and faces, both in the streets and the fields, because I did not discover any good effects they produced; but on the contrary, I never knew a soil so unhappily cultivated, houses so ill contrived and so ruinous, or a people whose countenances and  
30 habit expressed so much misery and want.

This Lord Munodi was a person of the first rank, and had been some years Governor of Lagado, but by a cabal of ministers was discharged for insufficiency. However, the King treated him with tenderness, as a well-meaning man, but of a low contemptible understanding.

When I gave that free censure of the country and its inhabitants, he made no further answer than by telling me that I had not been long enough among them to form a judgement, and that the different nations of the world had different customs, with other common topics to the same purpose. But when we returned to his palace, he asked me how I liked the building, what absurdities I observed, and what quarrel I had with the dress or looks of his domestics. This he might safely do, because every thing about him was magnificent,<sup>10</sup> regular, and polite. I answered that his Excellency's prudence, quality, and fortune, had exempted him from those defects which folly and beggary had produced in others. He said if I would go with him to his country-house, about twenty miles distant, where his estate lay, there would be more leisure for this kind of conversation. I told his Excellency that I was entirely at his disposal, and accordingly we set out next morning.

During our journey he made me observe the several methods used by farmers in managing their lands, which<sup>20</sup> to me were wholly unaccountable ; for except in some very few places I could not discover one ear of corn or blade of grass. But in three hours travelling the scene was wholly altered ; we came into a most beautiful country ; farmers' houses at small distances, neatly built ; the fields enclosed, containing vineyards, corn-grounds, and meadows. Neither do I remember to have seen a more delightful prospect. His Excellency observed my countenance to clear up ; he told me with a sigh that there his estate began, and would continue the same till<sup>30</sup> we should come to his house. That his countrymen ridiculed and despised him for managing his affairs no better, and for setting so ill an example to the kingdom, which however was followed by very few, such as were old, and wilful, and weak like himself.

We came at length to the house, which was indeed a noble structure, built according to the best rules of ancient architecture. The fountains, gardens, walks, avenues, and groves were all disposed with exact judgment and taste. I gave due praises to every thing I saw, whereof his Excellency took not the least notice till after supper, when, there being no third companion, he told me with a very melancholy air that he doubted he must throw down his houses in town and country, <sup>10</sup> to rebuild them after the present mode, destroy all his plantations, and cast others into such a form as modern usage required, and give the same directions to all his tenants, unless he would submit to incur the censure of pride, singularity, affectation, ignorance, caprice, and perhaps increase his Majesty's displeasure.

That the admiration I appeared to be under would cease or diminish when he had informed me of some particulars, which probably I never heard of at court, the people there being too much taken up in their own <sup>20</sup> speculations, to have regard to what passed here below.

The sum of his discourse was to this effect. That about forty years ago certain persons went up to Laputa, either upon business or diversion, and after five months continuance came back with a very little smattering in mathematics, but full of volatile spirits acquired in that airy region. That these persons upon their return began to dislike the management of every thing below, and fell into schemes of putting all arts, sciences, languages, and mechanics upon a new foot. To this end they <sup>30</sup> procured a royal patent for erecting an Academy of Projectors in Lagado; and the humour prevailed so strongly among the people, that there is not a town of any consequence in the kingdom without such an academy. In these colleges the professors contrive new rules and methods of agriculture and building, and new



instruments and tools for all trades and manufactures, whereby, as they undertake, one man shall do the work of ten ; a palace may be built in a week, of materials so durable as to last for ever without repairing. All the fruits of the earth shall come to maturity at whatever season we think fit to choose, and increase an hundred fold more than they do at present, with innumerable other happy proposals. The only inconvenience is, that none of these projects are yet brought to perfection, and in the mean time, the whole country lies miserably waste, 1c the houses in ruins, and the people without food or clothes. By all which, instead of being discouraged, they are fifty times more violently bent upon prosecuting their schemes, driven equally on by hope and despair ; that as for himself, being not of an enterprising spirit, he was content to go on in the old forms, to live in the houses his ancestors had built, and act as they did in every part of life without innovation. That some few other persons of quality and gentry had done the same, but were looked on with an eye of contempt and ill-will, 20 as enemies to art, ignorant, and ill commonwealth's-men, preferring their own ease and sloth before the general improvement of their country.

His Lordship added that he would not by any further particulars prevent the pleasure I should certainly take in viewing the grand Academy, whither he was resolved I should go. He only desired me to observe a ruined building upon the side of a mountain about three miles distant, of which he gave me this account. That he had a very convenient mill within half a mile of his house, 30 turned by a current from a large river, and sufficient for his own family as well as a great number of his tenants. That about seven years ago a club of those projectors came to him with proposals to destroy this mill, and build another on the side of that mountain, on the long ridge

whereof a long canal must be cut for a repository of water, to be conveyed up by pipes and engines to supply the mill ; because the wind and air upon a height agitated the water, and thereby made it fitter for motion ; and because the water descending down a declivity would turn the mill with half the current of a river whose course is more upon a level. He said, that being then not very well with the court, and pressed by many of his friends, he complied with the proposal ; and after  
10 employing an hundred men for two years, the work miscarried, the projectors went off, laying the blame entirely upon him, railing at him ever since, and putting others upon the same experiment, with equal assurance of success, as well as equal disappointment.

In a few days we came back to town, and his Excellency, considering the bad character he had in the Academy, would not go with me himself, but recommended me to a friend of his to bear me company thither. My lord was pleased to represent me as a great admirer of projects,  
20 and a person of much curiosity and easy belief ; which indeed was not without truth, for I had myself been a sort of projector in my younger days.

## CHAP. V

*The Author permitted to see the Grand Academy of Lagado. The Academy largely described. The Arts wherein the professors employ themselves.*

THIS Academy is not an entire single building, but a continuation of several houses on both sides of a street, which growing waste was purchased and applied to that use.

I was received very kindly by the Warden, and went for many days to the Academy. Every room hath in 10 it one or more projectors, and I believe I could not be in fewer than five hundred rooms.

The first man I saw was of a meagre aspect, with sooty hands and face, his hair and beard long, ragged and singed in several places. His clothes, shirt, and skin were all of the same colour. He had been eight years upon a project for extracting sun-beams out of cucumbers, which were to be put into vials hermetically sealed, and let out to warm the air in raw inclement summers. He told me he did not doubt in eight years more he should 20 be able to supply the Governor's gardens with sunshine at a reasonable rate ; but he complained that his stock was low, and entreated me to give him something as an encouragement to ingenuity, especially since this had been a very dear season for cucumbers. I made him a small present, for my lord had furnished me with money on purpose, because he knew their practice of begging from all who go to see them.

I saw another at work to calcine ice into gunpowder, who likewise showed me a treatise he had written 30

concerning the malleability of fire, which he intended to publish.

There was a most ingenious architect who had contrived a new method for building houses, by beginning at the roof, and working downwards to the foundation, which he justified to me by the like practice of those two prudent insects, the bee and the spider.

There was a man born blind, who had several apprentices in his own condition : their employment was to  
10 mix colours for painters, which their master taught them to distinguish by feeling and smelling. It was indeed my misfortune to find them at that time not very perfect in their lessons, and the professor himself happened to be generally mistaken : this artist is much encouraged and esteemed by the whole fraternity.

In another apartment I was highly pleased with a projector, who had found a device of ploughing the ground with hogs, to save the charges of ploughs, cattle, and labour. The method is this : in an acre of ground you  
20 bury, at six inches distance and eight deep, a quantity of acorns, dates, chestnuts, and other mast or vegetables whereof these animals are fondest ; then you drive six hundred or more of them into the field, where in a few days they will root up the whole ground in search of their food, and make it fit for sowing, at the same time manuring it with their dung. It is true, upon experiment they found the charge and trouble very great, and they had little or no crop. However, it is not doubted that this invention may be capable of great improvement.

30 I went into another room, where the walls and ceiling were all hung round with cobwebs, except a narrow passage for the artist to go in and out. At my entrance he called aloud to me not to disturb his webs. He lamented the fatal mistake the world had been so long in of using silk-worms, while we had such plenty of

domestic insects, who infinitely excelled the former, because they understood how to weave as well as spin. And he proposed farther that by employing spiders the charge of dyeing silks should be wholly saved, whereof I was fully convinced when he showed me a vast number of flies most beautifully coloured, wherewith he fed his spiders, assuring us that the webs would take a tincture from them ; and as he had them of all hues, he hoped to fit everybody's fancy, as soon as he could find proper food for the flies, of certain gums, oils, and other glutinous matter to give a strength and consistence to the threads. 10

There was an astronomer who had undertaken to place a sun-dial upon the great weathercock on the town-house, by adjusting the annual and diurnal motions of the earth and sun, so as to answer and coincide with all accidental turnings by the wind.

I visited many other apartments, but shall not trouble my reader with all the curiosities I observed, being studious of brevity.

I had hitherto seen only one side of the Academy, the other being appropriated to the advancers of speculative learning, of whom I shall say something when I have mentioned one illustrious person more, who is called among them *the universal artist*. He told us he had been thirty years employing his thoughts for the improvement of human life. He had two large rooms full of wonderful curiosities, and fifty men at work. Some were condensing air into a dry tangible substance, by extracting the nitre, and letting the aqueous or fluid particles percolate ; others softening marble for pillows and pin-cushions ; 20 others petrifying the hoofs of a living horse to preserve them from foundering. The artist himself was at that time busy upon two great designs ; the first, to sow land with chaff, wherein he affirmed the true seminal virtue to be contained, as he demonstrated by several

experiments which I was not skilful enough to comprehend. The other was, by a certain composition of gums, minerals, and vegetables outwardly applied, to prevent the growth of wool upon two young lambs; and he hoped in a reasonable time to propagate the breed of naked sheep all over the kingdom.

We crossed a walk to the other part of the Academy, where, as I have already said, the projectors in speculative learning resided.

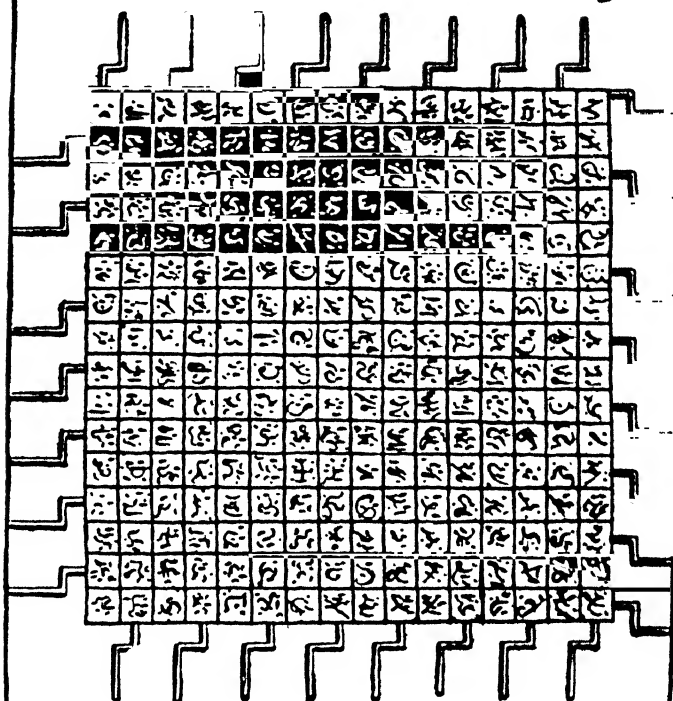
- 10 The first professor I saw was in a very large room, with forty pupils about him. After salutation, observing me to look earnestly upon a frame, which took up the greatest part of both the length and breadth of the room, he said perhaps I might wonder to see him employed in a project for improving speculative knowledge by practical and mechanical operations. But the world would soon be sensible of its usefulness, and he flattered himself that a more noble exalted thought never sprang in any other man's head. Every one knew how laborious
- 20 the usual method is of attaining to arts and sciences; whereas by his contrivance the most ignorant person at a reasonable charge, and with a little bodily labour, may write books in philosophy, poetry, politics, law, mathematics, and theology, without the least assistance from genius or study. He then led me to the frame, about the sides whereof all his pupils stood in ranks. It was twenty foot square, placed in the middle of the room. The superficies was composed of several bits of wood, about the bigness of a die, but some larger than others.
- 30 They were all linked together by slender wires. These bits of wood were covered on every square with paper pasted on them, and on these papers were written all the words of their language, in their several moods, tenses, and declensions, but without any order. The professor then desired me to observe, for he was going

to set his engine at work. The pupils at his command took each of them hold of an iron handle, whereof there were forty fixed round the edges of the frame, and giving them a sudden turn, the whole disposition of the words was entirely changed. He then commanded six and thirty of the lads to read the several lines softly as they appeared upon the frame ; and where they found three or four words together that might make part of a sentence, they dictated to the four remaining boys who were scribes. This work was repeated three or four times, and at every 10 turn the engine was so contrived that the words shifted into new places, as the square bits of wood moved upside down.

Six hours a day the young students were employed in this labour, and the professor showed me several volumes in large folio already collected, of broken sentences, which he intended to piece together, and out of those rich materials to give the world a complete body of all arts and sciences ; which however might be still improved, and much expedited, if the public would raise a fund for making and employing five hundred such frames in 20 Lagado, and oblige the managers to contribute in common their several collections.

He assured me, that this invention had employed all his thoughts from his youth, that he had emptied the whole vocabulary into his frame, and made the strictest computation of the general proportion there is in books between the numbers of particles, nouns, and verbs, and other parts of speech.

I made my humblest acknowledgement to this illustrious person for his great communicativeness, and 30 promised if ever I had the good fortune to return to my native country, that I would do him justice, as the sole inventor of this wonderful machine ; the form and contrivance of which I desired leave to delineate upon





paper, as in the figure here annexed. I told him, although it were the custom of our learned in Europe to steal inventions from each other, who had thereby at least this advantage, that it became a controversy which was the right owner, yet I would take such caution, that he should have the honour entire without a rival.

We next went to the school of languages, where three professors sat in consultation upon improving that of their own country.

The first project was to shorten discourse by cutting 10 polysyllables into one, and leaving out verbs and participles, because in reality all things imaginable are but nouns.

The other project was a scheme for entirely abolishing all words whatsoever ; and this was urged as a great advantage in point of health as well as brevity. For it is plain that every word we speak is in some degree a diminution of our lungs by corrosion, and consequently contributes to the shortening of our lives. An expedient was therefore offered, that since words are only names 20 for *things*, it would be more convenient for all men to carry about them such things as were necessary to express the particular business they are to discourse on. And this invention would certainly have taken place, to the great ease as well as health of the subject, if the women, in conjunction with the vulgar and illiterate, had not threatened to raise a rebellion, unless they might be allowed the liberty to speak with their tongues, after the manner of their ancestors ; such constant irreconcilable enemies to science are the common people. 30 However, many of the most learned and wise adhere to the new scheme of expressing themselves by things, which hath only this inconvenience attending it, that if a man's business be very great, and of various kinds, he must be obliged in proportion to carry a greater bundle of things upon his back, unless he can afford

one or two strong servants to attend him. I have often beheld two of those sages almost sinking under the weight of their packs, like pedlars among us ; who, when they met in the streets, would lay down their loads, open their sacks, and hold conversation for an hour together ; then put up their implements, help each other to resume their burthens, and take their leave.

But for short conversations a man may carry implements in his pockets and under his arms, enough to supply  
10 him, and in his house he cannot be at a loss. Therefore the room where company meet who practise this art, is full of all things ready at hand, requisite to furnish matter for this kind of artificial converse.

Another great advantage proposed by this invention was that it would serve as an universal language to be understood in all civilised nations, whose goods and utensils are generally of the same kind, or nearly resembling, so that their uses might easily be comprehended. And thus ambassadors would be qualified to treat with  
20 foreign princes or ministers of state, to whose tongues they were utter strangers.

I was at the mathematical school, where the master taught his pupils after a method scarce imaginable to us in Europe. The proposition and demonstration were fairly written on a thin wafer, with ink composed of a cephalic tincture. This the student was to swallow upon a fasting stomach, and for three days following eat nothing but bread and water. As the wafer digested, the tincture mounted to his brain, bearing the proposition  
30 along with it. But the success hath not hitherto been answerable, partly by some error in the *quantum* or composition, and partly by the perverseness of lads, to whom this bolus is so nauseous, that they generally steal aside, and discharge it upwards before it can operate ; neither have they been yet persuaded to use so long an abstinence as the prescription requires.

## CHAP. VI

*A further account of the Academy. The Author proposes some improvements, which are honourably received.*

IN the school of political projectors I was but ill entertained, the professors appearing in my judgment wholly out of their senses, which is a scene that never fails to make me melancholy. These unhappy people were proposing schemes for persuading monarchs to choose favourites upon the score of their wisdom, capacity, and virtue ; of teaching ministers to consult the public good ; <sup>10</sup> of rewarding merit, great abilities, eminent services ; of instructing princes to know their true interest by placing it on the same foundation with that of their people ; of choosing for employments persons qualified to exercise them ; with many other wild impossible chimæras, that never entered before into the heart of man to conceive, and confirmed in me the old observation, that there is nothing so extravagant and irrational which some philosophers have not maintained for truth.

But however I shall so far do justice to this part of the <sup>20</sup> Academy, as to acknowledge that all of them were not so visionary. There was a most ingenious doctor who seemed to be perfectly versed in the whole nature and system of government. This illustrious person had very usefully employed his studies in finding out effectual remedies for all diseases and corruptions, to which the several kinds of public administration are subject by the vices or infirmities of those who govern, as well as by the licentiousness of those who are to obey. For instance, whereas all writers and reasoners have agreed, <sup>30</sup> that there is a strict universal resemblance between the

natural and the political body ; can there be any thing more evident, than that the health of both must be preserved, and the diseases cured by the same prescriptions ? It is allowed that senates and great councils are often troubled with redundant, ebullient, and other peccant humours, with many diseases of the head, and more of the heart ; with strong convulsions, with grievous contractions of the nerves and sinews in both hands, but especially the right ; with spleen, vertigos,  
10 and deliriums ; with scrofulous tumours, with canino appetites and crudeness of digestion, besides many others needless to mention. This doctor therefore proposed, that upon the meeting of a senate, certain physicians should attend at the three first days of their sitting, and at the close of each day's debate, feel the pulses of every senator ; after which, having maturely considered, and consulted upon the nature of the several maladies, and the methods of cure, they should on the fourth day return to the senate house, attended by their apothecaries stored  
20 with proper medicines ; and before the members sat, administer to each of them lenitives, aperitives, abstersives, corrosives, restringents, palliatives, laxatives, cephalalgics, icterics, apophlegmatics, acoustics, as their several cases required ; and according as these medicines should operate, repeat, alter, or omit them at the next meeting.

This project could not be of any great expense to the public, and would, in my poor opinion, be of much use for the dispatch of business in those countries where  
30 senates have any share in the legislative power ; beget unanimity, shorten debates, open a few mouths which are now closed, and close many more which are now open ; curb the petulancy of the young, and correct the positiveness of the old ; rouse the stupid, and damp the pert.

Again, because it is a general complaint, that the favourites of princes are troubled with short and weak memories, the same doctor proposed, that whoever attended a first minister, after having told his business with the utmost brevity and in the plainest words, should at his departure give the said minister a tweak by the nose, or a kick in the belly, or tread on his corns, or lug him thrice by both ears, or run a pin into his breech, or pinch his arm black and blue, to prevent forgetfulness; and at every levee day repeat the same operation, till 10 the business were done or absolutely refused.

He likewise directed, that every senator in the great council of a nation, after he had delivered his opinion, and argued in the defence of it, should be obliged to give his vote directly contrary; because if that were done, the result would infallibly terminate in the good of the public.

When parties in a state are violent, he offered a wonderful contrivance to reconcile them. The method is this. You take a hundred leaders of each party, you 20 dispose them into couples of such whose heads are nearest of a size; then let two nice operators saw off the occiput of each couple at the same time, in such a manner that the brain may be equally divided. Let the occiputs thus cut off be interchanged, applying each to the head of his opposite party-man. It seems indeed to be a work that requireth some exactness, but the professor assured us that if it were dexterously performed the cure would be infallible. For he argued thus; that the two half brains being left to debate the matter 30 between themselves within the space of one skull, would soon come to a good understanding, and produce that moderation, as well as regularity of thinking, so much to be wished for in the heads of those who imagine they come into the world only to watch and govern its

motion : and as to the difference of brains in quantity or quality among those who are directors in faction, the doctor assured us from his own knowledge that it was a perfect trifle.

I heard a very warm debate between two professors, about the most commodious and effectual ways and means of raising money without grieving the subject. The first affirmed the justest method would be to lay a certain tax upon vices and folly, and the sum fixed  
10 upon every man to be rated after the fairest manner by a jury of his neighbours. The second was of an opinion directly contrary, to tax those qualities of body and mind for which men chiefly value themselves, the rate to be more or less according to the degrees of excelling, the decision whereof should be left entirely to their own breast. The highest tax was upon men who are the greatest favourites of the other sex, and the assessments according to the number and natures of the favours they have received ; for which they are allowed to be their  
20 own vouchers. Wit, valour, and politeness were likewise proposed to be largely taxed, and collected in the same manner, by every person's giving his own word for the quantum of what he possessed. But as to honour, justice, wisdom, and learning, they should not be taxed at all, because they are qualifications of so singular a kind, that no man will either allow them in his neighbour, or value them in himself.

The women were proposed to be taxed according to their beauty and skill in dressing, wherein they had the  
30 same privilege with the men, to be determined by their own judgment. But constancy, chastity, good sense, and good nature were not rated, because they would not bear the charge of collecting.

To keep senators in the interest of the crown, it was proposed that the members should raffle for employments,

every man first taking an oath, and giving security that he would vote for the court, whether he won or no ; after which the losers had in their turn the liberty of raffling upon the next vacancy. Thus hope and expectation would be kept alive, none would complain of broken promises, but impute their disappointments wholly to fortune, whose shoulders are broader and stronger than those of a ministry.

Another professor showed me a large paper of instructions for discovering plots and conspiracies against the 10 government. He advised great statesmen to examine into the diet of all suspected persons ; their times of eating ; upon which side they lay in bed.

The whole discourse was written with great acuteness, containing many observations both curious and useful for politicians, but as I conceived not altogether complete. This I ventured to tell the author, and offered if he pleased to supply him with some additions. He received my proposition with more compliance than is usual among writers, especially those of the projecting 20 species, professing he would be glad to receive farther information.

I told him that in the kingdom of Tribnia, by the natives called Langden, where I had sojourned some time in my travels, the bulk of the people consist in a manner wholly of discoverers, witnesses, informers, accusers, prosecutors, evidences, swearers, together with their several subservient and subaltern instruments, all under the colours and conduct of ministers of state and their deputies. The plots in that kingdom are usually 30 the workmanship of those persons who desire to raise their own characters of profound politicians, to restore new vigour to a crazy administration, to stifle or divert general discontents, to fill their pockets with forfeitures, and raise or sink the opinion of public credit, as either

shall best answer their private advantage. It is first agreed and settled among them, what suspected persons shall be accused of a plot ; then, effectual care is taken to secure all their letters and papers, and put the criminals in chains. These papers are delivered to a set of artists, very dexterous in finding out the mysterious meanings of words, syllables, and letters. For instance, they can discover a flock of geese to signify a senate ; a lame dog, an invader ; a codshead, a —— ; the plague, a standing  
10 army ; a buzzard, a prime minister ; the gout, a high priest ; a gibbet, a secretary of state ; a sieve, a court lady ; a broom, a revolution ; a mouse-trap, an employment ; a bottomless pit, the treasury ; a sink, the court ; a cap and bells, a favourite ; a broken reed, a court of justice ; an empty tun, a general ; a running sore, the administration.

When this method fails, they have two others more effectual, which the learned among them call acrostics and anagrams. First they can decipher all initial letters  
20 into political meanings. Thus, *N.* shall signify a plot ; *B.* a regiment of horse ; *L.* a fleet at sea ; or secondly by transposing the letters of the alphabet in any suspected paper, they can discover the deepest designs of a discontented party. And this is the anagrammatic method.

The professor made me great acknowledgments for communicating these observations, and promised to make honourable mention of me in his treatise.

I saw nothing in this country that could invite me to  
30 a longer continuance, and began to think of returning home to England.



## CHAP. VII

*The Author leaves Lagado, arrives at Maldonada. No ship ready. He takes a short voyage to Glubbudbrib. His reception by the Governor.*

THE continent of which this kingdom is a part extends itself, as I have reason to believe, eastward to that unknown tract of America, westward of California, and north of the Pacific Ocean, which is not above a hundred and fifty miles from Lagado, where there is a good port and much commerce with the great island of Luggnagg, <sup>10</sup> situated to the north-west about 29 degrees north latitude, and 140 longitude. This island of Luggnagg stands south-eastwards of Japan, about an hundred leagues distant. There is a strict alliance between the Japanese Emperor and the King of Luggnagg, which affords frequent opportunities of sailing from one island to the other. I determined therefore to direct my course this way, in order to my return to Europe. I hired two mules with a guide to show me the way, and carry my small baggage. I took leave of my noble protector, <sup>20</sup> who had shown me so much favour and made me a generous present at my departure.

My journey was without any accident or adventure worth relating. When I arrived at the port of Maldonada (for so it is called) there was no ship in the harbour bound for Luggnagg, nor likely to be in some time. The town is about as large as Portsmouth. I soon fell into some acquaintance, and was very hospitably received. A gentleman of distinction said to me that since the ships bound for Luggnagg could not <sup>30</sup> be ready in less than a month, it might be no disagree-

able amusement for me to take a trip to the little island of Glubbudbrib, about five leagues off to the south-west. He offered himself and a friend to accompany me, and that I should be provided with a small convenient barque for the voyage.

Glubbudbrib, as nearly as I can interpret the word, signifies the Island of *Sorcercis* or *Magicians*. It is about one third as large as the Isle of Wight, and extremely fruitful : it is governed by the head of a cer-  
tain tribe, who are all magicians. This tribe marries  
only among each other, and the eldest in succession is  
Prince or Governor. He hath a noble palace, and a park  
of about three thousand acres, surrounded by a wall of  
hewn stone twenty foot high. In this park are several  
small enclosures for cattle, corn, and gardening.

The Governor and his family are served and attended by domestics of a kind somewhat unusual. By his skill in necromancy, he hath a power of calling whom he pleaseth from the dead, and commanding their service  
for twenty-four hours, but no longer ; nor can he call  
the same persons up again in less than three months,  
except upon very extraordinary occasions.

When we arrived at the island, which was about eleven in the morning, one of the gentlemen who accompanied me, went to the Governor, and desired admittance for a stranger, who came on purpose to have the honour of attending on his Highness. This was immediately granted, and we all three entered the gate of the palace between two rows of guards, armed and dressed after  
a very antic manner, and something in their counten-  
ances that made my flesh creep with a horror I cannot  
express. We passed through several apartments, between  
servants of the same sort, ranked on each side as  
before, till we came to the chamber of presence, where  
after three profound obeisances, and a few general

questions, we were permitted to sit on three stools near the lowest step of his Highness's throne. He understood the language of Balnibarbi, although it were different from that of his island. He desired me to give him some account of my travels ; and to let me see that I should be treated without ceremony, he dismissed all his attendants with a turn of his finger, at which to my great astonishment they vanished in an instant, like visions in a dream, when we awake on a sudden. I could not recover myself in some time, till the Governor <sup>10</sup> assured me that I should receive no hurt ; and observing my two companions to be under no concern, who had been often entertained in the same manner, I began to take courage, and related to his Highness a short history of my several adventures, yet not without some hesitation, and frequently looking behind me to the place where I had seen those domestic spectres. I had the honour to dine with the Governor, where a new set of ghosts served up the meat, and waited at table. I now observed myself to be less terrified than I had been in <sup>20</sup> the morning. I stayed till sunset, but humbly desired his Highness to excuse me for not accepting his invitation of lodging in the palace. My two friends and I lay at a private house in the town adjoining, which is the capital of this little island ; and the next morning we returned to pay our duty to the Governor, as he was pleased to command us.

After this manner we continued in the island for ten days, most part of every day with the Governor, and at night in our lodging. I soon grew so familiarized to <sup>30</sup> the sight of spirits, that after the third or fourth time they gave me no emotion at all ; or if I had any apprehensions left, my curiosity prevailed over them. For his Highness the Governor ordered me to call up whatever persons I would choose to name, and in whatever

numbers among all the dead from the beginning of the world to the present time, and command them to answer any questions I should think fit to ask ; with this condition, that my questions must be confined within the compass of the times they lived in. And one thing I might depend upon, that they would certainly tell me truth, for lying was a talent of no use in the lower world.

I made my humble acknowledgements to his Highness for so great a favour. We were in a chamber from  
10 whence there was a fair prospect into the park. And because my first inclination was to be entertained with scenes of pomp and magnificence, I desired to see Alexander the Great, at the head of his army just after the battle of Arbela ; which upon a motion of the Governor's finger immediately appeared in a large field under the window where we stood. Alexander was called up into the room : it was with great difficulty that I understood his Greek, and had but little of my own. He assured me upon his honour that he was not poisoned,  
20 but died of a fever by excessive drinking.

Next I saw Hannibal passing the Alps, who told me he had not a drop of vinegar in his camp.

I saw Cæsar and Pompey at the head of their troops, just ready to engage. I saw the former in his last great triumph. I desired that the senate of Rome might appear before me in one large chamber, and an assembly of somewhat a latter age in counterview in another. The first seemed to be an assembly of heroes and demigods ; the other a knot of pedlars, pickpockets, high-  
30 way-men, and bullies.

The Governor at my request gave the sign for Cæsar and Brutus to advance towards us. I was struck with a profound veneration at the sight of Brutus, and could easily discover the most consummate virtue, the greatest intrepidity and firmness of mind, the truest love of his

country, and general benevolence for mankind in every lineament of his countenance. I observed with much pleasure that these two persons were in good intelligence with each other, and Cæsar freely confessed to me that the greatest actions of his own life were not equal by many degrees to the glory of taking it away. I had the honour to have much conversation with Brutus; and was told, that his ancestor Junius, Socrates, Epaminondas, Cato the younger, Sir Thomas More, and himself were perpetually together : a sextumvirate to 10 which all the ages of the world cannot add a seventh.

It would be tedious to trouble the reader with relating what vast numbers of illustrious persons were called up, to gratify that insatiable desire I had to see the world in every period of antiquity placed before me. I chiefly fed my eyes with beholding the destroyers of tyrants and usurpers, and the restorers of liberty to oppressed and injured nations. But it is impossible to express the satisfaction I received in my own mind, after such a manner as to make it a suitable entertainment to the 20 reader.

## CHAP. VIII

*A further account of Glubbdubdris. Ancient and modern history corrected.*

HAVING a desire to see those ancients who were most renowned for wit and learning, I set apart one day on purpose. I proposed that Homer and Aristotle might appear at the head of all their commentators ; but these were so numerous that some hundreds were forced to attend in the court and outward rooms of the palace.

10 I knew and could distinguish those two heroes at first sight, not only from the crowd but from each other. Homer was the taller and comelier person of the two, walked very erect for one of his age, and his eyes were the most quick and piercing I ever beheld. Aristotle stooped much, and made use of a staff. His visago was meagre, his hair lank and thin, and his voice hollow. I soon discovered that both of them were perfect strangers to the rest of the company, and had never seen or heard of them before. And I had a whisper from a ghost, who

20 shall be nameless, that these commentators always kept in the most distant quarters from their principals in the lower world, through a consciousness of shame and guilt, because they had so horribly misrepresented the meaning of those authors to posterity. I introduced Didymus and Eustathius to Homer, and prevailed on him to treat them better than perhaps they deserved ; for he soon found they wanted a genius to enter into the spirit of a poet. But Aristotle was out of all patience with the account I gave him of Scotus and Ramus, as I presented

30 them to him ; and he asked them whether the rest of the tribe were as great dunces as themselves.

I then desired the Governor to call up Descartes and Gassendi, with whom I prevailed to explain their systems to Aristotle. This great philosopher freely acknowledged his own mistakes in natural philosophy, because he proceeded in many things upon conjecture, as all men must do ; and he found, that Gassendi, who had made the doctrine of Epicurus as palatable as he could, and the *vortices* of Descartes, were equally exploded. He predicted the same fate to *attraction*, whereof the present learned are such zealous asserters. He said that new <sup>10</sup> systems of nature were but new fashions, which would vary in every age ; and even those who pretend to demonstrate them from mathematical principles, would flourish but a short period of time, and be out of vogue when that was determined.

I spent five days in conversing with many others of the ancient learned. I saw most of the first Roman emperors. I prevailed on the Governor to call up Eliogabalus's cooks to dress us a dinner, but they could not show us much of their skill, for want of materials. A <sup>20</sup> helot of Agesilaus made us a dish of Spartan broth, but I was not able to get down a second spoonful.

The two gentlemen who conducted me to the island were pressed by their private affairs to return in three days, which I employed in seeing some of the modern dead, who had made the greatest figure for two or three hundred years past in our own and other countries of Europe ; and having been always a great admirer of old illustrious families, I desired the Governor would call up a dozen or two of kings with their ancestors in <sup>30</sup> order for eight or nine generations. But my disappointment was grievous and unexpected. For instead of a long train with royal diadems, I saw in one family two fiddlers, three spruce courtiers, and an Italian prelate. In another, a barber, an abbot, and two car-

dinals. I have too great a veneration for crowned heads to dwell any longer on so nice a subject. But as to counts, marquesses, dukes, earls, and the like, I was not so scrupulous. And I confess it was not without some pleasure that I found myself able to trace the particular features, by which certain families are distinguished, up to their originals. I could plainly discover from whence one family derives a long chin, why a second hath abounded with knaves for two generations, and  
10 fools for two more ; why a third happened to be crack-brained, and a fourth to be sharpers. Whence it came what Polydore Virgil says of a certain great house, *Nec vir fortis, nec femina casta*. How cruelty, falsehood, and cowardice grew to be characteristics by which certain families are distinguished as much as by their coat of arms. Who first brought disease into a noble house, which hath lineally descended in scrofulous tumours to their posterity. Neither could I wonder at all this, when I saw such an interruption of lineages by pages,  
20 lackeys, valets, coachmen, gamesters, captains and pickpockets.

I was chiefly disgusted with modern history. For having strictly examined all the persons of greatest name in the courts of princes for an hundred years past, I found how the world had been misled by prostitute writers, to ascribe the greatest exploits in war to cowards, the wisest counsel to fools, sincerity to flatterers, Roman virtue to betrayers of their country, piety to  
atheists, truth to informers. How many innocent and  
30 excellent persons had been condemned to death or banishment, by the practising of great ministers upon the corruption of judges, and the malice of factions. How many villains had been exalted to the highest places of trust, power, dignity, and profit : how great a share in the motions and events of courts, councils, and



senates might be challenged by parasites and buffoons. How low an opinion I had of human wisdom and integrity, when I was truly informed of the springs and motives of great enterprises and revolutions in the world, and of the contemptible accidents to which they owed their success.

Here I discovered the roguery and ignorance of those who pretend to write *anecdotes*, or secret history, who send so many kings to their graves with a cup of poison ; will repeat the discourse between a prince and chief 10 minister, where no witness was by ; unlock the thoughts and cabinets of ambassadors and secretaries of state, and have the perpetual misfortune to be mistaken. Here I discovered the secret causes of many great events that have surprised the world, how a mistress can govern the back-stairs, the back-stairs a council, and the council a senate. A general confessed in my presence, that he got a victory purely by the force of cowardice and ill conduct ; and an admiral, that for want of proper intelligence, he beat the enemy to whom he intended to 20 betray the fleet. Three kings protested to me, that in their whole reigns they never did once prefer any person of merit, unless by mistake or treachery of some minister in whom they confided ; neither would they do it if they were to live again ; and they showed with great strength of reason that the royal throne could not be supported without corruption, because that positive, confident, restive temper, which virtue infused into man, was a perpetual clog to public business.

I had the curiosity to enquire in a particular manner, 30 by what method great numbers had procured to themselves high titles of honour, and prodigious estates ; and I confined my enquiry to a very modern period : however, without grating upon present times, because I would be sure to give no offence even to foreigners

(for I hope the reader need not be told that I do not in the least intend my own country in what I say upon this occasion), a great number of persons concerned were called up, and upon a very slight examination, discovered such a scene of infamy, that I cannot reflect upon it without some seriousness. Perjury, oppression, subornation, fraud, and the like infirmities, were amongst the most excusable arts they had to mention, and for these I gave, as it was reasonable, great allowance.

10 But when some confessed they owed their greatness and wealth to the betraying their country or their prince; some to poisoning, more to the perverting of justice in order to destroy the innocent; I hope I may be pardoned if these discoveries inclined me a little to abate of that profound veneration which I am naturally apt to pay to persons of high rank, who ought to be treated with the utmost respect due to their sublime dignity, by us their inferiors.

I had often read of some great services done to princes  
20 and states, and desired to see the persons by whom those services were performed. Upon enquiry I was told that their names were to be found on no record, except a few of them whom history hath represented as the vilest rogues and traitors. As to the rest, I had never once heard of them. They all appeared with dejected looks, and in the meanest habit, most of them telling me they died in poverty and disgrace, and the rest on a scaffold or a gibbet.

Among the rest there was one person whose case  
30 appeared a little singular. He had a youth about eighteen years old standing by his side. He told me he had for many years been commander of a ship, and in the sea fight at Actium had the good fortune to break through the enemy's great line of battle, sink three of their capital ships, and take a fourth, which was the

sole cause of Antony's flight, and of the victory that ensued ; that the youth standing by him, his only son, was killed in the action. He added that upon the confidence of some merit, the war being at an end, he went to Rome, and solicited at the court of Augustus to be preferred to a greater ship, whose commander had been killed ; but without any regard to his pretensions, it was given to a youth who had never seen the sea, the son of Libertina, who waited on one of the emperor's mistresses. Returning back to his own vessel, he was <sup>10</sup> charged with neglect of duty, and the ship given to a favourite page of Publicola, the vice-admiral ; whereupon he retired to a poor farm at a great distance from Rome, and there ended his life. I was so curious to know the truth of this story, that I desired Agrippa might be called, who was admiral in that fight. He appeared, and confirmed the whole account, but with much more advantage to the captain, whose modesty had extenuated or concealed a great part of his merit. 20

I was surprised to find corruption grown so high and so quick in that empire, by the force of luxury so lately introduced, which made me less wonder at many parallel cases in other countries, where vices of all kinds have reigned so much longer, and where the whole praise as well as pillage hath been engrossed by the chief commander, who perhaps had the least title to either.

As every person called up made exactly the same appearance he had done in the world, it gave me melancholy reflections to observe how much the race of <sup>30</sup> human kind was degenerate among us, within these hundred years past. How disease under all its consequences and denominations had altered every lineament of an English countenance, shortened the size of bodies, unbraced the nerves, relaxed the sinews and muscles,

introduced a sallow complexion, and rendered the flesh loose and rancid.

I descended so low as to desire that some English yeomen of the old stamp might be summoned to appear, once so famous for the simplicity of their manners, diet and dress, for justice in their dealings, for their true spirit of liberty, for their valour and love of their country. Neither could I be wholly unmoved after comparing the living with the dead, when I considered how all these  
10 pure native virtues were prostituted for a piece of money by their grand-children, who in selling their votes, and managing at elections, have acquired every vice and corruption that can possibly be learned in a court.

## CHAP. IX

*The Author returns to Maldonada. Sails to the kingdom of Luggnagg. The Author confined. He is sent for to court. The manner of his admittance. The King's great lenity to his subjects.*

THE day of our departure being come, I took leave of his Highness the Governor of Glubbdubdrib, and returned with my two companions to Maldonada, where after a fortnight's waiting, a ship was ready to sail for Luggnagg. The two gentlemen, and some others, were so generous and kind as to furnish me with provisions, <sup>10</sup> and see me on board. I was a month in this voyage. We had one violent storm, and were under a necessity of steering westward to get into the trade wind, which holds for above sixty leagues. On the 21st of April, 1709, we sailed into the river of Clumegnig, which is a seaport town, at the south-east point of Luggnagg. We cast anchor within a league of the town, and made a signal for a pilot. Two of them came on board in less than half an hour, by whom we were guided between certain shoals and rocks, which are very dangerous in the <sup>20</sup> passage, to a large basin, where a fleet may ride in safety within a cable's length of the town wall.

Some of our sailors, whether out of treachery or inadvertence, had informed the pilots that I was a stranger and a great traveller, whercof these gave notice to a custom-house officer, by whom I was examined very strictly upon my landing. This officer spoke to me in the language of Balnibarbi, which by the force of much commerce is generally understood in that town, especially

<sup>15</sup> into the river of C. *modern edd.* : in the river C. 1723, 1727; in the river of C. *Faulkner*.

by seamen, and those employed in the customs. I gave him a short account of some particulars, and made my story as plausible and consistent as I could ; but I thought it necessary to disguise my country, and call myself an Hollander, because my intentions were for Japan, and I knew the Dutch were the only Europeans permitted to enter into that kingdom. I therefore told the officer, that having been shipwrecked on the coast of Balnibarbi, and cast on a rock, I was received up into  
10 Laputa, or the Flying Island (of which he had often heard), and was now endeavouring to get to Japan, from whence I might find a convenience of returning to my own country. The officer said I must be confined till he could receive orders from court, for which he would write immediately, and hoped to receive an answer in a fortnight. I was carried to a convenient lodging, with a sentry placed at the door ; however I had the liberty of a large garden, and was treated with humanity enough, being maintained all the time at the King's charge.  
20 I was visited by several persons, chiefly out of curiosity, because it was reported that I came from countries very remote of which they had never heard.

I hired a young man who came in the same ship to be an interpreter ; he was a native of Luggnagg, but had lived some years at Maldonada, and was a perfect master of both languages. By his assistance I was able to hold a conversation with those who came to visit me ; but this consisted only of their questions, and my answers.

The dispatch came from court about the time we  
30 expected. It contained a warrant for conducting me and my retinue to Traldragdubh or Trildrogdrib, for it is pronounced both ways as near as I can remember, by a party of ten horse. All my retinue was that poor lad for an interpreter, whom I persuaded into my service,

and at my humble request, we had each of us a mule to ride on. A messenger was dispatched half a day's journey before us, to give the King notice of my approach, and to desire that his Majesty would please to appoint a day and hour, when it would be his gracious pleasure that I might have the honour to *lick the dust before his footstool*. This is the court style, and I found it to be more than matter of form. For upon my admittance two days after my arrival, I was commanded to crawl on my belly, and lick the floor as I advanced ; but on 10 account of my being a stranger, care was taken to have it made so clean that the dust was not offensive. However, this was a peculiar grace, not allowed to any but persons of the highest rank, when they desire an admittance. Nay, sometimes the floor is strewed with dust on purpose, when the person to be admitted happens to have powerful enemies at court. And I have seen a great lord with his mouth so crammed, that when he had crept to the proper distance from the throne, he was not able to speak a word. Neither is there any remedy, because it is capital for 20 those who receive an audience to spit or wipe their mouths in his Majesty's presence. There is indeed another custom, which I cannot altogether approve of. When the King hath a mind to put any of his nobles to death in a gentle indulgent manner, he commands to have the floor strewed with a certain brown powder, of a deadly composition, which being licked up infallibly kills him in twenty-four hours. But in justice to this prince's great clemency, and the care he hath of his subjects' lives (wherein it were much to be wished that 30 the monarchs of Europe would imitate him), it must be mentioned for his honour, that strict orders are given to have the infected parts of the floor well washed after every such execution ; which if his domestics neglect, they are in danger of incurring his royal displeasure.

I myself heard him give directions, that one of his pages should be whipped, whose turn it was to give notice about washing the floor after an execution, but maliciously had omitted it ; by which neglect a young lord of great hopes coming to an audience, was unfortunately poisoned, although the King at that time had no design against his life. But this good prince was so gracious as to forgive the poor page his whipping, upon promise that he would do so no more, without special  
10 orders.

To return from this digression ; when I had crept within four yards of the throne, I raised myself gently upon my knees, and then striking my forehead seven times on the ground, I pronounced the following words, as they had been taught me the night before, *Ickpling gloffthrobb squutserumm blihop mlashnalt zwin tnodbalk-guffh shliophad gurdlubh asht*. This is the compliment established by the laws of the land for all persons admitted to the King's presence. It may be rendered into  
20 English thus : *May your Celestial Majesty outlive the sun, eleven moons and a half*. To this the King returned some answer, which although I could not understand, yet I replied as I had been directed : *Fluft drin yalerick dwuldom prastrad mirpush*, which properly signifies, *My tongue is in the mouth of my friend*, and by this expression was meant that I desired leave to bring my interpreter ; whereupon the young man already mentioned was accordingly introduced, by whose intervention I answered as many questions as his Majesty could put  
30 in above an hour. I spoke in the Balnibarbian tongue, and my interpreter delivered my meaning in that of Luggnagg.

The King was much delighted with my company, and ordered his *Bliffmarklub*, or High Chamberlain, to appoint a lodging in the court for me and my interpreter,



with a daily allowance for my table, and a large purse of gold for my common expenses.

I stayed three months in this country out of perfect obedience to his Majesty, who was pleased highly to favour me, and made me very honourable offers. But I thought it more consistent with prudence and justice to pass the remainder of my days with my wife and family.

## CHAP. X

*The Luggnaggians commended. A particular description of the Struldbrugs, with many conversations between the Author and some eminent persons upon that subject.*

THE Luggnaggians are a polite and generous people, and although they are not without some share of that pride which is peculiar to all Eastern countries, yet they show themselves courteous to strangers, especially such who are countenanced by the court. I had many  
10 acquaintance among persons of the best fashion, and being always attended by my interpreter, the conversation we had was not disagreeable.

One day in much good company I was asked by a person of quality, whether I had seen any of their *Struldbrugs*, or *Immortals*. I said I had not, and desired he would explain to me what he meant by such an appellation applied to a mortal creature. He told me, that sometimes, though very rarely, a child happened to be born in a family with a red circular spot in the forehead,  
20 directly over the left eyebrow, which was an infallible mark that it should never die. The spot, as he described it, was about the compass of a silver threepence, but in the course of time grew larger, and changed its colour; for at twelve years old it became green, so continued till five and twenty, then turned to a deep blue; at five and forty it grew coal black, and as large as an English shilling, but never admitted any further alteration. He said these births were so rare, that he did not believe there could be above eleven hundred *struldbrugs* of both  
30 sexes in the whole kingdom, of which he computed about fifty in the metropolis, and among the rest a young girl born about three years ago. That these

productions were not peculiar to any family, but a mere effect of chance ; and the children of the *struldbrugs* themselves were equally mortal with the rest of the people.

I freely own myself to have been struck with inexpressible delight upon hearing this account, and the person who gave it me happening to understand the Balnibarbian language, which I spoke very well, I could not forbear breaking out into expressions perhaps a little too extravagant. I cried out as in a rapture : 10  
Happy nation where every child hath at least a chance for being immortal ! Happy people who enjoy so many living examples of ancient virtue, and have masters ready to instruct them in the wisdom of all former ages ! but, happiest beyond all comparison are those excellent *struldbrugs*, who being born exempt from that universal calamity of human nature, have their minds free and disengaged, without the weight and depression of spirits caused by the continual apprehension of death. I discovered my admiration that I had not observed any 20  
of these illustrious persons at court ; the black spot on the forehead being so remarkable a distinction, that I could not have easily overlooked it ; and it was impossible that his Majesty, a most judicious prince, should not provide himself with a good number of such wise and able counsellors. Yet perhaps the virtue of those reverend sages was too strict for the corrupt and libertine manners of a court. And we often find by experience that young men are too opinionative and volatile to be guided by the sober dictates of their seniors. However, 30  
since the King was pleased to allow me access to his royal person, I was resolved upon the very first occasion to deliver my opinion to him on this matter freely and at large, by the help of my interpreter ; and whether he would please to take my advice or no, yet in one

thing I was **determined**, that his Majesty having frequently offered me an establishment in this country, I would with great thankfulness accept the favour, and pass my life here in the conversation of those superior beings the *struldbrugs*, if they would please to admit me.

The gentleman to whom I addressed my discourse, because (as I have already observed) he spoke the language of Balnibarbi, said to me with a sort of a smile, which usually ariseth from pity to the ignorant, that he  
10 was glad of any occasion to keep me among them, and desired my permission to explain to the company what I had spoke. He did so, and they talked together for some time in their own language, whereof I understood not a syllable, neither could I observe by their countenances what impression my discourse had made on them. After a short silence, the same person told me that his friends and mine (so he thought fit to express himself) were very much pleased with the judicious  
20 remarks I had made on the great happiness and advantages of immortal life ; and they were desirous to know in a particular manner, what scheme of living I should have formed to myself, if it had fallen to my lot to have been born a *struldbrug*.

I answered, it was easy to be eloquent on so copious and delightful a subject, especially to me who have been often apt to amuse myself with visions of what I should do if I were a king, a general, or a great lord ; and upon this very case I had frequently run over the whole system how I should employ myself and pass the time if I were  
30 sure to live for ever.

That if it had been my good fortune to come into the world a *struldbrug*, as soon as I could discover my own happiness by understanding the difference between life and death, I would first resolve by all arts and methods whatsoever to procure myself riches. In the pursuit

of which by thrift and management, I might reasonably expect, in about two hundred years to be the wealthiest man in the kingdom. In the second place, I would from my earliest youth apply myself to the study of arts and sciences, by which I should arrive in time to excel all others in learning. Lastly, I would carefully record every action and event of consequence that happened in the public, impartially draw the characters of the several successions of princes and great ministers of state, with my own observations on every point. I would <sup>10</sup> exactly set down the several changes in customs, language, fashions of dress, diet and diversions. By all which acquirements, I should be a living treasury of knowledge and wisdom, and certainly become the oracle of the nation.

I would never marry after threescore, but live in an hospitable manner, yet still on the saving side. I would entertain myself in forming and directing the minds of hopeful young men, by convincing them from my own remembrance, experience and observation, fortified by <sup>20</sup> numerous examples, of the usefulness of virtue in public and private life. But my choice and constant companions should be a set of my own immortal brotherhood, among whom I would elect a dozen from the most ancient down to my own contemporaries. Where any of these wanted fortunes, I would provide them with convenient lodges round my own estate, and have some of them always at my table, only mingling a few of the most valuable among you mortals, whom length of time would harden me to lose with little or no reluctance, <sup>30</sup> and treat your posterity after the same manner; just as a man diverts himself with the annual succession of pinks and tulips in his garden, without regretting the loss of those which withered the preceding year.

These *struldbrugs* and I would mutually communicate

our observations and memorials through the course of time, remark the several gradations by which corruption steals into the world, and oppose it in every step, by giving perpetual warning and instruction to mankind ; which, added to the strong influence of our own example, would probably prevent that continual degeneracy of human nature so justly complained of in all ages.

Add to all this the pleasure of seeing the various revolutions of states and empires, the changes in the  
10 lower and upper world, ancient cities in ruins, and obscure villages become the seats of kings. Famous rivers lessening into shallow brooks, the ocean leaving one coast dry, and overwhelming another ; the discovery of many countries yet unknown. Barbarity overrunning the politest nations, and the most barbarous become civilized. I should then see the discovery of the longitude, the perpetual motion, the universal medicine, and many other great inventions brought to the utmost perfection.

20 What wonderful discoveries should we make in astronomy, by outliving and confirming our own predictions, by observing the progress and returns of comets, with the changes of motion in the sun, moon, and stars.

I enlarged upon many other topics, which the natural desire of endless life and sublunary happiness could easily furnish me with. When I had ended, and the sum of my discourse had been interpreted as before, to the rest of the company, there was a good deal of talk among them in the language of the country, not without  
30 some laughter at my expense. At last the same gentleman who had been my interpreter said he was desired by the rest to set me right in a few mistakes, which I had fallen into through the common imbecility of human nature, and upon that allowance was less answerable for them. That this breed of *struldbrugs* was peculiar

to their country, for there were no such people either in Balnibarbi or Japan, where he had the honour to be ambassador from his Majesty, and found the natives in both those kingdoms very hard to believe that the fact was possible ; and it appeared from my astonishment when he first mentioned the matter to me, that I received it as a thing wholly new, and scarcely to be credited. That in the two kingdoms above mentioned, where during his residence he had conversed very much, he observed long life to be the universal desire and wish <sup>10</sup> of mankind. That whoever had one foot in the grave was sure to hold back the other as strongly as he could. That the oldest had still hopes of living one day longer, and looked on death as the greatest evil, from which nature always prompted him to retreat ; only in this island of Luggnagg the appetite for living was not so eager, from the continual example of the *struldbrugs* before their eyes.

That the system of living contrived by me was unreasonable and unjust, because it supposed a perpetuity <sup>20</sup> of youth, health, and vigour, which no man could be so foolish to hope, however extravagant he may be in his wishes. That the question therefore was not whether a man would choose to be always in the prime of youth, attended with prosperity and health, but how he would pass a perpetual life under all the usual disadvantages which old age brings along with it. For although few men will avow their desires of being immortal upon such hard conditions, yet in the two kingdoms before mentioned of Balnibarbi and Japan, he observed that <sup>20</sup> every man desired to put off death for some time longer, let it approach ever so late ; and he rarely heard of any man who died willingly, except he were incited by the extremity of grief or torture. And he appealed to me whether in those countries I had travelled as well as

my own, I had not observed the same general disposition.

After this preface he gave me a particular account of the *struldbrugs* among them. He said they commonly acted like mortals, till about thirty years old, after which by degrees they grew melancholy and dejected, increasing in both till they came to fourscore. This he learned from their own confession; for otherwise there not being above two or three of that species  
10 born in an age, they were too few to form a general observation by. When they came to fourscore years, which is reckoned the extremity of living in this country, they had not only all the follies and infirmities of other old men, but many more which arose from the dreadful prospect of never dying. They were not only opinionative, peevish, covetous, morose, vain, talkative, but incapable of friendship, and dead to all natural affection, which never descended below their grandchildren. Envy and impotent desires are their prevailing passions.  
20 But these objects against which their envy seems principally directed, are the vices of the younger sort, and the deaths of the old. By reflecting on the former, they find themselves cut off from all possibility of pleasure; and whenever they see a funeral, they lament and repine that others have gone to a harbour of rest, to which they themselves never can hope to arrive. They have no remembrance of anything but what they learned and observed in their youth and middle age, and even that is very imperfect. And for the truth or particulars  
30 of any fact, it is safer to depend on common traditions than upon their best recollections. The least miserable among them appear to be those who turn to dotage, and entirely lose their memories; these meet with more pity and assistance, because they want many bad qualities which abound in others.



If a *struldbrug* happen to marry one of his own kind, the marriage is dissolved of course by the courtesy of the kingdom, as soon as the younger of the two comes to be fourscore. For the law thinks it a reasonable indulgence, that those who are condemned without any fault of their own to a perpetual continuance in the world, should not have their misery doubled by the load of a wife.

As soon as they have completed the term of eighty years, they are looked on as dead in law ; their heirs 10 immediately succeed to their estates, only a small pittance is reserved for their support, and the poor ones are maintained at the public charge. After that period they are held incapable of any employment of trust or profit, they cannot purchase lands or take leases, neither are they allowed to be witnesses in any cause, either civil or criminal, not even for the decision of meers and bounds.

At ninety they lose their teeth and hair, they have at that age no distinction of taste, but eat and drink 20 whatever they can get, without relish or appetite. The diseases they were subject to still continue without increasing or diminishing. In talking they forget the common appellation of things, and the names of persons, even of those who are their nearest friends and relations. For the same reason they never can amuse themselves with reading, because their memory will not serve to carry them from the beginning of a sentence to the end ; and by this defect they are deprived of the only entertainment whereof they might otherwise be capable. 30

The language of this country being always upon the flux, the *struldbrugs* of one age do not understand those of another, neither are they able after two hundred years to hold any conversation (farther than by a few general words) with their neighbours the mortals ; and thus

they lie under the disadvantage of living like foreigners in their own country.

This was the account given me of the *struldbrugs*, as near as I can remember. I afterwards saw five or six of different ages, the youngest not above two hundred years old, who were brought to me at several times by some of my friends ; but although they were told that I was a great traveller, and had seen all the world, they had not the least curiosity to ask me a question ; only  
10 desired I would give them *slumskudask*, or a token of remembrance, which is a modest way of begging, to avoid the law that strictly forbids it, because they are provided for by the public, although indeed with a very scanty allowance.

They are despised and hated by all sorts of people ; when one of them is born, it is reckoned ominous, and their birth is recorded very particularly ; so that you may know their age by consulting the registry, which however hath not been kept above a thousand years  
20 past, or at least hath been destroyed by time or public disturbances. But the usual way of computing how old they are, is by asking them what kings or great persons they can remember, and then consulting history, for infallibly the last prince in their mind did not begin his reign after they were fourscore years old.

They were the most mortifying sight I ever beheld, and the women more horrible than the men. Besides the usual deformities in extreme old age, they acquired an additional ghastliness in proportion to their number  
30 of years, which is not to be described ; and among half a dozen, I soon distinguished which was the eldest, although there was not above a century or two between them.

The reader will easily believe, that from what I had heard and seen, my keen appetite for perpetuity of life

was much abated. I grew heartily ashamed of the pleasing visions I had formed, and thought no tyrant could invent a death into which I would not run with pleasure from such a life. The King heard of all that had passed between me and my friends upon this occasion, and rallied me very pleasantly, wishing I would send a couple of *struldrugs* to my own country, to arm our people against the fear of death; but this it seems is forbidden by the fundamental laws of the kingdom, or else I should have been well content with the trouble and expense of transporting them.

I could not but agree that the laws of this kingdom, relating to the *struldrugs*, were founded upon the strongest reasons, and such as any other country would be under the necessity of enacting in the like circumstances. Otherwise, as avarice is the necessary consequent of old age, those immortals would in time become proprietors of the whole nation, and engross the civil power, which, for want of abilities to manage, must end in the ruin of the public.

## CHAP. XI

*The Author leaves Luggnagg, and sails to Japan. From thence he returns in a Dutch ship to Amsterdam, and from Amsterdam to England.*

I THOUGHT this account of the *struldbrugs* might be some entertainment to the reader, because it seems to be a little out of the common way, at least I do not remember to have met the like in any book of travels that hath come to my hands ; and if I am deceived,  
10 my excuse must be, that it is necessary for travellers, who describe the same country, very often to agree in dwelling on the same particulars, without deserving the censure of having borrowed or transcribed from those who wrote before them.

There is indeed a perpetual commerce between this kingdom and the great empire of Japan, and it is very probable that the Japanese authors may have given some account of the *struldbrugs* ; but my stay in Japan was so short, and I was so entirely a stranger to that  
20 language, that I was not qualified to make any enquiries. But I hope the Dutch upon this notice will be curious and able enough to supply my defects.

His Majesty having often pressed me to accept some employment in his court, and finding me absolutely determined to return to my native country, was pleased to give me his licence to depart, and honoured me with a letter of recommendation under his own hand to the Emperor of Japan. He likewise presented me with four hundred forty-four large pieces of gold (this nation  
30 delighting in even numbers), and a red diamond which I sold in England for eleven hundred pounds.

On the 6th day of May, 1709, I took a solemn leave of

his Majesty and all my friends. This prince was so gracious as to order a guard to conduct me to Glanguenstald, which is a royal port to the south-west part of the island. In six days I found a vessel ready to carry me to Japan, and spent fifteen days in the voyage. We landed at a small port-town called Xamoschi, situated on the south-east part of Japan ; the town lies on the western point, where there is a narrow strait, leading northward into a long arm of the sea, upon the north-west part of which, Yedo the metropolis stands. At landing, 10 I showed the custom-house officers my letter from the King of Luggnagg to his Imperial Majesty. They knew the seal perfectly well ; it was as broad as the palm of my hand. The impression was, *a King lifting up a lame beggar from the earth*. The magistrates of the town hearing of my letter, received me as a public minister. They provided me with carriages and servants, and bore my charges to Yedo, where I was admitted to an audience, and delivered my letter, which was opened with great ceremony, and explained to the Emperor by 20 an interpreter, who then gave me notice by his Majesty's order, that I should signify my request, and, whatever it were, it should be granted for the sake of his royal brother of Luggnagg. This interpreter was a person employed to transact affairs with the Hollanders ; he soon conjectured by my countenance that I was an European, and therefore repeated his Majesty's commands in Low Dutch, which he spoke perfectly well. I answered (as I had before determined) that I was a Dutch merchant, shipwrecked in a very remote country, from whence I 30 travelled by sea and land to Luggnagg, and then took shipping for Japan, where I knew my countrymen often traded, and with some of these I hoped to get an opportunity of returning into Europe : I therefore most humbly entreated his royal favour, to give order that

I should be conducted in safety to Nangasac. To this I added another petition, that for the sake of my patron the King of Luggnagg, his Majesty would condescend to excuse my performing the ceremony imposed on my countrymen, of trampling upon the crucifix, because I had been thrown into his kingdom by my misfortunes, without any intention of trading. When this latter petition was interpreted to the Emperor, he seemed a little surprised, and said he believed I was the first of  
10 my countrymen who ever made any scruple in this point, and that he began to doubt whether I was a real Hollander or no, but rather suspected I must be a Christian. However, for the reasons I had offered, but chiefly to gratify the King of Luggnagg by an uncommon mark of his favour, he would comply with the singularity of my humour; but the affair must be managed with dexterity, and his officers should be commanded to let me pass as it were by forgetfulness. For he assured me, that if the secret should be discovered by my countrymen  
20 the Dutch, they would cut my throat in the voyage. I returned my thanks by the interpreter for so unusual a favour, and some troops being at that time on their march to Nangasac, the commanding officer had orders to convey me safe thither, with particular instructions about the business of the crucifix.

On the 9th day of June, 1709, I arrived at Nangasac, after a very long and troublesome journey. I soon fell into the company of some Dutch sailors belonging to the *Ambogna*, of Amsterdam, a stout ship of 450 tons. I had  
30 lived long in Holland, pursuing my studies at Leyden, and I spoke Dutch well. The seamen soon knew from whence I came last: they were curious to enquire into my voyages and course of life. I made up a story as short and probable as I could, but concealed the greatest part. I knew many persons in Holland; I was able to invent

names for my parents, whom I pretended to be obscure people in the province of Gelderland. I would have given the captain (one Theodorus Vangrult) what he pleased to ask for my voyage to Holland ; but understanding I was a surgeon, he was contented to take half the usual rate, on condition that I would serve him in the way of my calling. Before we took shipping, I was often asked by some of the crew whether I had performed the ceremony above-mentioned. I evaded the question by general answers, that I had satisfied the Emperor and 10 court in all particulars. However, a malicious rogue of a skipper went to an officer, and pointing to me, told him I had not yet trampled on the crucifix : but the other, who had received instructions to let me pass, gave the rascal twenty strokes on the shoulders with a bamboo, after which I was no more troubled with such questions.

Nothing happened worth mentioning in this voyage. We sailed with a fair wind to the Cape of Good Hope, where we stayed only to take in fresh water. On the 10th of April we arrived safe at Amsterdam, having lost 20 only three men by sickness in the voyage, and a fourth who fell from the foremast into the sea, not far from the coast of Guinea. From Amsterdam I soon after set sail for England in a small vessel belonging to that city.

On the 16th of April, 1710, we put in at the Downs. I landed the next morning, and saw once more my native country after an absence of five years and six months complete. I went straight to Redriff, where I arrived the same day at two in the afternoon, and found my wife and family in good health.

# TRAVELS

INTO SEVERAL

Remote Nations

OF THE

# WORLD.

---

*By Captain* LEMUEL GULLIVER.

---

PART IV.

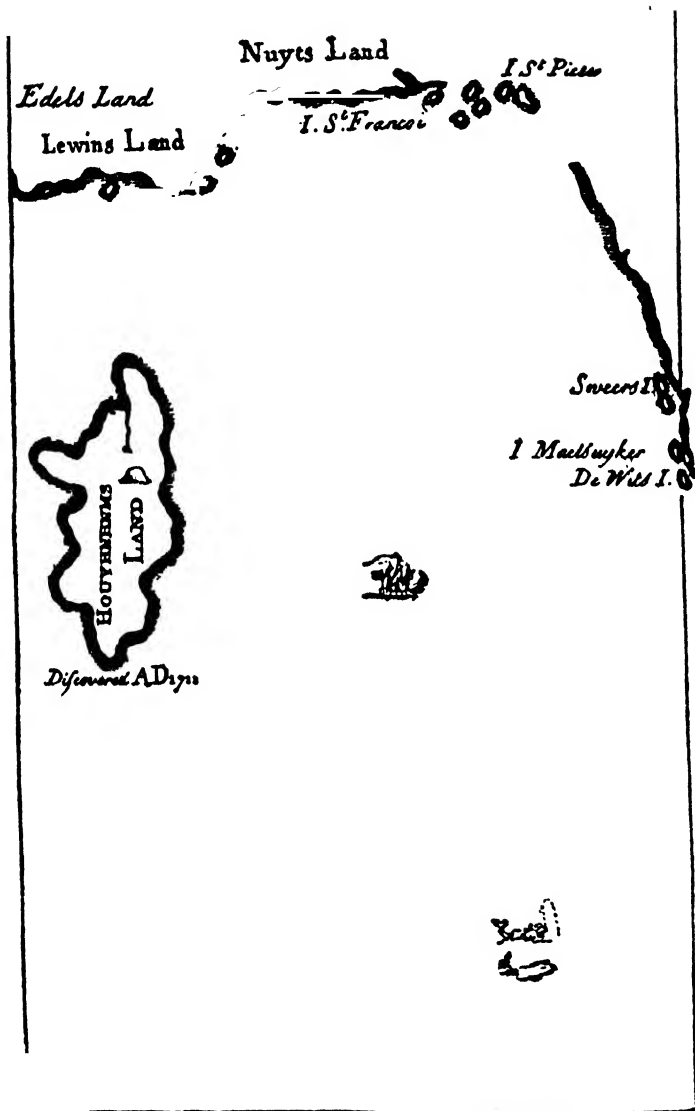
A VOYAGE to the HOUYHNHNMS.

---

L O N D O N :

Printed in the Year, MDCCXXVII.





# PART IV

## A VOYAGE TO THE COUNTRY OF THE HOUYHNNHMS

### CHAP. I

*The Author sets out as Captain of a ship. His men conspire against him, confine him a long time to his cabin, set him on shore in an unknown land. He travels up in the country. The Yahoos, a strange sort of animal, described. The Author meets two Houyhnhnms.*

10 I CONTINUED at home with my wife and children about five months in a very happy condition, if I could have learned the lesson of knowing when I was well. I accepted an advantageous offer made me to be Captain of the *Adventure*, a stout merchantmen of 350 tons : for I understood navigation well, and being grown weary of a surgeon's employment at sea, which however I could exercise upon occasion, I took a skilful young man of that calling, one Robert Purefoy, into my ship. We set sail from Portsmouth upon the seventh day of August,  
20 1710 ; on the fourteenth we met with Captain Pocock of Bristol, at Teneriffe, who was going to the bay of Campechy, to cut logwood. On the sixteenth he was parted from us by a storm ; I heard since my return that his ship foundered, and none escaped but one cabin boy. He was an honest man, and a good sailor, but a little too positive in his own opinions, which was the cause of his destruction, as it hath been of several others. For if he had followed my advice, he might have been safe at home with his family at this time, as well as  
30 myself.

I had several men died in my ship of calentures, so that I was forced to get recruits out of Barbadoes, and the Leeward Islands, where I touched by the direction of the merchants who employed me, which I had soon too much cause to repent: for I found afterwards that most of them had been buccaneers. I had fifty hands on board, and my orders were that I should trade with the Indians in the South Sea, and make what discoveries I could. These rogues whom I had picked up debauched my other men, and they all formed a conspiracy to seize <sup>10</sup> the ship and secure me; which they did one morning, rushing into my cabin, and binding me hand and foot, threatening to throw me overboard, if I offered to stir. I told them I was their prisoner and would submit. This they made me swear to do, and then they unbound me, only fastening one of my legs with a chain near my bed, and placed a sentry at my door with his piece charged, who was commanded to shoot me dead, if I attempted my liberty. They sent me down victuals and drink, and took the government of the ship to <sup>20</sup> themselves. Their design was to turn pirates, and plunder the Spaniards, which they could not do, till they got more men. But first they resolved to sell the goods in the ship, and then go to Madagascar for recruits, several among them having died since my confinement. They sailed many weeks, and traded with the Indians, but I knew not what course they took, being kept a close prisoner in my cabin, and expecting nothing less than to be murdered, as they often threatened me.

Upon the ninth day of May, 1711, one James Welch <sup>30</sup> came down to my cabin; and said he had orders from the Captain to set me ashore. I expostulated with him but in vain; neither would he so much as tell me who their new Captain was. They forced me into the long-boat, letting me put on my best suit of clothes, which

were as good as new, and a small bundle of linen, but no arms except my hanger ; and they were so civil as not to search my pockets, into which I conveyed what money I had, with some other little necessaries. They rowed about a league, and then set me down on a strand. I desired them to tell me what country it was. They all swore they knew no more than myself, but said that the Captain (as they called him) was resolved, after they had sold the lading, to get rid of me in the first place  
 10 where they could discover land. They pushed off immediately, advising me to make haste, for fear of being overtaken by the tide, and so bade me farewell.

In this desolate condition I advanced forward, and soon got upon firm ground, where I sat down on a bank to rest myself, and consider what I had best to do. When I was a little refreshed I went up into the country, resolving to deliver myself to the first savages I should meet, and purchase my life from them by some bracelets, glass rings, and other toys which sailors usually provide  
 20 themselves with in those voyages, and whereof I had some about me. The land was divided by long rows of trees, not regularly planted, but naturally growing ; there was great plenty of grass, and several fields of oats. I walked very circumspectly for fear of being surprised, or suddenly shot with an arrow from behind or on either side. I fell into a beaten road, where I saw many tracks of human feet, and some of cows, but most of horses. At last I beheld several animals in a field, and one or two of the same kind sitting in trees. Their shape was very  
 30 singular and deformed, which a little discomposed me, so that I lay down behind a thicket to observe them better. Some of them coming forward near the place where I lay, gave me an opportunity of distinctly marking their form. Their heads and breasts were covered with a thick hair, some frizzled and others lank ;

they had beards like goats, and a long ridge of hair down their backs and the fore-parts of their legs and feet, but the rest of their bodies were bare, so that I might see their skins, which were of a brown buff colour. They had no tails. They climbed high trees, as nimbly as a squirrel, for they had strong extended claws before and behind, terminating in sharp points, and hooked. They would often spring and bound and leap with prodigious agility. The females were not so large as the males ; they had long lank hair on their heads, but 10 none on their faces, nor any thing more than a sort of down on the rest of their bodies. The hair of both sexes was of several colours, brown, red, black, and yellow. Upon the whole, I never beheld in all my travels so disagreeable an animal, nor one against which I naturally conceived so strong an antipathy. So that thinking I had seen enough, full of contempt and aversion, I got up and pursued the beaten road, hoping it might direct me to the cabin of some Indian. I had not got far when I met one of these creatures full in my way, and coming 20 up directly to me. The ugly monster, when he saw me, distorted several ways every feature of his visage, and stared as at an object he had never seen before ; then approaching nearer, lifted up his fore-paw, whether out of curiosity or mischief, I could not tell. But I drew my hanger, and gave him a good blow with the flat side of it, for I durst not strike him with the edge, fearing the inhabitants might be provoked against me, if they should come to know that I had killed or maimed any of their cattle. When the beast felt the smart, he drew 30 back, and roared so loud that a herd of at least forty came flocking about me from the next field, howling and making odious faces ; but I ran to the body of a tree, and leaning my back against it, kept them off by waving my hanger. Several of this cursed brood getting hold

of the branches behind, leapt up into the tree, from whence they began to cast filth on my head ; however, I escaped pretty well, by sticking close to the stem of the tree, but was almost stifled with the filth, which fell about me on every side.

In the midst of this distress, I observed them all to run away on a sudden as fast as they could, at which I ventured to leave the tree, and pursue the road, wondering what it was that could put them into this  
 10 fright. But looking on my left hand, I saw a horse walking softly in the field ; which my persecutors having sooner discovered, was the cause of their flight. The horse started a little when he came near me, but soon recovering himself, looked full in my face with manifest tokens of wonder ; he viewed my hands and feet, walking round me several times. I would have pursued my journey, but he placed himself directly in the way, yet looking with a very mild aspect, never offering the least violence. We stood gazing at each  
 20 other for some time ; at last I took the boldness to reach my hand towards his neck, with a design to stroke it, using the common style and whistle of jockeys when they are going to handle a strange horse. But this animal seeming to receive my civilities with disdain, shook his head, and bent his brows, softly raising up his right fore-foot to remove my hand. Then he neighed three or four times, but in so different a cadence, that I almost began to think he was speaking to himself in some language of his own.

30 While he and I were thus employed, another horse came up ; who applying himself to the first in a very formal manner, they gently struck each other's right hoof before, neighing several times by turns, and varying the sound, which seemed to be almost articulate. They went some paces off, as if it were to confer together,

walking side by side, backward and forward, like persons deliberating upon some affair of weight, but often turning their eyes towards me, as it were to watch that I might not escape. I was amazed to see such actions and behaviour in brute beasts, and concluded with myself, that if the inhabitants of this country were endued with a proportionable degree of reason, they must needs be the wisest people upon earth. This thought gave me so much comfort, that I resolved to go forward until I could discover some house or village, or <sup>10</sup> meet with any of the natives, leaving the two horses to discourse together as they pleased. But the first, who was a dapple gray, observing me to steal off, neighed after me in so expressive a tone, that I fancied myself to understand what he meant; whereupon I turned back, and came near him, to expect his farther commands, but concealing my fear as much as I could, for I began to be in some pain, how this adventure might terminate; and the reader will easily believe I did not much like my present situation. 20

The two horses came up close to me, looking with great earnestness upon my face and hands. The gray steed rubbed my hat all round with his right fore-hoof, and discomposed it so much that I was forced to adjust it better, by taking it off, and settling it again; whereat both he and his companion (who was a brown bay) appeared to be much surprised; the latter felt the lappet of my coat, and finding it to hang loose about me, they both looked with new signs of wonder. He stroked my right hand, seeming to admire the softness and colour; <sup>30</sup> but he squeezed it so hard between his hoof and his pastern, that I was forced to roar; after which they both touched me with all possible tenderness. They were under great perplexity about my shoes and stockings, which they felt very often, neighing to each other, and

using various gestures, not unlike those of a philosopher, when he would attempt to solve some new and difficult phenomenon.

Upon the whole, the behaviour of these animals was so orderly and rational, so acute and judicious, that I at last concluded they must needs be magicians, who had thus metamorphosed themselves upon some design, and seeing a stranger in the way, were resolved to divert themselves with him ; or perhaps were really amazed at the sight of  
 10 a man so very different in habit, feature, and complexion from those who might probably live in so remote a climate. Upon the strength of this reasoning, I ventured to address them in the following manner : Gentlemen, if you be conjurers, as I have good cause to believe, you can understand any language ; therefore I make bold to let your worships know that I am a poor distressed Englishman, driven by his misfortunes upon your coast, and I entreat one of you, to let me ride upon his back, as if  
 20 he were a real horse, to some house or village where I can be relieved. In return of which favour I will make you a present of this knife and bracelet (taking them out of my pocket). The two creatures stood silent while I spoke, seeming to listen with great attention ; and when I had ended, they neighed frequently towards each other, as if they were engaged in serious conversation. I plainly observed, that their language expressed the passions very well, and the words might with little pains be resolved into an alphabet more easily than the Chinese.

I could frequently distinguish the word *Yahoo*, which  
 30 was repeated by each of them several times ; and although it was impossible for me to conjecture what it meant, yet while the two horses were busy in conversation, I endeavoured to practise this word upon my tongue ; and as soon as they were silent, I boldly pronounced *Yahoo* in a loud voice, imitating, at the



same time, as near as I could, the neighing of a horse ; at which they were both visibly surprised, and the gray repeated the same word twice, as if he meant to teach me the right accent, wherein I spoke after him as well as I could, and found myself perceivably to improve every time, though very far from any degree of perfection. Then the bay tried me with a second word, much harder to be pronounced ; but reducing it to the English orthography, may be spelt thus, *Houyhnhnm*. I did not succeed in this so well as the former, but after two 10 or three farther trials, I had better fortune ; and they both appeared amazed at my capacity.

After some further discourse, which I then conjectured might relate to me, the two friends took their leaves, with the same compliment of striking each other's hoof ; and the gray made me signs that I should walk before him, wherein I thought it prudent to comply, till I could find a better director. When I offered to slacken my pace, he would cry *Hhuun, Hhuun* ; I guessed his meaning, and gave him to understand as well as I could, that I was 20 weary, and not able to walk faster ; upon which he would stand a while to let me rest.

## CHAP. II

*The Author conducted by a Houyhnhnm to his house. The house described. The Author's reception. The food of the Houyhnhnms. The Author in distress for want of meat, is at last relieved. His manner of feeding in this country.*

HAVING travelled about three miles, we came to a long kind of building, made of timber stuck in the ground, and wattled across ; the roof was low, and covered with straw. I now began to be a little comforted, and took  
10 out some toys, which travellers usually carry for presents to the savage Indians of America and other parts, in hopes the people of the house would be thereby encouraged to receive me kindly. The horse made me a sign to go in first ; it was a large room with a smooth clay floor, and a rack and manger extending the whole length on one side. There were three nags, and two mares, not eating, but some of them sitting down upon their hams, which I very much wondered at ; but wondered more to see the rest employed in domestic business. These  
20 seemed but ordinary cattle ; however, this confirmed my first opinion, that a people who could so far civilize brute animals, must needs excel in wisdom all the nations of the world. The gray came in just after, and thereby prevented any ill treatment which the others might have given me. He neighed to them several times in a style of authority, and received answers.

Beyond this room there were three others, reaching the length of the house, to which you passed through three doors, opposite to each other, in the manner of a vista ;  
30 we went through the second room towards the third ; here the gray walked in first, beckoning me to attend :

I waited in the second room, and got ready my presents for the master and mistress of the house : they were two knives, three bracelets of false pearl, a small looking-glass, and a bead necklace. The horse neighed three or four times, and I waited to hear some answers in a human voice, but I heard no other returns than in the same dialect, only one or two a little shriller than his. I began to think that this house must belong to some person of great note among them, because there appeared so much ceremony before I could gain admittance. But, that 10 a man of quality should be served all by horses, was beyond my comprehension. I feared my brain was disturbed by my sufferings and misfortunes : I roused myself, and looked about me in the room where I was left alone ; this was furnished like the first, only after a more elegant manner. I rubbed my eyes often, but the same objects still occurred. I pinched my arms and sides to awake myself, hoping I might be in a dream. I then absolutely concluded, that all these appearances could be nothing else but necromancy and magic. But 20 I had no time to pursue these reflections ; for the gray horse came to the door, and made me a sign to follow him into the third room, where I saw a very comely mare, together with a colt and foal, sitting on their haunches, upon mats of straw, not unartfully made, and perfectly neat and clean.

The mare soon after my entrance, rose from her mat, and coming up close, after having nicely observed my hands and face, gave me a most contemptuous look ; then turning to the horse, I heard the word *Yahoo* often 30 repeated betwixt them ; the meaning of which word I could not then comprehend, although it were the first I had learned to pronounce ; but I was soon better informed, to my everlasting mortification : for the horse beckoning to me with his head, and repeating the word

*Hhuun, Hhuun*, as he did upon the road, which I understood was to attend him, led me out into a kind of court, where was another building at some distance from the house. Here we entered, and I saw three of these detestable creatures, whom I first met after my landing, feeding upon roots, and the flesh of some animals, which I afterwards found to be that of asses and dogs, and now and then a cow dead by accident or disease. They were all tied by the neck with strong withes, fastened to a  
 10 beam ; they held their food between the claws of their forefeet, and tore it with their teeth.

The master horse ordered a sorrel nag, one of his servants, to untie the largest of these animals, and take him into the yard. The beast and I were brought close together, and our countenances diligently compared, both by master and servant, who thereupon repeated several times the word *Yahoo*. My horror and astonishment are not to be described, when I observed in this abominable animal a perfect human figure : the face of  
 20 it indeed was flat and broad, the nose depressed, the lips large, and the mouth wide. But these differences are common to all savage nations, where the lineaments of the countenance are distorted by the natives suffering their infants to lie grovelling on the earth, or by carrying them on their backs, nuzzling with their face against the mother's shoulders. The fore-feet of the Yahoo differed from my hands in nothing else but the length of the nails, the coarseness and brownness of the palms, and the hairiness on the backs. There was the same  
 30 resemblance between our feet, with the same differences, which I knew very well, though the horses did not, because of my shoes and stockings ; the same in every part of our bodies, except as to hairiness and colour, which I have already described.

The great difficulty that seemed to stick with the two

horses, was to see the rest of my body so very different from that of a Yahoo, for which I was obliged to my clothes, whereof they had no conception. The sorrel nag offered me a root, which he held (after their manner, as we shall describe in its proper place) between his hoof and pastern ; I took it in my hand, and having smelt it, returned it to him again as civilly as I could. He brought out of the Yahoo's kennel a piece of ass's flesh, but it smelt so offensively that I turned from it with loathing : he then threw it to the Yahoo, by whom it 18 was greedily devoured. He afterwards showed me a wisp of hay, and a fetlock full of oats ; but I shook my head, to signify that neither of these were food for me. And indeed, I now apprehended that I must absolutely starve, if I did not get to some of my own species ; for as to those filthy Yahoos, although there were few greater lovers of mankind, at that time, than myself, yet I confess I never saw any sensitive being so detestable on all accounts ; and the more I came near them, the more hateful they grew, while I stayed in that country. 20 This the master horse observed by my behaviour, and therefore sent the Yahoo back to his kennel. He then put his fore-hoof to his mouth, at which I was much surprised, although he did it with ease, and with a motion that appeared perfectly natural, and made other signs to know what I would eat ; but I could not return him such an answer as he was able to apprehend ; and if he had understood me, I did not see how it was possible to contrive any way for finding myself nourishment. While we were thus engaged, I observed a cow passing 20 by, whereupon I pointed to her, and expressed a desire to let me go and milk her. This had its effect ; for he led me back into the house, and ordered a mare-servant to open a room, where a good store of milk lay in earthen and wooden vessels, after a very orderly and cleanly

manner. She gave me a large bowl full, of which I drank very heartily, and found myself well refreshed.

About noon I saw coming towards the house a kind of vehicle, drawn like a sledge by four Yahoos. There was in it an old steed, who seemed to be of quality ; he alighted with his hind-feet forward, having by accident got a hurt in his left fore-foot. He came to dine with our horse, who received him with great civility. They dined in the best room, and had oats boiled in milk for  
 10 the second course, which the old horse ate warm, but the rest cold. Their mangers were placed circular in the middle of the room, and divided into several partitions, round which they sat on their haunches upon bosses of straw. In the middle was a large rack with angles answering to every partition of the manger ; so that each horse and mare ate their own hay, and their own mash of oats and milk, with much decency and regularity. The behaviour of the young colt and foal appeared very  
 20 modest, and that of the master and mistress extremely cheerful and complaisant to their guest. The gray ordered me to stand by him, and much discourse passed between him and his friend concerning me, as I found by the stranger's often looking on me, and the frequent repetition of the word *Yahoo*.

I happened to wear my gloves, which the master gray observing, seemed perplexed, discovering signs of wonder what I had done to my fore-feet ; he put his hoof three or four times to them, as if he would signify that I should reduce them to their former shape, which I presently did,  
 30 pulling off both my gloves, and putting them into my pocket. This occasioned farther talk, and I saw the company was pleased with my behaviour, whereof I soon found the good effects. I was ordered to speak the few words I understood, and while they were at dinner the master taught me the names for oats, milk, fire, water,

and some others ; which I could readily pronounce after him, having from my youth a great facility in learning languages.

When dinner was done the master horse took me aside, and by signs and words made me understand the concern that he was in, that I had nothing to eat. Oats in their tongue are called *hlunnh*. This word I pronounced two or three times ; for although I had refused them at first, yet upon second thoughts I considered that I could contrive to make of them a kind of bread, which might 10 be sufficient with milk to keep me alive, till I could make my escape to some other country and to creatures of my own species. The horse immediately ordered a white mare-servant of his family to bring me a good quantity of oats in a sort of wooden tray. These I heated before the fire as well as I could, and rubbed them till the husks came off, which I made a shift to winnow from the grain ; I ground and beat them between two stones, then took water, and made them into a paste or cake, which I toasted at the fire, and ate warm with milk. It was at 20 first a very insipid diet, though common enough in many parts of Europe, but grew tolerable by time ; and having been often reduced to hard fare in my life, this was not the first experiment I had made how easily nature is satisfied. And I cannot but observe, that I never had one hour's sickness while I stayed in this island. 'Tis true, I sometimes made a shift to catch a rabbit or bird by springes made of Yahoos' hairs, and I often gathered wholesome herbs, which I boiled, or ate as salads with my bread, and now and then, for a rarity, 30 I made a little butter, and drank the whey. I was at first at a great loss for salt ; but custom soon reconciled the want of it ; and I am confident that the frequent use of salt among us is an effect of luxury, and was first introduced only as a provocative to drink ; except

where it is necessary for preserving of flesh in long voyages, or in places remote from great markets. For we observe no animal to be fond of it but man : and as to myself, when I left this country, it was a great while before I could endure the taste of it in anything that I ate.

This is enough to say upon the subject of my diet, wherewith other travellers fill their books, as if the readers were personally concerned whether we fared well  
10 or ill. However, it was necessary to mention this matter, lest the world should think it impossible that I could find sustenance for three years in such a country, and among such inhabitants.

When it grew towards evening, the master horse ordered a place for me to lodge in ; it was but six yards from the house, and separated from the stable of the Yahoos. Here I got some straw, and covering myself with my own clothes, slept very sound. But I was in a short time better accommodated, as the reader shall  
20 know hereafter, when I come to treat more particularly about my way of living.



## CHAP. III

*The Author studious to learn the language ; the Houyhnhnm his master assists in teaching him. The language described. Several Houyhnhnms of quality come out of curiosity to see the Author. He gives his master a short account of his voyage.*

My principal endeavour was to learn the language, which my master (for so I shall henceforth call him), and his children, and every servant of his house, were desirous to teach me. For they looked upon it as a prodigy that a brute animal should discover such marks of a rational 10 creature. I pointed to every thing and enquired the name of it, which I wrote down in my journal-book when I was alone, and corrected my bad accent by desiring those of the family to pronounce it often. In this employment, a sorrel nag, one of the under servants, was ready to assist me.

In speaking they pronounce through the nose and throat, and their language approaches nearest to the High Dutch or German of any I know in Europe ; but is much more graceful and significant. The Emperor 20 Charles V made almost the same observation, when he said that if he were to speak to his horse it should be in High Dutch.

The curiosity and impatience of my master were so great, that he spent many hours of his leisure to instruct me. He was convinced (as he afterwards told me) that I must be a Yahoo, but my teachableness, civility, and cleanliness, astonished him ; which were qualities altogether so opposite to those animals. He was most perplexed about my clothes, reasoning sometimes with 30 himself whether they were a part of my body ; for I

never pulled them off till the family were asleep, and got them on before they waked in the morning. My master was eager to learn from whence I came, how I acquired those appearances of reason which I discovered in all my actions, and to know my story from my own mouth which he hoped he should soon do by the great proficiency I made in learning and pronouncing their words and sentences. To help my memory, I formed all I learned into the English alphabet, and writ the words  
 10 down with the translations. This last after some time I ventured to do in my master's presence. It cost me much trouble to explain to him what I was doing ; for the inhabitants have not the least idea of books or literature.

In about ten weeks time I was able to understand most of his questions, and in three months could give him some tolerable answers. He was extremely curious to know from what part of the country I came, and how I was taught to imitate a rational creature ; because the Yahoos  
 20 (whom he saw I exactly resembled in my head, hands, and face, that were only visible), with some appearance of cunning, and the strongest disposition to mischief, were observed to be the most unteachable of all brutes. I answered that I came over the sea from a far place, with many others of my own kind, in a great hollow vessel made of the bodies of trees. That my companions forced me to land on this coast, and then left me to shift for myself. It was with some difficulty, and by the help of many signs, that I brought him to understand me.  
 30 He replied, that I must needs be mistaken, or that I *said the thing which was not*. (For they have no word in their language to express lying or falsehood.) He knew it was impossible that there could be a country beyond the sea, or that a parcel of brutes could move a wooden vessel whither they pleased upon water. He was sure no

Houyhnhnm alive could make such a vessel, nor would trust Yahoos to manage it.

The word *Houyhnhnm*, in their tongue, signifies a horse, and in its etymology, *the perfection of nature*. I told my master, that I was at a loss for expression, but would improve as fast as I could ; and hoped in a short time I should be able to tell him wonders : he was pleased to direct his own mare, his colt and foal, and the servants of the family, to take all opportunities of instructing me, and every day for two or three hours he was at the same 10 pains himself. Several horses and mares of quality in the neighbourhood came often to our house upon the report spread of a wonderful Yahoo, that could speak like a Houyhnhnm, and seemed in his words and actions to discover some glimmerings of reason. These delighted to converse with me : they put many questions, and received such answers as I was able to return. By all these advantages I made so great a progress that in five months from my arrival I understood whatever was spoke, and could express myself tolerably well. 20

The Houyhnhnms who came to visit my master out of a design of seeing and talking with me, could hardly believe me to be a right Yahoo, because my body had a different covering from others of my kind. They were astonished to observe me without the usual hair or skin, except on my head, face, and hands ; but I discovered that secret to my master, upon an accident which happened about a fortnight before.

I have already told the reader, that every night when the family were gone to bed it was my custom to strip 30 and cover myself with my clothes. It happened one morning early that my master sent for me by the sorrel nag, who was his valet ; when he came I was fast asleep, my clothes fallen off on one side, and my shirt above my waist. I awaked at the noise he made, and observed

him to deliver his message in some disorder ; after which he went to my master, and in a great fright gave him a very confused account of what he had seen. This I presently discovered ; for going as soon as I was dressed to pay my attendance upon his Honour, he asked me the meaning of what his servant had reported, that I was not the same thing when I slept as I appeared to be at other times.

I had hitherto concealed the secret of my dress, in  
 10 order to distinguish myself as much as possible from that cursed race of Yahoos ; but now I found it in vain to do so any longer. Besides, I considered that my clothes and shoes would soon wear out, which already were in a declining condition, and must be supplied by some contrivance from the hides of Yahoos or other brutes ; whereby the whole secret would be known. I therefore told my master that in the country from whence I came those of my kind always covered their  
 20 bodies with the hairs of certain animals prepared by art, as well for decency as to avoid the inclemencies of air, both hot and cold ; of which, as to my own person, I would give him immediate conviction, if he pleased to command me. He said my discourse was all very strange ; but however I might do as I pleased. Whereupon I first unbuttoned my coat and pulled it off. I did the same with my waistcoat ; I drew off my shoes, stockings, and breeches. I let my shirt down to my waist, fastening it like a girdle about my middle.

My master observed the whole performance with great  
 30 signs of curiosity and admiration. He took up all my clothes in his pastern, one piece after another, and examined them diligently ; he then stroked my body very gently and looked round me several times, after which he said it was plain I must be a perfect Yahoo ; but that I differed very much from the rest of my

species, in the softness and whiteness and smoothness of my skin, my want of hair in several parts of my body, the shape and shortness of my claws behind and before, and my affectation of walking continually on my two hinder feet. He desired to see no more, and gave me leave to put on my clothes again, for I was shuddering with cold.

I expressed my uneasiness at his giving me so often the appellation of Yahoo, an odious animal for which I had so utter a hatred and contempt. I begged he would 10 forbear applying that word to me, and take the same order in his family, and among his friends whom he suffered to see me. I requested likewise that the secret of my having a false covering to my body might be known to none but himself, at least as long as my present clothing should last ; for as to what the sorrel nag his valet had observed, his Honour might command him to conceal it.

All this my master very graciously consented to, and thus the secret was kept till my clothes began to wear 20 out, which I was forced to supply by several contrivances that shall hereafter be mentioned. In the meantime he desired I would go on with my utmost diligence to learn their language, because he was more astonished at my capacity for speech and reason than at the figure of my body, whether it were covered or no ; adding that he waited with some impatience to hear the wonders which I promised to tell him.

From thenceforward he doubled the pains he had been at to instruct me ; he brought me into all company, 30 and made them treat me with civility, because, as he told them privately, this would put me into good humour and make me more diverting.

Every day when I waited on him, beside the trouble he was at in teaching, he would ask me several questions

concerning myself, which I answered as well as I could ; and by these means he had already received some general ideas, though very imperfect. It would be tedious to relate the several steps by which I advanced to a more regular conversation : but the first account I gave of myself in any order and length, was to this purpose :

That I came from a very far country, as I already had attempted to tell him, with about fifty more of my own  
 10 species ; that we travelled upon the seas, in a great hollow vessel made of wood, and larger than his Honour's house. I described the ship to him in the best terms I could, and explained by the help of my handkerchief displayed, how it was driven forward by the wind. That upon a quarrel among us, I was set on shore on this coast, where I walked forward without knowing whither, till he delivered me from the persecution of those execrable Yahoos. He asked me who made the ship, and how it was possible that the Houyhnhnms of  
 20 my country would leave it to the management of brutes ? My answer was that I durst proceed no further in my relation, unless he would give me his word and honour that he would not be offended, and then I would tell him the wonders I had so often promised. He agreed ; and I went on by assuring him that the ship was made by creatures like myself, who in all the countries I had travelled, as well as in my own, were the only governing, rational animals ; and that upon my arrival hither I was as much astonished to see the Houyhnhnms act like  
 30 rational beings, as he or his friends could be in finding some marks of reason in a creature he was pleased to call a Yahoo, to which I owned my resemblance in every part, but couldnot account for their degenerate and brutal nature. I said farther that if good fortune ever restored me to my native country, to relate my travels

hither, as I resolved to do, every body would believe that I *said the thing which was not* ; that I invented the story out of my own head ; and with all possible respect to himself, his family and friends, and under his promise of not being offended, our countrymen would hardly think it probable, that a Houyhnhnm should be the presiding creature of a nation, and a Yahoo the brute.

## CHAP. IV

*The Houyhnhnms' notion of truth and falsehood. The Author's discourse disapproved by his master. The Author gives a more particular account of himself, and the accidents of his voyage.*

MY master heard me with great appearances of uneasiness in his countenance, because *doubting*, or *not believing*, are so little known in this country, that the inhabitants cannot tell how to behave themselves under such circumstances. And I remember in frequent dis-  
10 courses with my master concerning the nature of man-  
hood in other parts of the world, having occasion to talk of *lying* and *false representation*, it was with much difficulty that he comprehended what I meant, although he had otherwise a most acute judgment. For he argued thus : that the use of speech was to make us understand one another, and to receive information of facts ; now if any one *said the thing which was not*, these ends were defeated ; because I cannot properly be said to understand him ; and I am so far from receiving information,  
10 that he leaves me worse than in ignorance, for I am led to believe a thing black when it is white, and short when it is long. And these were all the notions he had concerning that faculty of *lying*, so perfectly well understood among human creatures.

To return from this digression ; when I asserted that the Yahoos were the only governing animals in my country, which my master said was altogether past his conception, he desired to know whether we had Houyhnhnms among us, and what was their employ-  
20 ment : I told him we had great numbers, that in summer they grazed in the fields, and in winter were kept in houses, with hay and oats, where Yahoo servants were



employed to rub their skins smooth, comb their manes, pick their feet, serve them with food, and make their beds. I understand you well, said my master, it is now very plain, from all you have spoken, that whatever share of reason the Yahoos pretend to, the Houyhnhnms are your masters ; I heartily wish our Yahoos would be so tractable. I begged his Honour would please to excuse me from proceeding any farther, because I was very certain that the account he expected from me would be highly displeasing. But he insisted in commanding <sup>10</sup> me to let him know the best and the worst : I told him he should be obeyed. I owned that the Houyhnhnms among us, whom we called horses, were the most generous and comely animals we had, that they excelled in strength and swiftness ; and when they belonged to persons of quality, employed in travelling, racing, or drawing chariots, they were treated with much kindness and care, till they fell into diseases or became foundered in the feet ; and then they were sold, and used to all kind of drudgery till they died ; after which their skins were <sup>20</sup> stripped and sold for what they were worth, and their bodies left to be devoured by dogs and birds of prey. But the common race of horses had not so good fortune, being kept by farmers and carriers, and other mean people, who put them to great labour, and fed them worse. I described, as well as I could, our way of riding, the shape and use of a bridle, a saddle, a spur, and a whip, of harness and wheels. I added that we fastened plates of a certain hard substance called iron at the bottom of their feet, to preserve their hoofs from being broken by <sup>30</sup> the stony ways on which we often travelled.

My master, after some expressions of great indignation, wondered how we dared to venture upon a Houyhnhnm's back, for he was sure that the weakest servant in his house would be able to shake off the strongest Yahoo,

or by lying down and rolling on his back squeeze the brute to death. I answered that our horses were trained up from three or four years old to the several uses we intended them for; that if any of them proved intolerably vicious, they were employed for carriages; that they were severely beaten while they were young, for any mischievous tricks; that they were indeed sensible of rewards and punishments; but his Honour would please to consider, that they had not the least  
 10 tincture of reason any more than the Yahoos in this country.

It put me to the pains of many circumlocutions to give my master a right idea of what I spoke; for their language doth not abound in variety of words, because their wants and passions are fewer than among us. But it is impossible to represent his noble resentment at our savage treatment of the Houyhnhnm race. He said if it were possible there could be any country where Yahoos alone were endued with reason, they certainly must be  
 20 the governing animal, because reason will in time always prevail against brutal strength. But considering the frame of our bodies, and especially of mine, he thought no creature of equal bulk was so ill contrived, for employing that reason in the common offices of life; whereupon he desired to know whether those among whom I lived resembled me or the Yahoos of his country. I assured him, that I was as well shaped as most of my age; but the younger and the females were much more soft and tender, and the skins of the  
 30 latter generally as white as milk. He said I differed indeed from other Yahoos, being much more cleanly, and not altogether so deformed, but in point of real advantage he thought I differed for the worse. That my nails were of no use either to my fore or hinder-feet; as to my fore-feet, he could not properly call them by

that name, for he never observed me to walk upon them ; that they were too soft to bear the ground ; that I generally went with them uncovered, neither was the covering I sometimes wore on them of the same shape or so strong as that on my feet behind. That I could not walk with any security, for if either of my hinder-feet slipped, I must inevitably fall. He then began to find fault with other parts of my body, the flatness of my face, the prominence of my nose, my eyes placed directly in front, so that I could not look on either side without 10 turning my head ; that I was not able to feed myself without lifting one of my fore-feet to my mouth ; and therefore nature had placed those joints to answer that necessity. He knew not what could be the use of those several clefts and divisions in my feet behind ; that these were too soft to bear the hardness and sharpness of stones without a covering made from the skin of some other brute ; that my whole body wanted a fence against heat and cold, which I was forced to put on and off every day with tediousness and trouble. And lastly that he 20 observed every animal in this country naturally to abhor the Yahoos, whom the weaker avoided and the stronger drove from them. So that supposing us to have the gift of reason, he could not see how it were possible to cure that natural antipathy which every creature discovered against us ; nor consequently, how we could tame and render them serviceable. However, he would, (as he said,) debate the matter no farther, because he was more desirous to know my own story, the country where I was born, and the several actions and events of my life 30 before I came hither.

I assured him how extremely desirous I was that he should be satisfied on every point ; but I doubted much whether it would be possible for me to explain myself on several subjects whereof his Honour could have no con-

ception, because I saw nothing in his country to which I could resemble them. That however I would do my best, and strive to express myself by similitudes, humbly desiring his assistance when I wanted proper words ; which he was pleased to promise me.

I said my birth was of honest parents in an island called England, which was remote from this country, as many days' journey as the strongest of his Honour's servants could travel in the annual course of the sun.

10 That I was bred a surgeon, whose trade it is to cure wounds and hurts in the body, got by accident or violence ; that my country was governed by a female man, whom we called a Queen. That I left it to get riches, whereby I might maintain myself and family when I should return. That in my last voyage I was Commander of the ship, and had about fifty Yahoos under me, many of which died at sea, and I was forced to supply them by others picked out from several nations. That our ship was twice in danger of being sunk ; the first

20 time by a great storm, and the second, by striking against a rock. Here my master interposed, by asking me how I could persuade strangers out of different countries to venture with me, after the losses I had sustained, and the hazards I had run. I said they were fellows of desperate fortunes, forced to fly from the places of their birth, on account of their poverty or their crimes. Some were undone by lawsuits ; others spent all they had in drinking and gaming ; others fled for treason ; many for murder, theft, poisoning, robbery, perjury, forgery,

30 coining false money, for flying from their colours, or deserting to the enemy, and most of them had broken prison ; none of these durst return to their native countries for fear of being hanged, or of starving in a jail ; and therefore were under the necessity of seeking a livelihood in other places.

During this discourse my master was pleased to interrupt me several times ; I had made use of many circumlocutions in describing to him the nature of the several crimes, for which most of our crew had been forced to fly their country. This labour took up several days' conversation before he was able to comprehend me. He was wholly at a loss to know what could be the use or necessity of practising those vices. To clear up which I endeavoured to give some ideas of the desire of power and riches, of the terrible effects of lust, intemperance, 10 malice and envy. All this I was forced to define and describe by putting of cases, and making of suppositions. After which, like one whose imagination was struck with something never seen or heard of before, he would lift up his eyes with amazement and indignation. Power, government, war, law, punishment, and a thousand other things had no terms wherein that language could express them, which made the difficulty almost insuperable to give my master any conception of what I meant. But being of an excellent understanding, much improved by 20 contemplation and converse, he at last arrived at a competent knowledge of what human nature in our parts of the world is capable to perform, and desired I would give him some particular account of that land which we call Europe, but especially of my own country.

## CHAP. V

*The Author, at his master's commands, informs him of the state of England. The causes of war among the princes of Europe. The Author begins to explain the English constitution.*

THE reader may please to observe, that the following extract of many conversations I had with my master, contains a summary of the most material points which were discoursed at several times for above two years ; his Honour often desiring fuller satisfaction as I farther  
10 improved in the Houyhnhnm tongue. I laid before him, as well as I could, the whole state of Europe ; I discoursed of trade and manufactures, of arts and sciences ; and the answers I gave to all the questions he made, as they arose upon several subjects, were a fund of conversation not to be exhausted. But I shall here only set down the substance of what passed between us concerning my own country, reducing it into order as well as I can, without any regard to time or other circumstances, while I strictly adhere to truth. My only concern is that I  
20 shall hardly be able to do justice to my master's arguments and expressions, which must needs suffer by my want of capacity, as well as by a translation into our barbarous English.

In obedience therefore to his Honour's commands, I related to him the Revolution under the Prince of Orange ; the long war with France entered into by the said prince, and renewed by his successor the present Queen, wherein the greatest powers of Christendom were engaged, and which still continued : I computed at his  
30 request that about a million of Yahoos might have been killed in the whole progress of it, and perhaps a hundred or more cities taken, and thrice as many ships burnt or sunk.

He asked me what were the usual causes or motives

that made one country go to war with another. I answered they were innumerable, but I should only mention a few of the chief. Sometimes the ambition of princes, who never think they have land or people enough to govern ; sometimes the corruption of ministers, who engage their master in a war in order to stifle or divert the clamour of the subjects against their evil administration. Difference in opinions hath cost many millions of lives : for instance, whether flesh be bread, or bread be flesh ; whether the juice of a certain berry be 10 blood or wine ; whether whistling be a vice or a virtue ; whether it be better to kiss a post, or throw it into the fire ; what is the best colour for a coat, whether black, white, red, or gray ; and whether it should be long or short, narrow or wide, dirty or clean ; with many more. Neither are any wars so furious and bloody, or of so long continuance, as those occasioned by difference in opinion, especially if it be in things indifferent.

Sometimes the quarrel between two princes is to decide which of them shall dispossess a third of his 20 dominions, where neither of them pretend to any right. Sometimes one prince quarrelleth with another, for fear the other should quarrel with him. Sometimes a war is entered upon, because the enemy is too strong, and sometimes because he is too weak. Sometimes our neighbours want the things which we have, or have the things which we want ; and we both fight, till they take ours or give us theirs. It is a very justifiable cause of a war to invade a country after the people have been wasted by famine, destroyed by pestilence, or embroiled 30 by factions among themselves. It is justifiable to enter into war against our nearest ally, when one of his towns lies convenient for us, or a territory of land, that would render our dominions round and complete. If a prince sends forces into a nation where the people are poor and

ignorant, he may lawfully put half of them to death, and make slaves of the rest, in order to civilize and reduce them from their barbarous way of living. It is a very kingly, honourable, and frequent practice, when one prince desires the assistance of another to secure him against an invasion, that the assistant, when he hath driven out the invader, should seize on the dominions himself, and kill, imprison or banish the prince he came to relieve. Alliance by blood or marriage is a  
 10 frequent cause of war between princes ; and the nearer the kindred is, the greater is their disposition to quarrel : poor nations are hungry, and rich nations are proud ; and pride and hunger will ever be at variance. For these reasons, the trade of a soldier is held the most honourable of all others ; because a soldier is a Yahoo hired to kill in cold blood as many of his own species, who have never offended him, as possibly he can.

There is likewise a kind of beggarly princes in Europe, not able to make war by themselves, who hire out their  
 20 troops to richer nations, for so much a day to each man ; of which they keep three fourths to themselves, and it is the best part of their maintenance ; such are those in Germany and other northern parts of Europe.

What you have told me, (said my master) upon the subject of war, does indeed discover most admirably the effects of that reason you pretend to : however, it is happy that the shame is greater than the danger ; and that nature hath left you utterly incapable of doing much mischief.

30 For your mouths lying flat with your faces, you can hardly bite each other to any purpose, unless by consent. Then as to the claws upon your feet before and behind, they are so short and tender, that one of our Yahoos would drive a dozen of yours before him. And therefore in recounting the numbers of those who have been killed



in battle, I cannot but think that you have *said the thing which is not*.

I could not forbear shaking my head and smiling a little at his ignorance. And being no stranger to the art of war, I gave him a description of cannons, culverins, muskets, carabines, pistols, bullets, powder, swords, bayonets, battles, sieges, retreats, attacks, undermines, countermines, bombardments, sea fights ; ships sunk with a thousand men, twenty thousand killed on each side ; dying groans, limbs flying in the air, smoke, noise, 10 confusion, trampling to death under horses' feet ; flight, pursuit, victory ; fields strewed with carcasses left for food to dogs, and wolves, and birds of prey ; plundering, stripping, burning and destroying. And to set forth the valour of my own dear countrymen, I assured him that I had seen them blow up a hundred enemies at once in a siege, and as many in a ship, and beheld the dead bodies come down in pieces from the clouds, to the great diversion of the spectators.

I was going on to more particulars, when my master 20 commanded me silence. He said whoever understood the nature of Yahoos might easily believe it possible for so vile an animal to be capable of every action I had named, if their strength and cunning equalled their malice. But as my discourse had increased his abhorrence of the whole species, so he found it gave him a disturbance in his mind, to which he was wholly a stranger before. He thought his ears being used to such abominable words, might by degrees admit them with less detestation. That although he hated the Yahoos of this 30 country, yet he no more blamed them for their odious qualities, than he did a *gnnayah* (a bird of prey) for its cruelty, or a sharp stone for cutting his hoof. But when a creature pretending to reason could be capable of such enormities, he dreaded lest the corruption of that faculty

might be worse than brutality itself. He seemed therefore confident, that instead of reason, we were only possessed of some quality fitted to increase our natural vices; as the reflection from a troubled stream returns the image of an ill-shapen body, not only larger, but more distorted.

He added, that he had heard too much upon the subject of war, both in this and some former discourses. There was another point which a little perplexed him at  
 10 present. I had informed him, that some of our crew left their country on account of being ruined by *Law*; that I had already explained the meaning of the word; but he was at a loss how it should come to pass, that the law which was intended for every man's preservation, should be any man's ruin. Therefore he desired to be farther satisfied what I meant by law, and the dispensers thereof, according to the present practice in my own country; because he thought nature and reason were sufficient guides for a reasonable animal, as we pretended to be, in  
 20 showing us what we ought to do, and what to avoid.

I assured his Honour that law was a science wherein I had not much conversed, further than by employing advocates, in vain, upon some injustices that had been done me: however, I would give him all the satisfaction I was able.

I said there was a society of men among us, bred up from their youth in the art of proving by words multiplied for the purpose, that white is black, and black is white, according as they are paid. To this society all the rest  
 30 of the people are slaves. For example, if my neighbour hath a mind to my cow, he hires a lawyer to prove that he ought to have my cow from me. I must then hire another to defend my right, it being against all rules of law that any man should be allowed to speak for himself. Now in this case I who am the right owner lie under two

great disadvantages. First, my lawyer, being practised almost from his cradle in defending falsehood, is quite out of his element when he would be an advocate for justice, which as an office unnatural, he always attempts with ill-will. The second disadvantage is that my lawyer must proceed with great caution, or else he will be reprimanded by the judges, and abhorred by his brethren, as one that would lessen the practice of the law. And therefore I have but two methods to preserve my cow. The first is to gain over my adversary's lawyer 10 with a double fee, who will then betray his client by insinuating that he hath justice on his side. The second way is for my lawyer to make my cause appear as unjust as he can, by allowing the cow to belong to my adversary : and this, if it be skilfully done, will certainly bespeak the favour of the bench.

Now, your Honour is to know that these judges are persons appointed to decide all controversies of property, as well as for the trial of criminals, and picked out from the most dexterous lawyers, who are grown old or lazy, 20 and having been biassed all their lives against truth and equity, are under such a fatal necessity of favouring fraud, perjury, and oppression, that I have known several of them refuse a large bribe from the side where justice lay, rather than injure the faculty, by doing any thing unbecoming their nature or their office.

It is a maxim among these lawyers, that whatever hath been done before may legally be done again : and therefore they take special care to record all the decisions formerly made against common justice and the general 30 reason of mankind. These, under the name of *precedents*, they produce as authorities, to justify the most iniquitous opinions ; and the judges never fail of directing accordingly.

In pleading they studiously avoid entering into the merits of the cause, but are loud, violent, and tedious in

dwelling upon all circumstances which are not to the purpose. For instance, in the case already mentioned, they never desire to know what claim or title my adversary hath to my cow ; but whether the said cow were red or black, her horns long or short, whether the field I graze her in be round or square, whether she was milked at home or abroad, what diseases she is subject to, and the like ; after which they consult precedents, adjourn the cause from time to time, and in ten, twenty, or thirty years,  
 10 come to an issue.

It is likewise to be observed, that this society hath a peculiar cant and jargon of their own, that no other mortal can understand, and wherein all their laws are written, which they take special care to multiply ; whereby they have wholly confounded the very essence of truth and falsehood, of right and wrong ; so that it will take thirty years to decide whether the field left me by my ancestors for six generations belongs to me, or to a stranger three hundred miles off.

20 In the trial of persons accused for crimes against the state the method is much more short and commendable : the judge first sends to sound the disposition of those in power, after which he can easily hang or save the criminal, strictly preserving all due forms of law.

Here my master interposing, said it was a pity that creatures endowed with such prodigious abilities of mind as these lawyers, by the description I gave of them, must certainly be, were not rather encouraged to be instructors of others in wisdom and knowledge. In answer to which  
 30 I assured his Honour that in all points out of their own trade, they were the most ignorant and stupid generation among us, the most despicable in common conversation, avowed enemies to all knowledge and learning, and equally disposed to pervert the general reason of mankind in every other subject of discourse, as in that of their own profession.

## CHAP. VI

*A continuation of the state of England under Queen Anne. The character of a first minister in the courts of Europe.*

My master was yet wholly at a loss to understand what motives could incite this race of lawyers to perplex, disquiet, and weary themselves, and engage in a confederacy of injustice, merely for the sake of injuring their fellow-animals ; neither could he comprehend what I meant in saying they did it for hire. Whereupon I was at much pains to describe to him the use of money, 10 the materials it was made of, and the value of the metals ; that when a Yahoo had got a great store of this precious substance, he was able to purchase whatever he had a mind to ; the finest clothing, the noblest houses, great tracts of land, the most costly meats and drinks, and have his choice of the most beautiful females. Therefore since money alone was able to perform all these feats, our Yahoos thought they could never have enough of it to spend or save, as they found themselves inclined from their natural bent either to profusion or avarice. That 20 the rich man enjoyed the fruit of the poor man's labour, and the latter were a thousand to one in proportion to the former. That the bulk of our people were forced to live miserably, by labouring every day for small wages to make a few live plentifully. I enlarged myself much on these and many other particulars to the same purpose ; but his Honour was still to seek ; for he went upon a supposition that all animals had a title to their share in the productions of the earth, and especially those who presided over the rest. Therefore 30 he desired I would let him know what these costly

meats were, and how any of us happened to want them. Whereupon I enumerated as many sorts as came into my head, with the various methods of dressing them, which could not be done without sending vessels by sea to every part of the world, as well for liquors to drink, as for sauces, and innumerable other conveniences. I assured him that this whole globe of earth must be at least three times gone round, before one of our better female Yahoos could get her breakfast or a cup to put it  
 10 in. He said that must needs be a miserable country which cannot furnish food for its own inhabitants. But what he chiefly wondered at, was how such vast tracts of ground as I described should be wholly without fresh water, and the people put to the necessity of sending over the sea for drink. I replied that England (the dear place of my nativity) was computed to produce three times the quantity of food, more than its inhabitants are able to consume, as well as liquors extracted from grain, or pressed out of the fruit of certain trees, which  
 20 made excellent drink, and the same proportion in every other convenience of life. But, in order to feed the luxury and intemperance of the males, and the vanity of the females, we sent away the greatest part of our necessary things to other countries, from whence in return we brought the materials of diseases, folly, and vice, to spend among ourselves. Hence it follows of necessity that vast numbers of our people are compelled to seek their livelihood by begging, robbing, stealing, cheating, forswearing, flattering, suborning, forging,  
 30 gaming, lying, fawning, hectoring, voting, scribbling, star-gazing, poisoning, canting, libelling, freethinking, and the like occupations : every one of which terms, I was at much pains to make him understand.

That wine was not imported among us from foreign countries, to supply the want of water or other drinks,

but because it was a sort of liquid which made us merry by putting us out of our senses, diverted all melancholy thoughts, begat wild extravagant imaginations in the brain, raised our hopes, and banished our fears, suspended every office of reason for a time, and deprived us of the use of our limbs, till we fell into a profound sleep ; although it must be confessed, that we always awaked sick and dispirited and that the use of this liquor filled us with diseases, which made our lives uncomfortable and short.

10

But beside all this, the bulk of our people supported themselves by furnishing the necessities or conveniences of life to the rich, and to each other. For instance, when I am at home and dressed as I ought to be, I carry on my body the workmanship of an hundred tradesmen ; the building and furniture of my house employ as many more, and five times the number to adorn my wife.

I was going on to tell him of another sort of people, who get their livelihood by attending the sick, having upon some occasions informed his Honour that many 20 of my crew had died of diseases. But here it was with the utmost difficulty that I brought him to apprehend what I meant. He could easily conceive that a Houyhnhnm grew weak and heavy a few days before his death, or by some accident might hurt a limb. But that nature, who works all things to perfection, should suffer any pains to breed in our bodies, he thought impossible, and desired to know the reason of so unaccountable an evil. I told him we fed on a thousand things which operated contrary to each other ; that we ate when 30 we were not hungry, and drank without the provocation of thirst ; that we sat whole nights drinking strong liquors without eating a bit, which disposed us to sloth, inflamed our bodies, and precipitated or prevented digestion. That many diseases were propagated from

father to son, so that great numbers come into the world with complicated maladies upon them ; that it would be endless to give him a catalogue of all diseases incident to human bodies ; for they could not be fewer than five or six hundred, spread over every limb and joint ; in short, every part, external and intestine, having diseases appropriated to them. To remedy which there was a sort of people bred up among us, in the profession or pretence of curing the sick. And because I had some  
 10 skill in the faculty, I would in gratitude to his Honour let him know the whole mystery and method by which they proceed.

But besides real diseases we are subject to many that are only imaginary, for which the physicians have invented imaginary cures ; these have their several names, and so have the drugs that are proper for them, and with these our female Yahoos are always infested.

One great excellency in this tribe is their skill at prognostics, wherein they seldom fail ; their predictions  
 20 in real diseases, when they rise to any degree of malignity, generally portending death, which is always in their power, when recovery is not : and therefore, upon any unexpected signs of amendment, after they have pronounced their sentence, rather than be accused as false prophets, they know how to approve their sagacity to the world by a seasonable dose.

They are likewise of special use to husbands and wives who are grown weary of their mates, to eldest sons, to great ministers of state, and often to princes.

30 I had formerly upon occasion discoursed with my master upon the nature of government in general, and particularly of our own excellent constitution, deservedly the wonder and envy of the whole world. But having here accidentally mentioned a minister of state, he commanded me some time after to inform



him what species of Yahoo I particularly meant by that appellation.

I told him that a First or Chief Minister of State, who was the person I intended to describe, was a creature wholly exempt from joy and grief, love and hatred, pity and anger ; at least made use of no other passions but a violent desire of wealth, power, and titles ; that he applies his words to all uses, except to the indication of his mind ; that he never tells a truth but with an intent that you should take it for a lie ; nor a lie but <sup>10</sup> with a design that you should take it for a truth ; that those he speaks worst of behind their backs are in the surest way of preferment ; and whenever he begins to praise you to others or to yourself, you are from that day forlorn. The worst mark you can receive is a promise, especially when it is confirmed with an oath ; after which every wise man retires, and gives over all hopes.

There are three methods by which a man may rise to be chief minister : the first is by knowing how with prudence to dispose of a daughter, or a sister : the <sup>20</sup> second, by betraying or undermining his predecessor ; and the third is by a furious zeal in public assemblies against the corruptions of the court. But a wise prince would rather choose to employ those who practise the last of these methods ; because such zealots prove always the most obsequious and subservient to the will and passions of their master. That these ministers having all employments at their disposal, preserve themselves in power by bribing the majority of a senate or great council ; and at last, by an expedient called an <sup>30</sup> Act of Indemnity (whereof I described the nature to him) they secure themselves from after-reckonings, and retire from the public, laden with the spoils of the nation.

The palace of a chief minister, is a seminary to breed up others in his own trade : the pages, lackeys, and

porter, by imitating their master, become ministers of state in their several districts, and learn to excel in the three principal ingredients, of insolence, lying, and bribery. Accordingly they have a subaltern court paid to them by persons of the best rank, and sometimes by the force of dexterity and impudence arrive through several gradations to be successors to their lord.

He is usually governed by a decayed wench or favourite footman, who are the tunnels through which all graces  
10 are conveyed, and may properly be called, in the last resort, the governors of the kingdom.

One day in discourse my master, having heard me mention the nobility of my country, was pleased to make me a compliment which I could not pretend to deserve : that he was sure I must have been born of some noble family, because I far exceeded in shape, colour, and cleanliness, all the Yahoos of his nation, although I seemed to fail in strength and agility, which must be imputed to my different way of living from  
20 those other brutes ; and besides I was not only endowed with the faculty of speech, but likewise with some rudiments of reason, to a degree that with all his acquaintance I passed for a prodigy.

He made me observe, that among the Houyhnhnms, the white, the sorrel, and the iron-grey, were not so exactly shaped as the bay, the dapple-grey, and the black ; nor born with equal talents of the mind, or a capacity to improve them ; and therefore continued always in the condition of servants, without ever  
30 aspiring to match out of their own race, which in that country would be reckoned monstrous and unnatural.

I made his Honour my most humble acknowledgments for the good opinion he was pleased to conceive of me ; but assured him at the same time that my birth was of the lower sort, having been born of plain honest

parents, who were just able to give me a tolerable education ; that nobility among us was altogether a different thing from the idea he had of it ; that our young noblemen are bred from their childhood in idleness and luxury ; that as soon as years will permit, they consume their vigour and contract odious diseases ; and when their fortunes are almost ruined, they marry some woman of mean birth, disagreeable person, and unsound constitution, merely for the sake of money, whom they hate and despise. That the productions 10 of such marriages are generally scrofulous, ricketty, or deformed children ; by which means the family seldom continues above three generations. That a weak diseased body, a meagre countenance, and sallow complexion, are the true marks of noble blood ; and a healthy robust appearance is so disgraceful in a man of quality, that the world concludes his real father to have been a groom or a coachman. The imperfections of his mind run parallel with those of his body, being a composition of spleen, dullness, ignorance, caprice, 20 sensuality and pride.

Without the consent of this illustrious body no law can be enacted, repealed, or altered ; and these have the decision of all our possessions without appeal.

## CHAP. VII

*The Author's great love of his native country. His master's observations upon the constitution and administration of England, as described by the Author, with parallel cases and comparisons. His master's observations upon human nature.*

THE reader may be disposed to wonder how I could prevail on myself to give so free a representation of my own species, among a race of mortals who were already too apt to conceive the vilest opinion of human  
10 kind, from that entire congruity betwixt me and their Yahoos. But I must freely confess that the many virtues of those excellent quadrupeds placed in opposite view to human corruptions, had so far opened my eyes and enlarged my understanding, that I began to view the actions and passions of man in a very different light, and to think the honour of my own kind not worth managing; which, besides, it was impossible for me to do before a person of so acute a judgement as my master, who daily convinced me of a thousand  
20 faults in myself, whereof I had not the least perception before, and which among us would never be numbered even among human infirmities. I had likewise learned from his example an utter detestation of all falsehood or disguise, and truth appeared so amiable to me, that I determined upon sacrificing every thing to it.

Let me deal so candidly with the reader as to confess that there was yet a much stronger motive for the freedom I took in my representation of things. I had not been a year in this country before I contracted such  
30 a love and veneration for the inhabitants, that I entered

on a firm resolution never to return to human kind, but to pass the rest of my life among these admirable Houyhnhnms in the contemplation and practice of every virtue ; where I could have no example or incitement to vice. But it was decreed by fortune, my perpetual enemy, that so great a felicity should not fall to my share. However, it is now some comfort to reflect that in what I said of my countrymen I extenuated their faults as much as I durst before so strict an examiner, and upon every article gave as favourable a turn as the matter <sup>10</sup> would bear. For indeed who is there alive that will not be swayed by his bias and partiality to the place of his birth ?

I have related the substance of several conversations I had with my master, during the greatest part of the time I had the honour to be in his service, but have indeed for brevity sake omitted much more than is here set down.

When I had answered all his questions, and his curiosity seemed to be fully satisfied, he sent for me one morning <sup>20</sup> early, and commanding me to sit down at some distance, (an honour which he had never before conferred upon me) he said he had been very seriously considering my whole story, as far as it related both to myself and my country ; that he looked upon us as a sort of animals to whose share, by what accident he could not conjecture, some small pittance of reason had fallen, whereof we made no other use than by its assistance to aggravate our natural corruptions, and to acquire new ones which nature had not given us. That we disarmed ourselves <sup>30</sup> of the few abilities she had bestowed, had been very successful in multiplying our original wants, and seemed to spend our whole lives in vain endeavours to supply them by our own inventions. That as to myself, it was manifest I had neither the strength or agility of

a common Yahoo, that I walked infirmly on my hinder feet, had found out a contrivance to make my claws of no use or defence, and to remove the hair from my chin, which was intended as a shelter from the sun and the weather. Lastly, that I could neither run with speed, nor climb trees like my brethren (as he called them) the Yahoos in this country.

That our institutions of government and law were plainly owing to our gross defects in reason, and by  
 10 consequence, in virtue ; because reason alone is sufficient to govern a rational creature ; which was therefore a character we had no pretence to challenge, even from the account I had given of my own people ; although he manifestly perceived that in order to favour them I had concealed many particulars, and often *said the thing which was not.*

He was the more confirmed in this opinion, because he observed that as I agreed in every feature of my body with other Yahoos, except where it was to my real  
 20 disadvantage in point of strength, speed and activity, the shortness of my claws, and some other particulars where nature had no part ; so from the representation I had given him of our lives, our manners, and our actions, he found as near a resemblance in the disposition of our minds. He said the Yahoos were known to hate one another more than they did any different species of animals ; and the reason usually assigned was the odiousness of their own shapes, which all could see in the rest, but not in themselves. He had therefore begun  
 30 to think it not unwise in us to cover our bodies, and by that invention conceal many of our own deformities from each other, which would else be hardly supportable. But he now found he had been mistaken, and that the dissensions of those brutes in his country were owing to the same cause with ours, as I had described them.

For if (said he) you throw among five Yahoos as much food as would be sufficient for fifty, they will, instead of eating peaceably, fall together by the ears, each single one impatient to have all to itself ; and therefore a servant was usually employed to stand by while they were feeding abroad, and those kept at home were tied at a distance from each other : that if a cow died of age or accident, before a Houyhnhnm could secure it for his own Yahoos, those in the neighbourhood would come in herds to seize it, and then would ensue 10 such a battle as I had described, with terrible wounds made by their claws on both sides, although they seldom were able to kill one another, for want of such convenient instruments of death as we had invented. At other times the like battles have been fought between the Yahoos of several neighbourhoods without any visible cause ; those of one district watching all opportunities to surprise the next before they are prepared. But if they find their project hath miscarried, they return home, and, for want of enemies, engage in what I call 20 a civil war among themselves.

That in some fields of his country there are certain shining stones of several colours, whereof the Yahoos are violently fond, and when part of these stones is fixed in the earth, as it sometimes happeneth, they will dig with their claws for whole days to get them out, then carry them away, and hide them by heaps in their kennels ; but still looking round with great caution, for fear their comrades should find out their treasure. My master said he could never discover the reason of this unnatural 30 appetite, or how these stones could be of any use to a Yahoo ; but now he believed it might proceed from the same principle of avarice which I had ascribed to mankind : that he had once, by way of experiment, privately removed a heap of these stones from the place

where one of his Yahoos had buried it : whereupon the sordid animal missing his treasure, by his loud lamenting brought the whole herd to the place, there miserably howled, then fell to biting and tearing the rest, began to pine away, would neither eat nor sleep nor work, till he ordered a servant privately to convey the stones into the same hole and hide them as before ; which when his *Yahoo* had found, he presently recovered his spirits and good humour, but took good care to  
 10 remove them to a better hiding-place, and hath ever since been a very serviceable brute.

My master farther assured me, which I also observed myself, that in the fields where these shining stones abound, the fiercest and most frequent battles are fought, occasioned by perpetual inroads of the neighbouring Yahoos.

He said it was common when two Yahoos discovered such a stone in a field, and were contending which of them should be the proprietor, a third would take the advantage, and carry it away from them both ; which  
 20 my master would needs contend to have some kind of resemblance with our suits at law ; wherein I thought it for our credit not to undeceive him ; since the decision he mentioned was much more equitable than many decrees among us ; because the plaintiff and defendant there lost nothing beside the stone they contended for, whereas our courts of equity would never have dismissed the cause while either of them had any thing left.

My master continuing his discourse, said there was nothing that rendered the Yahoos more odious than their  
 30 undistinguishing appetite to devour every thing that came in their way, whether herbs, roots, berries, the corrupted flesh of animals, or all mingled together ; and it was peculiar in their temper that they were fonder of what they could get by rapine or stealth at a greater distance than much better food provided for



them at home. If their prey held out, they would eat till they were ready to burst.

There was a root very juicy, but somewhat rare and difficult to be found, which the Yahoos sought for with much eagerness, and would suck it with great delight ; and it produced in them the same effects that wine hath upon us. It would make them sometimes hug, and sometimes tear one another ; they would howl and grin, and chatter, and reel, and tumble, and then fall asleep in the dirt.

10

I did indeed observe that the Yahoos were the only animals in this country subject to any diseases ; which, however, were much fewer than horses have among us, and contracted not by any ill-treatment they meet with, but by the nastiness and greediness of that sordid brute. Neither has their language any more than a general appellation for those maladies, which is borrowed from the name of the beast, and called *Hnea-Yahoo*, or the *Yahoo's evil*.

As to learning, government, arts, manufactures, and 20 the like, my master confessed he could find little or no resemblance between the Yahoos of that country and those in ours. For he only meant to observe what parity there was in our natures. He had heard indeed some curious Houyhnhnms observe that in most herds there was a sort of ruling Yahoo (as among us there is generally some leading or principal stag in a park), who was always more deformed in body and mischievous in disposition than any of the rest. That this leader had usually a favourite as like himself as he could get, 30 whose employment was to lick his master's feet and drive the female Yahoos to his kennel ; for which he was now and then rewarded with a piece of ass's flesh. This favourite is hated by the whole herd, and therefore to protect himself, keeps always near the person of his

leader. He usually continues in office till a worse can be found. But how far this might be applicable to our courts and favourites, and ministers of state, my master said I could best determine.

I durst make no return to this malicious insinuation, which debased human understanding below the sagacity of a common hound, who has judgement enough to distinguish and follow the cry of the ablest dog in the pack, without being ever mistaken.

- 10 My master told me there were some qualities remarkable in the Yahoos, which he had not observed me to mention, or at least very slightly, in the accounts I had given him of human kind. He said those animals, like other brutes, had their females in common; but in this they differed, that the hees would quarrel and fight with the females as fiercely as with each other. Which practice was such a degree of brutality, that no other sensitive creature ever arrived at.

- Another thing he wondered at in the Yahoos was their  
20 strange disposition to nastiness and dirt, whereas there appears to be a natural love of cleanliness in all other animals. As to the former accusation, I was glad to let it pass without any reply, because I had not a word to offer upon it in defence of my species, which otherwise I certainly had done from my own inclinations. But I could have easily vindicated human kind from the imputation of singularity upon the last article, if there had been any swine in that country (as unluckily for me there were not), which although it may be a sweeter  
30 quadruped than a Yahoo, cannot I humbly conceive in justice pretend to more cleanliness; and so his Honour himself must have owned, if he had seen their filthy way of feeding, and their custom of wallowing and sleeping in the mud.

My master likewise mentioned another quality which his

servants had discovered in several Yahoos, and to him was wholly unaccountable. He said, a fancy would sometimes take a Yahoo to retire into a corner, to lie down and howl and groan, and spurn away all that came near him, although he were young and fat, wanted neither food nor water ; nor did the servants imagine what could possibly ail him. And the only remedy they found was to set him to hard work, after which he would infallibly come to himself. To this I was silent out of partiality to my own kind ; yet here I could 10 plainly discover the true seeds of spleen, which only seizeth on the lazy, the luxurious, and the rich ; who, if they were forced to undergo the same regimen, I would undertake for the cure.

If a female stranger came among them, three or four of her own sex would get about her, and stare and chatter, and grin, and smell her all over ; and then turn off with gestures that seemed to express contempt and disdain.

Perhaps my master might refine a little in these 20 speculations, which he had drawn from what he observed himself, or had been told him by others ; however, I could not reflect without some amazement, and much sorrow, that the rudiments of coquetry, censure, and scandal, should have place by instinct in womankind.

## CHAP. VIII

*The Author relates several particulars of the Yahoos. The great virtues of the Houyhnhnms. The education and exercise of their youth. Their general assembly.*

As I ought to have understood human nature much better than I supposed it possible for my master to do, so it was easy to apply the character he gave of the Yahoos to myself and my countrymen ; and I believed I could yet make farther discoveries from my own  
10 observation. I therefore often begged his favour to let me go among the herds of Yahoos in the neighbourhood, to which he always very graciously consented, being perfectly convinced that the hatred I bore those brutes would never suffer me to be corrupted by them ; and his Honour ordered one of his servants, a strong sorrel nag, very honest and good-natured, to be my guard, without whose protection I durst not undertake such adventures. For I have already told the reader how much I was pestered by those odious animals upon  
20 my first arrival. And I afterwards failed very narrowly three or four times of falling into their clutches, when I happened to stray at any distance without my hanger. And I have reason to believe they had some imagination that I was of their own species, which I often assisted myself, by stripping up my sleeves, and showing my naked arms and breast in their sight, when my protector was with me. At which times they would approach as near as they durst, and imitate my actions after the manner of monkeys, but ever with great signs  
30 of hatred ; as a tame jack-daw with cap and stockings is always persecuted by the wild ones, when he happens to be got among them.

They are prodigiously nimble from their infancy ; however, I once caught a young male of three years old, and endeavoured by all marks of tenderness to make it quiet ; but the little imp fell a squalling and scratching and biting with such violence that I was forced to let it go ; and it was high time, for a whole troop of old ones came about us at the noise, but finding the cub was safe (for away it ran), and my sorrel nag being by, they durst not venture near us. I observed the young animal's flesh to smell very rank, and the stink was 10 somewhat between a weasel and a fox, but much more disagreeable.

By what I could discover, the Yahoos appear to be the most unteachable of all animals, their capacities never reaching higher than to draw or carry burdens. Yet I am of opinion this defect ariseth chiefly from a perverse, restive disposition. For they are cunning, malicious, treacherous, and revengeful. They are strong and hardy, but of a cowardly spirit, and by consequence, insolent, abject, and cruel. It is observed that the 20 red-haired of both sexes are more libidinous and mischievous than the rest, whom yet they much exceed in strength and activity.

The Houyhnhnms keep the Yahoos for present use in huts not far from the house ; but the rest are sent abroad to certain fields, where they dig up roots, eat several kinds of herbs, and search about for carrion, or sometimes catch weasels and *luhimuhs* (a sort of wild rat), which they greedily devour. Nature hath taught them to dig deep holes with their nails on the side of a rising ground, 30 wherein they lie by themselves ; only the kennels of the females are larger, sufficient to hold two or three cubs.

They swim from their infancy like frogs, and are able to continue long under water, where they often take fish, which the females carry home to their young.

Having lived three years in this country, the reader I suppose will expect that I should, like other travellers, give him some account of the manners and customs of its inhabitants, which it was indeed my principal study to learn.

As these noble Houyhnhnms are endowed by nature with a general disposition to all virtues, and have no conceptions or ideas of what is evil in a rational creature, so their grand maxim is to cultivate reason, and to be  
 10 wholly governed by it. Neither is reason among them a point problematical as with us, where men can argue with plausibility on both sides of the question ; but strikes you with immediate conviction ; as it must needs do where it is not mingled, obscured, or discoloured by passion and interest. I remember it was with extreme difficulty that I could bring my master to understand the meaning of the word *opinion*, or how a point could be disputable ; because reason taught us to affirm or deny only where we are certain, and beyond our know-  
 20 ledge we cannot do either. So that controversies, wranglings, disputes, and positiveness in false or dubious propositions, are evils unknown among the Houyhnhnms. In the like manner when I used to explain to him our several systems of natural philosophy, he would laugh that a creature pretending to reason should value itself upon the knowledge of other people's conjectures, and in things where that knowledge, if it were certain, could be of no use. Wherein he agreed entirely with the sentiments of Socrates, as Plato delivers them ; which  
 30 I mention as the highest honour I can do that prince of philosophers. I have often since reflected what destruction such a doctrine would make in the libraries of Europe, and how many paths to fame would be then shut up in the learned world.

Friendship and benevolence are the two principal

virtues among the Houyhnhnms, and these not confined to particular objects, but universal to the whole race. For a stranger from the remotest part is equally treated with the nearest neighbour, and wherever he goes looks upon himself as at home. They preserve decency and civility in the highest degrees, but are altogether ignorant of ceremony. They have no fondness for their colts or foals, but the care they take in educating them proceeds entirely from the dictates of reason. And I observed my master to show the same affection to his 10 neighbour's issue that he had for his own. They will have it that nature teaches them to love the whole species, and it is reason only that maketh a distinction of persons, where there is a superior degree of virtue.

In their marriages they are exactly careful to choose such colours as will not make any disagreeable mixture in the breed. Strength is chiefly valued in the male, and comeliness in the female ; not upon the account of love, but to preserve the race from degenerating ; for where a female happens to excel in strength, a consort 20 is chosen with regard to comeliness. Courtship, love, presents, jointures, settlements, have no place in their thoughts, or terms whereby to express them in their language. The young couple meet and are joined, merely because it is the determination of their parents and friends : it is what they see done every day, and they look upon it as one of the necessary actions of a rational being. But the violation of marriage, or any other unchastity, was never heard of ; and the married pair pass their lives with the same friendship and mutual 30 benevolence that they bear to all others of the same species who come in their way ; without jealousy, fondness, quarrelling, or discontent.

In educating the youth of both sexes, their method is admirable, and highly deserves our imitation. These

are not suffered to taste a grain of oats, except upon certain days, till eighteen years old ; nor milk, but very rarely ; and in summer they graze two hours in the morning, and as long in the evening, which their parents likewise observe ; but the servants are not allowed above half that time, and a great part of their grass is brought home, which they eat at the most convenient hours, when they can be best spared from work.

Temperance, industry, exercise and cleanliness, are  
 10 the lessons equally enjoined to the young ones of both sexes ; and my master thought it monstrous in us to give the females a different kind of education from the males, except in some articles of domestic management ; whereby, as he truly observed, one half of our natives were good for nothing but bringing children into the world ; and to trust the care of our children to such useless animals, he said, was yet a greater instance of brutality.

But the Houyhnhnms train up their youth to strength,  
 20 speed, and hardiness, by exercising them in running races up and down steep hills, and over hard stony grounds ; and when they are all in a sweat, they are ordered to leap over head and ears into a pond or river. Four times a year the youth of a certain district meet to show their proficiency in running and leaping, and other feats of strength and agility ; where the victor is rewarded with a song made in his or her praise. On this festival the servants drive a herd of Yahoos into the field, laden with hay and oats and milk, for a repast  
 30 to the Houyhnhnms ; after which these brutes are immediately driven back again, for fear of being noisome to the assembly.

Every fourth year, at the vernal equinox, there is a representative council of the whole nation, which meets in a plain about twenty miles from our house,



and continues about five or six days. Here they enquire into the state and condition of the several districts ; whether they abound or be deficient in hay or oats, or cows or Yahoos. And wherever there is any want (which is but seldom) it is immediately supplied by unanimous consent and contribution. Here likewise the regulation of children is settled : as for instance, if a Houyhnhnm hath two males, he changeth one of them with another that hath two females ; and when a child hath been lost by any casualty, it is determined 10 what family in the district shall supply the loss.

## CHAP. IX

*A grand debate at the general assembly of the Houyhnhnms, and how it was determined. The learning of the Houyhnhnms. Their buildings. Their manner of burials. The defectiveness of their language.*

ONE of these grand assemblies was held in my time, about three months before my departure, whither my master went as the representative of our district. In this council was resumed their old debate, and indeed, 10 the only debate which ever happened in that country; whereof my master after his return gave me a very particular account.

The question to be debated was whether the Yahoos should be exterminated from the face of the earth. One of the members for the affirmative offered several arguments of great strength and weight, alleging that as the Yahoos were the most filthy, noisome, and deformed animal which nature ever produced, so they were the most restive and indocible, mischievous and 20 malicious: they would kill and devour the Houyhnhnms' cats, trample down their oats and grass, if they were not continually watched, and commit a thousand other extravagancies. He took notice of a general tradition, that Yahoos had not been always in that country; but that many ages ago two of these brutes appeared together upon a mountain, whether produced by the heat of the sun upon corrupted mud and slime, or from the ooze and froth of the sea, was never known. That these Yahoos engendered, and their brood in a short 30 time grew so numerous as to over-run and infest the whole nation. That the Houyhnhnms to get rid of this evil, made a general hunting, and at last enclosed the

whole herd ; and destroying the elder, every Houyhnhnm kept two young ones in a kennel, and brought them to such a degree of tameness, as an animal so savage by nature can be capable of acquiring ; using them for draught and carriage. That there seemed to be much truth in this tradition, and that those creatures could not be *Ylnhniamsky* (or *aborigines* of the land), because of the violent hatred the Houyhnhnms, as well as all other animals, bore them ; which although their evil disposition sufficiently deserved, could never have 10 arrived at so high a degree, if they had been aborigines, or else they would have long since been rooted out. That the inhabitants taking a fancy to use the service of the Yahoos, had very imprudently neglected to cultivate the breed of asses, which were a comely animal, easily kept, more tame and orderly, without any offensive smell, strong enough for labour, although they yield to the other in agility of body ; and if their braying be no agreeable sound, it is far preferable to the horrible howlings of the Yahoos. 20

Several others declared their sentiments to the same purpose, when my master proposed an expedient to the assembly, whereof he had indeed borrowed the hint from me. He approved of the tradition mentioned by the honourable member who spoke before, and affirmed that the two Yahoos said to be first seen among them had been driven thither over the sea ; that coming to land and being forsaken by their companions they retired to the mountains, and degenerating by degrees, became in process of time, much more savage than those 30 of their own species in the country from whence these two originals came. The reason of his assertion was that he had now in his possession a certain wonderful Yahoo (meaning myself), which most of them had heard of, and many of them had seen. He then related to

them how he first found me ; that my body was all covered with an artificial composure of the skins and hairs of other animals ; that I spoke in a language of my own, and had thoroughly learned theirs ; that I had related to him the accidents which brought me thither ; that when he saw me without my covering I was an exact Yahoo in every part, only of a whiter colour, less hairy, and with shorter claws. He added how I had endeavoured to persuade him that in my  
 10 own and other countries the Yahoos acted as the governing, rational animal, and held the Houyhnhnms in servitude ; that he observed in me all the qualities of a Yahoo, only a little more civilized by some tincture of reason, which however was in a degree as far inferior to the Houyhnhnm race as the Yahoos of their country were to me.

This was all my master thought fit to tell me at that time of what passed in the grand council. But he was pleased to conceal one particular, which related personally to myself, whereof I soon felt the unhappy effect,  
 20 as the reader will know in its proper place, and from whence I date all the succeeding misfortunes of my life.

The Houyhnhnms have no letters, and consequently their knowledge is all traditional. But there happening few events of any moment among a people so well united, naturally disposed to every virtue, wholly governed by reason, and cut off from all commerce with other nations, the historical part is easily preserved without burthening their memories. I have already observed that they are  
 30 subject to no diseases, and therefore can have no need of physicians. However, they have excellent medicines composed of herbs, to cure accidental bruises and cuts in the pastern or frog of the foot by sharp stones, as well as other maims and hurts in the several parts of the body.

They calculate the year by the revolution of the sun and the moon, but use no subdivisions into weeks. They are well enough acquainted with the motions of those two luminaries, and understand the nature of eclipses ; and this is the utmost progress of their astronomy.

In poetry they must be allowed to excel all other mortals ; wherein the justness of their similes, and the minuteness, as well as exactness of their descriptions, are indeed inimitable. Their verses abound very much in both of these, and usually contain either some exalted 10 notions of friendship and benevolence, or the praises of those who were victors in races and other bodily exercises. Their buildings, although very rude and simple, are not inconvenient, but well contrived to defend them from all injuries of cold and heat. They have a kind of tree, which at forty years old loosens in the root, and falls with the first storm : they grow very straight, and being pointed like stakes with a sharp stone (for the Houyhnhnms know not the use of iron), they stick them erect in the ground about ten inches 20 asunder, and then weave in oat-straw, or sometimes wattles betwixt them. The roof is made after the same manner, and so are the doors.

The Houyhnhnms use the hollow part between the pastern and the hoof of their fore-feet as we do our hands, and this with greater dexterity than I could at first imagine. I have seen a white mare of our family thread a needle (which I lent her on purpose) with that joint. They milk their cows, reap their oats, and do all the work which requires hands, in the same manner. 30 They have a kind of hard flints, which by grinding against other stones, they form into instruments, that serve instead of wedges, axes, and hammers. With tools made of these flints they likewise cut their hay and reap their oats, which there groweth naturally in

several fields: the Yahoos draw home the sheaves in carriages, and the servants tread them in certain covered huts, to get out the grain, which is kept in stores. They make a rude kind of earthen and wooden vessels, and bake the former in the sun.

If they can avoid casualties, they die only of old age, and are buried in the obscurest places that can be found, their friends and relations expressing neither joy nor grief at their departure; nor does the dying person  
 10 discover the least regret that he is leaving the world, any more than if he were upon returning home from a visit to one of his neighbours. I remember my master having once made an appointment with a friend and his family to come to his house upon some affair of importance, on the day fixed the mistress and her two children came very late; she made two excuses, first for her husband, who, as she said, happened that very morning to *shnuwnh*. The word is strongly expressive in their language, but not easily rendered into English;  
 20 it signifies, *to retire to his first mother*. Her excuse for not coming sooner was that her husband dying late in the morning, she was a good while consulting her servants about a convenient place where his body should be laid; and I observed she behaved herself at our house as cheerfully as the rest, and died about three months after.

They live generally to seventy or seventy-five years, very seldom to fourscore: some weeks before their death they feel a gradual decay, but without pain.  
 30 During this time they are much visited by their friends, because they cannot go abroad with their usual ease and satisfaction. However, about ten days before their death, which they seldom fail in computing, they return the visits that have been made them by those who are nearest in the neighbourhood, being carried in a

convenient sledge drawn by Yahoos ; which vehicle they use, not only upon this occasion, but when they grow old, upon long journeys, or when they are lamed by any accident. And therefore when the dying Houyhnhnms return those visits, they take a solemn leave of their friends, as if they were going to some remote part of the country, where they designed to pass the rest of their lives.

I know not whether it may be worth observing that the Houyhnhnms have no word in their language to <sup>10</sup> express any thing that is evil, except what they borrow from the deformities or ill qualities of the Yahoos. Thus they denote the folly of a servant, an omission of a child, a stone that cuts their feet, a continuance of foul or unseasonable weather, and the like, by adding to each the epithet of Yahoo. For instance, *Hhnm Yahoo*, *Whnaholm Yahoo*, *Ynlhmndwihlma Yahoo*, and an ill-contrived house *Ynholmhnmrohlnw Yahoo*.

I could with great pleasure enlarge further upon the manners and virtues of this excellent people ; but <sup>20</sup> intending in a short time to publish a volume by itself expressly upon that subject, I refer the reader thither, and in the mean time, proceed to relate my own sad catastrophe.

## CHAP. X

*The Author's economy, and happy life among the Houyhnhnms. His great improvement in virtue, by conversing with them. Their conversations. The Author has notice given him by his master that he must depart from the country. He falls into a swoon for grief, but submits. He contrives and finishes a canoe, by the help of a fellow-servant, and puts to sea at a venture.*

I HAD settled my little economy to my own heart's content. My master had ordered a room to be made for  
10 me after their manner, about six yards from the house ; the sides and floors of which I plastered with clay, and covered with rush-mats of my own contriving ; I had beaten hemp, which there grows wild, and made of it a sort of ticking ; this I filled with the feathers of several birds I had taken with springes made of Yahoos' hairs, and were excellent food. I had worked two chairs with my knife, the sorrel nag helping me in the grosser and more laborious part. When my clothes were worn to rags, I made myself others with the skins of rabbits, and  
20 of a certain beautiful animal about the same size, called *nnuhnoh*, the skin of which is covered with a fine down. Of these I likewise made very tolerable stockings. I soled my shoes with wood which I cut from a tree and fitted to the upper leather, and when this was worn out, I supplied it with the skins of Yahoos dried in the sun. I often got honey out of hollow trees, which I mingled with water, or ate with my bread. No man could more verify the truth of these two maxims, *That nature is very easily satisfied ;* and *That necessity is the mother of*  
30 *invention.* I enjoyed perfect health of body, and tranquillity of mind ; I did not feel the treachery or inconstancy of a friend, nor the injuries of a secret or open



enemy. I had no occasion of bribing or flattering to procure the favour of any great man or of his minion. I wanted no fence against fraud or oppression ; here was neither physician to destroy my body, nor lawyer to ruin my fortune ; no informer to watch my words and actions, or forge accusations against me for hire ; here were no gibbers, censurers, backbiters, pickpockets, highwaymen, housebreakers, attorneys, buffoons, gamesters, politicians, wits, splenetics, tedious talkers, controvertists, murderers, robbers, virtuosos ; no leaders or followers 10 of party and faction ; no encouragers to vice, by seducement or examples ; no dungeon, axes, gibbets, whipping-posts, or pillories ; no cheating shopkeepers or mechanics ; no pride, vanity, or affectation ; no fops, bullies, drunkards ; no ranting, expensive wives ; no stupid, proud pedants ; no importunate, overbearing, quarrelsome, noisy, roaring, empty, conceited, swearing companions ; no scoundrels, raised from the dust for the sake of their vices, or nobility thrown into it on account of their virtues ; no lords, fiddlers, judges, or dancing-masters.

20

I had the favour of being admitted to several Houyhnhnms, who came to visit or dine with my master ; where his Honour graciously suffered me to wait in the room, and listen to their discourse. Both he and his company would often descend to ask me questions, and receive my answers. I had also sometimes the honour of attending my master in his visits to others. I never presumed to speak, except in answer to a question ; and then I did it with inward regret, because it was a loss of so much time for improving 30 myself ; but I was infinitely delighted with the station of an humble auditor in such conversations, where nothing passed but what was useful, expressed in the fewest and most significant words ; where the greatest

decency was observed, without the least degree of ceremony ; where no person spoke without being pleased himself, and pleasing his companions ; where there was no interruption, tediousness, heat, or difference of sentiments. They have a notion that when people are met together, a short silence doth much improve conversation : this I found to be true ; for during those little intermissions of talk, new ideas would arise in their thoughts, which very much enlivened the discourse.

10 Their subjects are generally on friendship and benevolence, or order and economy ; sometimes upon the visible operations of nature, or ancient traditions ; upon the bounds and limits of virtue ; upon the unerring rules of reason, or upon some determinations to be taken at the next great assembly ; and often upon the various excellencies of poetry. I may add without vanity that my presence often gave them sufficient matter for discourse, because it afforded my master an occasion of letting his friends into the history of me and my country, upon

20 which they were all pleased to descant in a manner not very advantageous to human kind ; and for that reason I shall not repeat what they said : only I may be allowed to observe that his Honour, to my great admiration, appeared to understand the nature of Yahoos in all countries much better than myself. He went through all our vices and follies, and discovered many which I had never mentioned to him, by only supposing what qualities a Yahoo of their country, with a small proportion of reason, might be capable of exerting ; and concluded,

30 with too much probability, how vile as well as miserable such a creature must be.

I freely confess that all the little knowledge I have of any value was acquired by the lectures I received from my master, and from hearing the discourses of him and his friends ; to which I should be prouder to listen than

to dictate to the greatest and wisest assembly in Europe. I admired the strength, comeliness, and speed of the inhabitants ; and such a constellation of virtues in such amiable persons produced in me the highest veneration. At first, indeed, I did not feel that natural awe which the Yahoos and all other animals bear towards them ; but it grew upon me by degrees, much sooner than I imagined, and was mingled with a respectful love and gratitude, that they would condescend to distinguish me from the rest of my species.

10

When I thought of my family, my friends, my countrymen, or human race in general, I considered them as they really were, Yahoos in shape and disposition, perhaps a little more civilized, and qualified with the gift of speech, but making no other use of reason than to improve and multiply those vices whereof their brethren in this country had only the share that nature allotted them. When I happened to behold the reflection of my own form in a lake or fountain, I turned away my face in horror and detestation of myself, and could better 20 endure the sight of a common Yahoo than of my own person. By conversing with the Houyhnhnms, and looking upon them with delight, I fell to imitate their gait and gesture, which is now grown into an habit, and my friends often tell me in a blunt way, that I trot like a horse ; which, however, I take for a great compliment. Neither shall I disown that in speaking I am apt to fall into the voice and manner of the Houyhnhnms, and hear myself ridiculed on that account without the least mortification.

In the midst of all this happiness, and when I looked 30 upon myself to be fully settled for life, my master sent for me one morning a little earlier than his usual hour. I observed by his countenance that he was in some perplexity, and at a loss how to begin what he had to speak. After a short silence he told me he did not know

how I would take what he was going to say ; that in the last general assembly, when the affair of the Yahoos was entered upon, the representatives had taken offence at his keeping a Yahoo (meaning myself) in his family more like a Houyhnhnm than a brute animal. That he was known frequently to converse with me, as if he could receive some advantage or pleasure in my company ; that such a practice was not agreeable to reason or nature, nor a thing never heard of before among them.

- <sup>10</sup> The assembly did therefore exhort him, either to employ me like the rest of my species, or command me to swim back to the place from whence I came. That the first of these expedients was utterly rejected by all the Houyhnhnms who had ever seen me at his house or their own : for they alleged that because I had some rudiments of reason, added to the natural pravity of those animals, it was to be feared I might be able to seduce them into the woody and mountainous parts of the country, and bring them in troops by night to destroy the  
<sup>20</sup> Houyhnhnms' cattle, as being naturally of the ravenous kind, and averse from labour.

My master added that he was daily pressed by the Houyhnhnms of the neighbourhood to have the assembly's exhortation executed, which he could not put off much longer. He doubted it would be impossible for me to swim to another country, and therefore wished I would contrive some sort of vehicle resembling those I had described to him, that might carry me on the sea ; in which work I should have the assistance of his own  
<sup>30</sup> servants, as well as those of his neighbours. He concluded that for his own part he could have been content to keep me in his service as long as I lived ; because he found I had cured myself of some bad habits and dispositions, by endeavouring, as far as my inferior nature was capable, to imitate the Houyhnhnms.

I should here observe to the reader, that a decree of the general assembly in this country is expressed by the word *hnhloayn*, which signifies an exhortation, as near as I can render it ; for they have no conception how a rational creature can be compelled, but only advised or exhorted, because no person can disobey reason without giving up his claim to be a rational creature.

I was struck with the utmost grief and despair at my master's discourse, and being unable to support the agonies I was under, I fell into a swoon at his feet ; when <sup>10</sup> I came to myself he told me that he concluded I had been dead (for these people are subject to no such imbecilities of nature). I answered in a faint voice that death would have been too great an happiness ; that although I could not blame the assembly's exhortation, or the urgency of his friends, yet, in my weak and corrupt judgment, I thought it might consist with reason to have been less rigorous. That I could not swim a league, and probably the nearest land to theirs might be distant above an hundred ; that many materials, necessary for making <sup>20</sup> a small vessel to carry me off, were wholly wanting in this country, which, however, I would attempt in obedience and gratitude to his Honour, although I concluded the thing to be impossible, and therefore looked on myself as already devoted to destruction. That the certain prospect of an unnatural death was the least of my evils ; for supposing I should escape with life by some strange adventure, how could I think with temper of passing my days among Yahoos, and relapsing into my old corruptions, for want of examples to lead and keep me within <sup>30</sup> the paths of virtue ? That I knew too well upon what solid reasons all the determinations of the wise Houyhnhnms were founded, not to be shaken by arguments of mine, a miserable Yahoo ; and therefore, after presenting him with my humble thanks for the offer of his

servants' assistance in making a vessel, and desiring a reasonable time for so difficult a work, I told him I would endeavour to preserve a wretched being; and if ever I returned to England, was not without hopes of being useful to my own species by celebrating the praises of the renowned Houyhnhnms, and proposing their virtues to the imitation of mankind.

My master in a few words made me a very gracious reply, allowed me the space of two months to finish my  
 10 boat; and ordered the sorrel nag, my fellow-servant (for so at this distance I may presume to call him) to follow my instructions, because I told my master that his help would be sufficient, and I knew he had a tenderness for me.

In his company my first business was to go to that part of the coast where my rebellious crew had ordered me to be set on shore. I got upon a height, and looking on every side into the sea, fancied I saw a small island towards the north-east: I took out my pocket-glass,  
 20 and could then clearly distinguish it about five leagues off, as I computed; but it appeared to the sorrel nag to be only a blue cloud; for as he had no conception of any country beside his own, so he could not be as expert in distinguishing remote objects at sea as we who so much converse in that element.

After I had discovered this island, I considered no farther; but resolved it should, if possible, be the first place of my banishment, leaving the consequence to fortune.

30 I returned home, and consulting with the sorrel nag, we went into a copse at some distance, where I with my knife, and he with a sharp flint fastened very artificially after their manner to a wooden handle, cut down several oak wattles about the thickness of a walking-staff, and some larger pieces. But I shall not trouble the reader

with a particular description of my own mechanics ; let it suffice to say that in six weeks time, with the help of the sorrel nag, who performed the parts that required most labour, I finished a sort of Indian canoe, but much larger, covering it with the skins of Yahoos well stitched together, with hempen threads of my own making. My sail was likewise composed of the skins of the same animal ; but I made use of the youngest I could get, the older being too tough and thick ; and I likewise provided myself with four paddles. I laid in a stock of boiled <sup>10</sup> flesh, of rabbits and fowls, and took with me two vessels, one filled with milk and the other with water.

I tried my canoe in a large pond near my master's house, and then corrected in it what was amiss ; stopping all the chinks with Yahoos' tallow, till I found it staunch, and able to bear me and my freight. And when it was as complete as I could possibly make it, I had it drawn on a carriage very gently by Yahoos to the sea-side, under the conduct of the sorrel nag and another servant. 20

When all was ready, and the day came for my departure, I took leave of my master and lady and the whole family, my eyes flowing with tears, and my heart quite sunk with grief. But his Honour, out of curiosity, and perhaps (if I may speak it without vanity) partly out of kindness, was determined to see me in my canoe, and got several of his neighbouring friends to accompany him. I was forced to wait above an hour for the tide, and then observing the wind very fortunately bearing towards the island to which I intended to steer my course, <sup>30</sup> I took a second leave of my master ; but as I was going to prostrate myself to kiss his hoof, he did me the honour to raise it gently to my mouth. I am not ignorant how much I have been censured for mentioning this last particular. For my detractors are pleased to think it

improbable that so illustrious a person should descend to give so great a mark of distinction to a creature so inferior as I. Neither have I forgot how apt some travellers are to boast of extraordinary favours they have received. But if these censurers were better acquainted with the noble and courteous disposition of the Houyhnhnms, they would soon change their opinion.

I paid my respects to the rest of the Houyhnhnms in his Honour's company ; then getting into my canoe,  
10 I pushed off from shore.



## CHAP. XI

*The Author's dangerous voyage. He arrives at New Holland, hoping to settle there. Is wounded with an arrow by one of the natives. Is seized and carried by force into a Portuguese ship. The great civilities of the Captain. The Author arrives at England.*

I BEGAN this desperate voyage on February 15, 1714-5, at 9 o'clock in the morning. The wind was very favourable ; however, I made use at first only of my paddles ; but considering I should soon be weary, and that the wind might chop about, I ventured to set up my little 10 sail ; and thus with the help of the tide I went at the rate of a league and a half an hour, as near as I could guess. My master and his friends continued on the shore till I was almost out of sight ; and I often heard the sorrel nag (who always loved me) crying out, *Hnuy illa nyha majah Yahoo*, Take care of thyself, gentle Yahoo.

My design was, if possible, to discover some small island uninhabited, yet sufficient by my labour to furnish me with the necessaries of life, which I would have thought a greater happiness than to be first minister in 20 the politest court of Europe ; so horrible was the idea I conceived of returning to live in the society and under the government of Yahoos. For in such a solitude as I desired I could at least enjoy my own thoughts, and reflect with delight on the virtues of those inimitable Houyhnhnms, without any opportunity of degenerating into the vices and corruptions of my own species.

The reader may remember what I related when my crew conspired against me and confined me to my cabin. How I continued there several weeks without knowing 30

what course we took ; and when I was put ashore in the long-boat, how the sailors told me with oaths, whether true or false, that they knew not in what part of the world we were. However, I did then believe us to be about ten degrees southward of the Cape of Good Hope, or about 45 degrees southern latitude, as I gathered from some general words I overheard among them, being I supposed to the south-east in their intended voyage to Madagascar. And although this were but little better than  
 10 conjecture, yet I resolved to steer my course eastward, hoping to reach the south-west coast of New Holland, and perhaps some such island as I desired, lying westward of it. The wind was full west, and by six in the evening I computed I had gone eastward at least eighteen leagues, when I spied a very small island about half a league off, which I soon reached. It was nothing but a rock, with one creek, naturally arched by the force of tempests. Here I put in my canoe, and climbing up a part of the rock, I could plainly discover land to the east, extending  
 20 from south to north. I lay all night in my canoe ; and repeating my voyage early in the morning, I arrived in seven hours to the south-east point of New Holland. This confirmed me in the opinion I have long entertained, that the maps and charts place this country at least three degrees more to the east than it really is ; which thought I communicated many years ago to my worthy friend Mr. Herman Moll, and gave him my reasons for it, although he hath rather chosen to follow other authors.

30 I saw no inhabitants in the place where I landed, and being unarmed, I was afraid of venturing far into the country. I found some shellfish on the shore, and ate them raw, not daring to kindle a fire, for fear of being discovered by the natives. I continued three days feeding on oysters and limpets, to save my own

provisions ; and I fortunately found a brook of excellent water, which gave me great relief.

On the fourth day, venturing out early a little too far, I saw twenty or thirty natives upon a height, not above five hundred yards from me. They were stark naked, men, women, and children, round a fire, as I could discover by the smoke. One of them spied me, and gave notice to the rest ; five of them advanced towards me, leaving the women and children at the fire. I made what haste I could to the shore, and getting into my canoe, 10 shoved off : the savages observing me retreat, ran after me ; and before I could get far enough into the sea, discharged an arrow, which wounded me deeply on the inside of my left knee (I shall carry the mark to my grave). I apprehended the arrow might be poisoned, and paddling out of the reach of their darts (being a calm day), I made a shift to suck the wound and dress it as well as I could.

I was at a loss what to do, for I durst not return to the same landing-place, but stood to the north, and was 20 forced to paddle ; for the wind, though very gentle, was against me, blowing north-west. As I was looking about for a secure landing-place, I saw a sail to the north-north-east, which appearing every minute more visible, I was in some doubt whether I should wait for them or no ; but at last my detestation of the Yahoo race prevailed, and turning my canoe, I sailed and paddled together to the south, and got into the same creek from whence I set out in the morning, choosing rather to trust myself among these barbarians, than live with European Yahoos. 30 I drew up my canoe as close as I could to the shore, and hid myself behind a stone by the little brook, which, as I have already said, was excellent water.

The ship came within half a league of this creek, and sent her long-boat with vessels to take in fresh water (for

the place it seems was very well known), but I did not observe it till the boat was almost on shore, and it was too late to seek another hiding-place. The seamen at their landing observed my canoe, and rummaging it all over, easily conjectured that the owner could not be far off. Four of them well armed searched every cranny and lurking-hole, till at last they found me flat on my face behind the stone. They gazed awhile in admiration at my strange uncouth dress, my coat made of skins, my  
 10 wooden-soled shoes, and my furred stockings; from whence, however, they concluded I was not a native of the place, who all go naked. One of the seamen in Portuguese bid me rise, and asked who I was. I understood that language very well, and getting upon my feet, said I was a poor Yahoo, banished from the Houyhnhnms, and desired they would please to let me depart. They admired to hear me answer them in their own tongue, and saw by my complexion I must be an European, but were at a loss to know what I meant by Yahoos and  
 20 Houyhnhnms, and at the same time fell a laughing at my strange tone in speaking, which resembled the neighing of a horse. I trembled all the while betwixt fear and hatred: I again desired leave to depart, and was gently moving to my canoe; but they laid hold of me, desiring to know what country I was of, whence I came, with many other questions. I told them I was born in England, from whence I came about five years ago, and then their country and ours were at peace. I therefore hoped they would not treat me as an enemy, since I  
 30 meant them no harm, but was a poor Yahoo, seeking some desolate place where to pass the remainder of his unfortunate life.

When they began to talk, I thought I never heard or saw any thing so unnatural; for it appeared to me as monstrous as if a dog or a cow should speak in England,

or a Yahoo in Houyhnhnm-land. The honest Portuguese were equally amazed at my strange dress, and the odd manner of delivering my words, which however they understood very well. They spoke to me with great humanity, and said they were sure the Captain would carry me gratis to Lisbon, from whence I might return to my own country ; that two of the seamen would go back to the ship, inform the Captain of what they had seen, and receive his orders ; in the mean time, unless I would give my solemn oath not to fly, they would 10 secure me by force. I thought it best to comply with their proposal. They were very curious to know my story, but I gave them very little satisfaction ; and they all conjectured that my misfortunes had impaired my reason. In two hours the boat, which went loaden with vessels of water, returned with the Captain's command to fetch me on board. I fell on my knees to preserve my liberty ; but all was in vain, and the men having tied me with cords, heaved me into the boat, from whence I was taken into the ship, and from thence into 20 the Captain's cabin.

His name was Pedro de Mendez ; he was a very courteous and generous person ; he entreated me to give some account of myself, and desired to know what I would eat or drink ; said I should be used as well as himself, and spoke so many obliging things, that I wondered to find such civilities from a Yahoo. However, I remained silent and sullen ; I was ready to faint at the very smell of him and his men. At last I desired something to eat out of my own canoe ; but he ordered 30 me a chicken and some excellent wine, and then directed that I should be put to bed in a very clean cabin. I would not undress myself, but lay on the bed-clothes, and in half an hour stole out, when I thought the crew was at dinner, and getting to the side of the ship was going to

leap into the sea, and swim for my life, rather than continue among Yahoos. But one of the seamen prevented me, and having informed the Captain, I was chained to my cabin.

After dinner Don Pedro came to me, and desired to know my reason for so desperate an attempt, assured me he only meant to do me all the service he was able, and spoke so very movingly, that at last I descended to treat him like an animal which had some little portion of  
 10 reason. I gave him a very short relation of my voyage, of the conspiracy against me by my own men, of the country where they set me on shore, and of my three years residence there. All which he looked upon as if it were a dream or a vision ; whereat I took great offence, for I had quite forgot the faculty of lying, so peculiar to Yahoos in all countries where they preside, and, consequently the disposition of suspecting truth in others of their own species. I asked him whether it were the custom in his country to *say the thing that was not*.  
 20 I assured him I had almost forgot what he meant by falsehood, and if I had lived a thousand years in Houyhnhm-land, I should never have heard a lie from the meanest servant, that I was altogether indifferent whether he believed me or no, but however, in return for his favours, I would give so much allowance to the corruption of his nature as to answer any objection he would please to make, and then he might easily discover the truth.

The Captain, a wise man, after many endeavours to  
 30 catch me tripping in some part of my story, at last began to have a better opinion of my veracity, and the rather, because he confessed he met with a Dutch skipper, who pretended to have landed with five others of his crew upon a certain island or continent south of New Holland, where they went for fresh water, and observed a horse

driving before him several animals exactly resembling those I described under the name of Yahoos, with some other particulars, which the Captain said he had forgot ; because he then concluded them all to be lies. But he added that since I professed so inviolable an attachment to truth, I must give him my word of honour to bear him company in this voyage, without attempting any thing against my life, or else he would continue me a prisoner till we arrived at Lisbon. I gave him the promise he required, but at the same time protested that I would 10 suffer the greatest hardships rather than return to live among Yahoos.

Our voyage passed without any considerable accident. In gratitude to the Captain I sometimes sat with him at his earnest request, and strove to conceal my antipathy to human kind, although it often broke out, which he suffered to pass without observation. But the greatest part of the day I confined myself to my cabin, to avoid seeing any of the crew. The Captain had often entreated me to strip myself of my savage dress, and offered to 20 lend me the best suit of clothes he had. This I would not be prevailed on to accept, abhorring to cover myself with any thing that had been on the back of a Yahoo. I only desired he would lend me two clean shirts, which having been washed since he wore them, I believed would not so much defile me. These I changed every second day, and washed them myself.

We arrived at Lisbon, Nov. 5, 1715. At our landing the Captain forced me to cover myself with his cloak, to prevent the rabble from crowding about me. I was 30 conveyed to his own house, and at my earnest request he led me up to the highest room backwards. I conjured him to conceal from all persons what I had told him of the Houyhnhnms, because the least hint of such a story would not only draw numbers of people to see me, but

probably put me in danger of being imprisoned, or burnt by the Inquisition. The Captain persuaded me to accept a suit of clothes newly made ; but I would not suffer the tailor to take my measure ; however, Don Pedro being almost of my size, they fitted me well enough. He accoutred me with other necessaries all new, which I aired for twenty-four hours before I would use them.

The Captain had no wife, nor above three servants,  
 10 none of which were suffered to attend at meals, and his whole deportment was so obliging, added to very good *human* understanding, that I really began to tolerate his company. He gained so far upon me that I ventured to look out of the back window. By degrees I was brought into another room, from whence I peeped into the street, but drew my head back in a fright. In a week's time he seduced me down to the door. I found my terror gradually lessened, but my hatred and contempt seemed to increase. I was at last bold enough  
 20 to walk the street in his company, but kept my nose well stopped with rue, or sometimes with tobacco.

In ten days Don Pedro, to whom I had given some account of my domestic affairs, put it upon me as a matter of honour and conscience, that I ought to return to my native country, and live at home with my wife and children. He told me there was an English ship in the port just ready to sail, and he would furnish me with all things necessary. It would be tedious to repeat his arguments, and my contradictions. He said it was  
 30 altogether impossible to find such a solitary island as I had desired to live in ; but I might command in my own house, and pass my time in a manner as recluse as I pleased.

I complied at last, finding I could not do better. I left Lisbon the 24th day of November, in an English



merchantman, but who was the master I never inquired. Don Pedro accompanied me to the ship, and lent me twenty pounds. He took kind leave of me, and embraced me at parting, which I bore as well as I could. During this last voyage I had no commerce with the master or any of his men ; but pretending I was sick, kept close in my cabin. On the fifth of December, 1715, we cast anchor in the Downs about nine in the morning, and at three in the afternoon I got safe to my house at Rotherhith.

10

My wife and family received me with great surprise and joy, because they concluded me certainly dead ; but I must freely confess the sight of them filled me only with hatred, disgust, and contempt, and the more by reflecting on the near alliance I had to them. For although since my unfortunate exile from the Houyhnhnm country, I had compelled myself to tolerate the sight of Yahoos, and to converse with Don Pedro de Mendez, yet my memory and imagination were perpetually filled with the virtues and ideas of those exalted 20 Houyhnhnms. And when I began to consider that I had become a parent of Yahoos, it struck me with the utmost shame, confusion, and horror.

As soon as I entered the house, my wife took me in her arms and kissed me, at which, having not been used to the touch of that odious animal for so many years, I fell in a swoon for almost an hour. At the time I am writing it is five years since my last return to England : during the first year I could not endure my wife or children in my presence, the very smell of them was intolerable, 30 much less could I suffer them to eat in the same room. To this hour they dare not presume to touch my bread, or drink out of the same cup, neither was I ever able to let one of them take me by the hand. The first money I laid out was to buy two young horses, which I keep in

a good stable, and next to them the groom is my greatest favourite ; for I feel my spirits revived by the smell he contracts in the stable. My horses understand me tolerably well ; I converse with them at least four hours every day. They are strangers to bridle or saddle , they live in great amity with me, and friendship to each other.

## CHAP. XII

*The Author's veracity. His design in publishing this work. His censure of those travellers who swerve from the truth. The Author clears himself from any sinister ends in writing. An objection answered. The method of planting colonies. His native country commended. The right of the Crown to those countries described by the Author is justified. The difficulty of conquering them. The Author takes his last leave of the reader, proposeth his manner of living for the future, gives good advice, and concludes.*

THUS, gentle reader, I have given thee a faithful <sup>10</sup> history of my travels for sixteen years and above seven months ; wherein I have not been so studious of ornament as truth. I could perhaps like others have astonished thee with strange improbable tales ; but I rather chose to relate plain matter of fact in the simplest manner and style ; because my principal design was to inform, and not to amuse thee.

It is easy for us who travel into remote countries, which are seldom visited by Englishmen or other Europeans, to form descriptions of wonderful animals both at sea <sup>20</sup> and land. Whereas a traveller's chief aim should be to make men wiser and better, and to improve their minds by the bad as well as good example of what they deliver concerning foreign places.

I could heartily wish a law was enacted, that every traveller, before he were permitted to publish his voyages, should be obliged to make oath before the Lord High Chancellor that all he intended to print was absolutely true to the best of his knowledge ; for then the world would no longer be deceived as it usually is, while some <sup>30</sup> writers, to make their works pass the better upon the public, impose the grossest falsities on the unwary reader.

I have perused several books of travels with great delight in my younger days ; but having since gone over most parts of the globe, and been able to contradict many fabulous accounts from my own observation, it hath given me a great disgust against this part of reading, and some indignation to see the credulity of mankind so impudently abused. Therefore since my acquaintance were pleased to think my poor endeavours might not be unacceptable to my country, I imposed on myself as  
 10 a maxim, never to be swerved from, that I would *strictly adhere to truth* ; neither indeed can I be ever under the least temptation to vary from it, while I retain in my mind the lectures and example of my noble master, and the other illustrious Houyhnhnms, of whom I had so long the honour to be an humble hearer.

— *Nec si miserum Fortuna Sinonem  
 Finxit, vanum etiam mendacemque improba fingit.*

I know very well how little reputation is to be got by writings which require neither genius nor learning, nor  
 20 indeed any other talent except a good memory or an exact journal. I know likewise that writers of travels, like dictionary-makers, are sunk into oblivion by the weight and bulk of those who come after, and therefore lie uppermost. And it is highly probable that such travellers who shall hereafter visit the countries described in this work of mine, may, by detecting my errors (if there be any), and adding many new discoveries of their own, jumble me out of vogue, and stand in my place, making the world forget that I was ever an author. This indeed  
 30 would be too great a mortification if I wrote for fame : but, as my sole intention was the PUBLIC GOOD, I cannot be altogether disappointed. For who can read of the virtues I have mentioned in the glorious Houyhnhnms, without being ashamed of his own vices, when he

considers himself as the reasoning, governing animal of his country ? I shall say nothing of those remote nations where Yahoos preside ; amongst which the least corrupted are the Brobdingnagians, whose wise maxims in morality and government it would be our happiness to observe. But I forbear descanting farther, and rather leave the judicious reader to his own remarks and applications.

I am not a little pleased that this work of mine can possibly meet with no censurers : for what objections 10 can be made against a writer who relates only plain facts that happened in such distant countries, where we have not the least interest with respect either to trade or negotiations ? I have carefully avoided every fault with which common writers of travels are often too justly charged. Besides, I meddle not the least with any party, but write without passion, prejudice, or ill-will against any man or number of men whatsoever. I write for the noblest end, to inform and instruct mankind, over whom I may, without breach of modesty, pretend to 20 some superiority, from the advantages I received by conversing so long among the most accomplished Houyhnhnms. I write without any view towards profit or praise. I never suffer a word to pass that may look like reflection, or possibly give the least offence even to those who are most ready to take it. So that I hope I may with justice pronounce myself an author perfectly blameless, against whom the tribes of answerers, considerers, observers, reflecters, detecters, remarkers, will never be able to find matter for exercising their talents. 30

I confess it was whispered to me that I was bound in duty as a subject of England to have given in a memorial to a Secretary of State at my first coming over ; because whatever lands are discovered by a subject belong to the Crown. But I doubt whether our conquests in the

countries I treat of, would be as easy as those of Ferdinando Cortez over the naked Americans. The Lilliputians I think are hardly worth the charge of a fleet and army to reduce them ; and I question whether it might be prudent or safe to attempt the Brobdingnagians ; or whether an English army would be much at their ease with the Flying Island over their heads. The Houyhnhnms, indeed, appear not to be so well prepared for war, a science to which they are perfect strangers, and  
 10 especially against missive weapons. However, supposing myself to be a minister of state, I could never give my advice for invading them. Their prudence, unanimity, unacquaintedness with fear, and their love of their country, would amply supply all defects in the military art. Imagine twenty thousand of them breaking into the midst of an European army, confounding the ranks, overturning the carriages, battering the warriors' faces into mummy by terrible jerks from their hinder hoofs. For they would well deserve the character given to Augustus .  
 20 *Recalcitrat undique tutus.* But instead of proposals for conquering that magnanimous nation, I rather wish they were in a capacity or disposition to send a sufficient number of their inhabitants for civilizing Europe, by teaching us the first principles of honour, justice, truth, temperance, public spirit, fortitude, chastity, friendship, benevolence, and fidelity. The names of all which virtues are still retained among us in most languages, and are to be met with in modern as well as ancient authors ; which I am able to assert from my own small reading  
 30 But I had another reason which made me less forward to enlarge his Majesty's dominions by my discoveries. To say the truth, I had conceived a few scruples with relation to the distributive justice of princes upon those occasions. For instance, a crew of pirates are driven by a storm they know not whither, at length a boy discovers

land from the topmast, they go on shore to rob and plunder, they see an harmless people, are entertained with kindness, they give the country a new name, they take formal possession of it for their King, they set up a rotten plank or a stone for a memorial, they murder two or three dozen of the natives, bring away a couple more by force for a sample, return home, and get their pardon. Here commences a new dominion acquired with a title by *divine right*. Ships are sent with the first opportunity, the natives driven out or destroyed, their 10 princes tortured to discover their gold, a free licence given to all acts of inhumanity and lust, the earth reeking with the blood of its inhabitants : and this execrable crew of butchers employed in so pious an expedition, is a *modern colony* sent to convert and civilize an idolatrous and barbarous people.

But this description, I confess, doth by no means affect the British nation, who may be an example to the whole world for their wisdom, care, and justice in planting colonies ; their liberal endowments for the advancement 20 of religion and learning ; their choice of devout and able pastors to propagate Christianity ; their caution in stocking their provinces with people of sober lives and conversations from this the mother kingdom ; their strict regard to the distribution of justice, in supplying the civil administration through all their colonies with officers of the greatest abilities, utter strangers to corruption ; and to crown all, by sending the most vigilant and virtuous governors, who have no other views than the happiness of the people over whom they preside, 30 and the honour of the King their master.

But, as those countries which I have described do not appear to have any desire of being conquered, and enslaved, murdered or driven out by colonies, nor abound either in gold, silver, sugar, or tobacco ; I did humbly

conceive they were by no means proper objects of our zeal, our valour, or our interest. However, if those whom it more concerns think fit to be of another opinion, I am ready to depose, when I shall be lawfully called, that no European did ever visit these countries before me. I mean, if the inhabitants ought to be believed ; unless a dispute may arise about the two Yahoos, said to have been seen many ages ago in a mountain in Houyhnhnmland, from whence the opinion is, that the race of those  
 10 brutes hath descended ; and these, for anything I know, may have been English, which indeed I was apt to suspect from the lineaments of their posterity's countenances, although very much defaced. But, how far that will go to make out a title, I leave to the learned in colony-law.

But as to the formality of taking possession in my Sovereign's name, it never came once into my thoughts ; and if it had, yet as my affairs then stood, I should perhaps in point of prudence and self-preservation have  
 20 put it off to a better opportunity.

Having thus answered the only objection that can ever be raised against me as a traveller, I here take a final leave of all my courteous readers, and return to enjoy my own speculations in my little garden at Redriff, to apply those excellent lessons of virtue which I learned among the Houyhnhnms, to instruct the Yahoos of my own family as far as I shall find them docible animals ; to behold my figure often in a glass, and thus if possible habituate myself by time to tolerate the sight of a human  
 30 creature ; to lament the brutality of Houyhnhnms in my own country, but always treat their persons with respect, for the sake of my noble master, his family, his friends, and the whole Houyhnhnm race, whom these of ours have the honour to resemble in all their lineaments, however their intellectuals came to degenerate.



I began last week to permit my wife to sit at dinner with me, at the farthest end of a long table, and to answer (but with the utmost brevity) the few questions I ask her. Yet the smell of a Yahoo continuing very offensive, I always keep my nose well stopped with rue, lavender, or tobacco leaves. And although it be hard for a man late in life to remove old habits, I am not altogether out of hopes in some time to suffer a neighbour Yahoo in my company, without the apprehensions I am yet under of his teeth or his claws.

10

My reconciliation to the Yahoo-kind in general might not be so difficult, if they would be content with those vices and follies only which nature hath entitled them to. I am not in the least provoked at the sight of a lawyer, a pick-pocket, a colonel, a fool, a lord, a gamester, a politician, a physician, an evidence, a suborner, an attorney, a traitor, or the like ; this is all according to the due course of things : but when I behold a lump of deformity and diseases both in body and mind, smitten with *pride*, it immediately breaks all the measures of my 20 patience ; neither shall I be ever able to comprehend how such an animal and such a vice could tally together. The wise and virtuous Houyhnhnms, who abound in all excellencies that can adorn a rational creature, have no name for this vice in their language, which hath no terms to express any thing that is evil, except those whereby they describe the detestable qualities of their Yahoos, among which they were not able to distinguish this of pride, for want of thoroughly understanding human nature, as it sheweth itself in other countries, where that 30 animal presides. But I, who had more experience, could plainly observe some rudiments of it among the wild Yahoos.

But the Houyhnhnms, who live under the government of reason, are no more proud of the good qualities they

possess, than I should be for not wanting a leg or an arm, which no man in his wits would boast of, although he must be miserable without them. I dwell the longer upon this subject from the desire I have to make the society of an English Yahoo by any means not insupportable ; and therefore I here entreat those who have any tincture of this absurd vice, that they will not presume to come in my sight.

FINIS.



## EDITOR'S NOTES

PAGE 1. *Several Copies of Verses.* Four of these are prefixed to the *Travels* in the second edition, viz.—

To Quinbus Flestrin the Man-Mountain. An Ode. By Titty Tit, Esq; Poet Laureat to his Majesty of Lilliput. Translated into English.

The Lamentation of Glumdalclitch for the Loss of Girdrig. A Pastoral.

To Mr. Lemuel Gulliver, The Grateful Address of the Unhappy Houyhnhnms, now in Slavery and Bondage in England.

Mary Gulliver to Capt. Lemuel Gulliver; an Epistle.

The first set of verses is in lines of three syllables, the others are in heroic couplets. They were all written by Pope, but are unsigned, and quite unworthy of his genius. They will be found in the edition of Pope's *Poetical Works* by Elwin and Courthope, vol. iv, pp. 504-13.

PAGE 3. A LETTER FROM CAPTAIN GULLIVER TO HIS COUSIN SYMPSON. This letter, though professedly dated April 2, 1727, was first printed in the Dublin edition, published by Faulkner in 1735, and was probably written by Swift for that edition. His object was to draw attention to the unwarrantable liberties which the publisher of the first and second editions had taken with the text. This publisher, Benjamin Motte, had apparently feared that some of the political and other allusions were too outspoken, and might cause trouble, and had toned them down. Instances are pointed out in the notes, and further information on the subject of the 1735 edition will be found in the Introduction. Swift is also concerned in this letter, not only to keep up the air of mystery surrounding the authorship of the *Travels*, but to clear the author of responsibility for errors and contradictions in them.

6. *incorrect.* When Swift wrote, and for many years after, the English negative prefix *un-* was used with a large number of the commoner adjectives of Latin origin, e.g. *uncessant*, *unglorious*. Later in the eighteenth century, the feeling that such words were hybrids led in most cases to the substitution of the Latin prefix *in-*, although some words, as *unfortunate*, *unjust*, were too firmly rooted for alteration. It is hardly possible to lay down general rules for the use of *un-* and *in-* in present English. Thus native suffixes, as *-ed*, are generally found with *un-*, and yet we have *inexperienced*, *inedited*.

8. *Dampier*. William Dampier (1652–1715), the famous buccaneer and explorer, published his *New Voyage Round the World* in 1697. In this well-written narrative he describes his wanderings and adventures between 1683 and 1691, in the course of which he visited Guinea, raided the Spanish settlements on the Pacific coasts of America, crossed to the Philippines, and proceeded to China, Australia, Sumatra, India, and other countries.

14. *a paragraph about . . . Queen Anne*. See the note on this passage, in Part IV, chap. vi, p. 290.

19. *not decent to praise any animal of our composition. . . .* It was unbecoming to praise any human being as the superior of the civilized and intelligent horse whose servant Gulliver was. See the fourth Part for an explanation of this passage, and of others in this letter. The Houyhnhnms regarded human beings with abhorrence and contempt.

24. *the Lord of Godolphin*. The Earl of Godolphin (c. 1645–1712) was Lord High Treasurer and virtually Prime Minister during the first eight years of Queen Anne's reign. In 1710 he was abruptly dismissed, and Robert Harley (Earl of Oxford in 1711) formed a new ministry, and remained at the head of affairs during the remainder of the reign. Godolphin and Oxford were both Tories.

26. *say the thing that was not*. The Houyhnhnm, Gulliver's master, expressed himself thus when he thought Gulliver was lying, as there was no word in his language to express lying or falsehood (Part IV, chap. iii, p. 267).

27. *the account of the Academy of Projectors*. See Part III, ch. v. Notwithstanding this statement, the changes made in this chapter in the edition of 1735 are very slight.

*several passages of my discourse. . . .* This refers especially to the latter part of chapter v in Part IV, from 'Therefore he desired to be farther satisfied', &c. (p. 283) to the end, to the passage relating to the First Minister in chapter vi (p. 290), and the final paragraph of the same chapter. See the notes on these passages.

PAGE 4. 3. *people in power were very watchful . . .* Although the last Act for licensing the Press expired in 1694, the power of a Secretary of State to issue a warrant for seizing the author of a libel, or confiscating any libellous publication, remained, until it was declared illegal in 1765.

7. *at about five thousand leagues distance*. Houyhnhnm-land is said to be south of Western Australia. Allowing for the circuitous voyage round the Cape, the distance is not much over-estimated.

8. *the Yahoos, who now are said to govern the herd*. The house of Hanover.

9. *at a time when I little thought on . . .* Primarily, of course,

this means, 'at a time when I little expected I should have to exchange the happiness of living under the mild and just rule of Houyhnhnms for the misery of living under the government of Yahoos or men'. The words are, however, capable of the interpretation, which Swift quite possibly meant to suggest, 'in the reign of Queen Anne, when I little anticipated the unhappiness of living under Hanoverian kings'. For Swift the accession of George I meant the end of his political power and hopes of promotion.

13. *as if these were brutes, and those . . .* 'As if the latter . . . and the former.' The language has now lost this convenient use of *this* and *that*. Cf. the Latin *hic, ille*, the French *celui-ci, celui-là*, and the German *dieser, jener*, in the sense of 'the latter', 'the former'.

35. *Smithfield blazing with pyramids of law-books*. Smithfield was a large open space (now occupied by the Central Meat Market) conveniently situated without the walls of the city of London, where a cattle market, fairs, and public assemblies were held. Persons condemned for heresy or witchcraft were burnt there in earlier times.

The abuses which Gulliver had hoped to see removed are described in his discourse to his Houyhnhnm master in Part IV, chapters v and vi, and in his master's comments in chapter vii.

PAGE 5. 4. *levees*. *Levee*, from French *levé*, a variant of the more common form *lever*, lit. 'a rising', was a reception of gentlemen held by a king or nobleman immediately after rising from his bed. The word is still used for the sovereign's morning receptions of gentlemen.

7. *cotton*. Of the rags of which paper is made.

12. *seven months*. Swift had forgotten that the book was published on the 28th of October, 1726, which is five months before the alleged date of this letter.

18. *libels*. Not quite in the modern sense, but rather as Johnson defines it, 'a satire; defamatory writing; a lampoon'. The literal meaning is merely 'a little book, a pamphlet', Latin *libellus*.

*keys*. A worthless *Key* by a certain Corolini was published three weeks after the appearance of *Gulliver's Travels*.

19. *second parts*. A third volume, chiefly stolen from a French work, was published in Gulliver's name in 1727. Another imitation of the same year was called *A Voyage to Cacklogallinia*. These are books to which Gulliver says he is 'wholly a stranger'.

33. *I have sent you some corrections*. See the Introduction p. xi f.

PAGE 6. 4. *nor now in use*. This may well have been the case, as Swift took the nautical terms in the opening chapter of Part II from Sturmy's *Compleat Mariner*, published in 1669.

21. *Utopia*. The title of Sir Thomas More's celebrated book, written in 1516, describing an imaginary commonwealth. The name is intended to mean 'no place', from the Greek οὐ τόπος.

23. *Broddingrag*. This pretended correction is merely to heighten the illusion.

30. *in this city*. Swift forgets that Gulliver is writing from a remote house in Nottinghamshire.

PAGE 8. THE PUBLISHER TO THE READER. *Publisher* is here used in the obsolete sense of 'editor'. Richard Sympson is as fictitious a person as Gulliver, and Swift wrote this preface to enhance the realistic effect.

2. *Lemuel*. The Puritans of the seventeenth century were fond of giving their children strange Old Testament names. Lemuel was a king mentioned in Proverbs xxxi. 1.

3. *ancient*. Not 'aged', but 'of long standing'.

6. *Redriff*. A corrupt form of the name Rotherhithe, a London parish on the south bank of the Thames, between Bermondsey and Deptford, still largely inhabited by seafaring men, though less agreeable than it was in Swift's day.

14. *Banbury*. A market town in North Oxfordshire. Swift may have observed some Gulliver tombs there on one of his numerous journeys between Dublin and London, as Banbury lies at the junction of two of the roads between London and the Irish Sea. The family of Gulliver still exists at Banbury (1911) and other south-midland towns. The forms Gullifer, Gulliford, Guldeford, point to Guildford as the original name.

26. *spoke*. An obsolete form of *spoken*.

PAGE 9. 5. *variations*. The variation or declination of the compass is the deviation of the needle from the true north or south. As the magnetic poles do not correspond to the poles of the earth's rotation, the angle the needle makes with the true north varies all over the world.

6. *bearings*. In the plural, a nautical term for the direction in which a point lies from one of the points of the compass, generally measured in degrees, or, less exactly, by naming the nearest point.

7. *minute descriptions*. Swift gives one in Part II, ch. i. See the note.

## PART I. A VOYAGE TO LILLIPUT

The satirical effect in this part is in the main produced by a very simple expedient, viz. that in the two countries of Lilliput and Blefuscu human beings and all other things are reduced in size on the scale of an inch to a foot, areas being accordingly  $\frac{1}{144}$ , and cubic contents  $\frac{1}{1728}$  of the normal. The consequences are elaborated with great consistency, the result being that by

a process of thought which is imaginative rather than logical, the pomp and majesty of courts, the pride of empire, and the glory of war are made to appear contemptible and vain. A very similar, though much less realistic effect is produced here and there by an entirely different method, not found at all in the second part, and very little in the fourth, but one which Swift had already employed with great success long before in the *Tale of a Tub*, and uses again in the descriptions of Laputa and Luggnagg, the method of fantastic allegory. The capers on the tight-rope, the grotesque mode of burial, the parties of High and Low Heels, and the Big-Indian controversy are purely symbolic, and are designed to make matters look trivial and silly which are generally regarded as grave and profound.

Unlike the other nations visited by Gulliver, the Lilliputians and Blefuscuans behave generally neither better nor worse than average Englishmen of Swift's day. They have, it is true, as is related in chapter vi, many laws and customs totally different from our own, and, in Swift's view, much wiser. However, as if he suddenly remembered that his intention was to describe, not an idealized nation, but one suffering from the usual frailties and follies, he adds that he means 'the original institutions, and not the most scandalous corruptions into which these people are fallen by the degenerate nature of man'. Apart from a few pessimistic or bitter touches, the satire is as yet good-natured and playful, and free from the cynicism and ferocity which darken the later Parts.

PAGE 16. The map shows the islands of Lilliput and Blefuscu in the Indian Ocean, about two thousand miles SSW. of Sumatra.

## CHAPTER I

PAGE 17. 3. *Lilliput*. This name, invented by Swift, is probably made of the dialect words *lill*, 'little', and *put*, 'a clown, a stupid rustic', and may be rendered 'Little fellows' land'.

10. *Emanuel*. Now spelt Emmanuel. This college, which was founded in Queen Elizabeth's reign, was famous for its Puritanism.

11. *at fourteen years old*. An ungrammatical phrase, due to confusion between 'when fourteen years old' and 'at the age of fourteen'. It was still by no means rare in Swift's day for boys to enter the universities at this age. Swift himself was fourteen when he was admitted to Trinity College, Dublin, and Addison went up to Oxford at fifteen.

15. *bound apprentice to . . . an eminent surgeon*. The profession of surgery (a word derived from the Greek *χειρουργία*, lit. 'hand-working') was only now rising from the humbler rank of a handicraft. Members of the gild of barber-surgeons trained young apprentices in their craft, just as in any other trade.



25. *Leyden*. The city of Leiden (as the name is now spelt) contains the leading Dutch university, one of the most famous in Europe. In the seventeenth century it was frequented by many foreigners, including Englishmen, its scientific, and especially medical, reputation standing at this time higher than those of the English universities. At a later date Goldsmith studied medicine there. Cf. also Stevenson's *Catriona*.

PAGE 18. 3. *the Levant*. The eastern Mediterranean, with its islands and coast-lands. French *levant*, 'rising', hence sunrise, east.

7. *the Old Jury*. Now spelt 'Jewry'. A street in the city of London, on the north side of Cheapside. It marks the site of the quarter in which the London Jews were forced to live, before they were expelled from England by Edward I. Old Fr. *juerie*.

8. *Mrs. Mary Burton*. The title Mrs., an abbreviation of 'mistress', was formerly applied to all women and girls (even infants) of gentle birth, and gradually extended to those of humbler rank. In Swift's time it was in general restricted to those over sixteen years of age, younger girls being entitled 'Miss', which is a shortened form of the same word.

30. *Fetter-Lane*. A street running from Holborn to Fleet Street.

*Wapping*. A district on the north bank of the Thames, a little below the Tower of London, forming part of Stepney, and having a large seafaring population. Like Rotherhithe, it was a better neighbourhood at this time than it is now.

35. *the South-Sea*. Apparently used here vaguely to include the seas round the Malay Archipelago. Strictly speaking, the Pacific Ocean; originally (in Spanish, *Mar del Sur*) that part of it south of the Central American isthmus corresponding to the *Mar del Norte*, Northern Sea, or Caribbean Sea, north of it.

PAGE 19. 7. *Van Diemen's Land*. Tasmania, which bore this name until recently, was discovered in 1642 by the great Dutch explorer, Abel Tasman, who named it after the governor of the Dutch East Indies, Antony van Diemen. It was supposed in Swift's time that Tasmania was part of the Australian continent, and in the map prefixed to the Voyage to Lilliput the name 'Dimens Land' is given to the part of Western Australia near Albany.

8. *an observation*. The latitude was found by observing the sun's altitude with a quadrant or sextant.

14. *half a cable's length*. In nautical language a cable is a rope or chain of the length of 100 fathoms, or 600 feet.

17. *made a shift*. 'Contrived with difficulty', 'managed somehow'. The phrase meant originally 'to make a change' (in one's methods).

23. *flurry*. A squall or gust, or, in sailors' language, 'a flaw'.

The word, first recorded in 1698, seems to have been suggested by the sound.

PAGE 20. 6. *the grass, which was very short.* Gulliver tells us in Part I, ch. vi, that the size of all the plants and animals in Lilliput is exactly proportionate to that of the human beings, i. e. one-twelfth of their length with us. This proportion is carefully maintained.

9. *awaked.* At the present day the verb, whether transitive or intransitive, is generally conjugated *awake, awoke, awaked*, but the forms were not fixed in Swift's time. The modern verb is the result of a blending of three Old English verbs, viz. (1) *āwacan*, *āwōc*, *āwacen*, intrans. 'to awake', (2) *āwacian*, *āwacode*, *āwacod*, 'to keep awake, watch', and (3) *āweccan*, *āweahte*, *āweaht*, trans. 'to awake (a person)'.

*I attempted to rise . . .* This incident was perhaps suggested by a passage in Book II of the *Εἰκόνες* (Pictures) of the Greek writer Philostratus, who lived c. A. D. 200, in which he describes a picture of Hercules bound and assailed by the Pygmies.

14. *ligatures.* Bands or cords used for tying.

17. *offended.* 'Struck painfully, annoyed.' Through Old Fr. from Lat. *offendere*, lit. 'to strike against'.

PAGE 21. 12. *accent.* Not quite in the modern sense of modulation or pronunciation, but rather in the obsolete sense of timbre or quality of sound.

20. *I fell a groaning.* 'a' represents the older 'on', and *groaning* is the verbal substantive.

24. *a buff jerkin.* A close-fitting jacket of buffalo- or ox-hide, dressed soft, formerly worn by soldiers and sailors as a protection against sword-cuts. *Buff* is derived from Fr. *buffle*, a buffalo, and is also used for the colour of this kind of leather, a dull yellow.

PAGE 22. 3. *I saw a stage erected . . .* Swift is perhaps here alluding sarcastically to the custom, which had arisen among the Whig aristocracy after the Revolution of 1688, of haranguing the public from the hustings at elections.

PAGE 23. 17. *hogsheads.* A hogshead is a large cask, equal to two barrels or 63 imperial gallons. As there are 504 pints in a hogshead, a Lilliputian hogshead, if in exact proportion, would contain much less than half a pint.

20. *a small wine.* A light, weak wine.

PAGE 24. 14. *the small of my right leg.* The thin part between the knee and the calf.

17. *the Signet Royal.* The adjective follows the noun, in accordance with French usage, in certain phrases, chiefly of Norman or Old French origin, connected with feudal law and custom, as *blood royal, crown imperial, heir apparent, knight-errant, lion rampant, lords spiritual, borough-English, sign manual.*

PAGE 25. 24. *an express*. 'A special messenger.'

PAGE 26. 13. *engines*. 'Machines.'

35. *four inches and a half*. Horses of the corresponding height,  $4\frac{1}{2}$  ft., or  $13\frac{1}{2}$  hands, would now be regarded as ponies. The size has increased through improving the breed, and horses of 17 hands (5 ft. 8 in.) are now not uncommon. Cf. the note to p. 61. 12, also p. 127. 29.

PAGE 27. 10. *half-pike*. A small pike formerly carried by officers.

PAGE 28. 1. *fourscore and eleven chains . . . six and thirty padlocks*. It is singular that in his *Tale of a Tub*, Swift wrote, more than twenty years earlier, 'Fourscore and eleven pamphlets have I written . . . and for the service of six and thirty factions'.

12. *several times*. 'Different times.'

## CHAPTER II

PAGE 29. 8. *entertaining*. 'Interesting', not necessarily amusing.

9. *continued*. 'Continuous,' 'uninterrupted.'

12. *a stang*. An obsolete name for a pole, also for the measure of length otherwise known as a rod, pole, or perch,  $16\frac{1}{2}$  ft. Cf. Ger. *stange*, a stake.

28. *a sort of vehicles*. The phrases 'a sort of', 'a kind of' are in present English seldom, if ever, followed by a plural noun.

By *vehicles* is meant simply 'vessels', an obsolete sense.

PAGE 30. 3. *Princes . . . of both sexes*. This use of *prince* became obsolete soon after Swift's time.

8. *He is taller . . .* As Lilliput represents England, its emperor has generally been supposed to represent George I. Although some resemblance may be traced in their characters, notably in their thrift, courage, and caution, their physical characteristics differed widely. George I was short and ungainly, his nose was not arched, and his deportment certainly not majestic.

11. *an Austrian lip*. A peculiarly thick under-lip is characteristic of the members of the house of Habsburg, the ruling dynasty in Austria. This hereditary mark, which is noticeable in more than one living European monarch, is derived from the Dukes of Burgundy, ancestors of the Emperor Charles V.

12. *his countenance erect*. *Erect* is here used in the obsolete sense of 'not downcast', 'unabashed'.

14. *past his prime, being twenty-eight years and three quarters old*. As the age of fifteen answers to twenty-one with us (p. 66), the emperor's age answers to forty and a quarter, which nowadays would hardly be considered past the prime of life.

PAGE 31. 2. *habits*. 'Dress.'

5. *High and Low Dutch*. The word *Dutch* was used by the older English writers in the sense of 'German'. Cf. Ger. *Deutsch*, Du. *Duitsch*, originally meaning 'belonging to the people'. German dialects are divided into two great groups, High German spoken in the south, which is chiefly hilly, and Low German spoken in the great low plain of the north. Literary German is the chief form of High German, and the Dutch and Flemish languages have arisen from Low German dialects.

6. *Lingua Franca*. Literally 'language of the Franks', a mixed form of speech used in the Mediterranean as a medium of communication between Arabs, Greeks, &c., and West European sailors and traders, much as pidgin English is used in the Far East. It is based on Italian, with many French, Spanish, and Greek words, and probably developed chiefly during the Crusades. Since the time of Charlemagne's empire the term 'Frank' has been given by the Levantines to West Europeans generally.

35. *a bed*. 'A mattress.'

PAGE 32. 4. *four double*. An irregular expression for 'four-fold', or 'in four layers', in common use from the sixteenth to the early eighteenth century.

31. *that the stench . . . might produce a plague . . . and probably spread . . .* A characteristically ungrammatical sentence. It was the plague, not the stench, that they feared might spread through the kingdom.

PAGE 33. 7. *beeres*. Oxen, or their carcases, especially when fattened. The word, which in this sense and in the plural is now only a provincialism or archaism, is derived from Old Fr. *boef* (mod. Fr. *bœuf*). The plural is formed on the analogy of native English words like *thieves*.

8. *proportionable*. A nearly obsolete word, equivalent to 'proportionate'.

10. *assignments*. Promissory notes, which the farmers could take in exchange for food supplied to Gulliver, and present for payment at the Treasury.

11. *this prince lives chiefly upon his own demesnes*. i.e. his household expenses are chiefly defrayed from the Crown lands. A *demesne* or *domain*, which is another form of the same word, is an estate occupied directly by the owner, and not by any of his tenants. The word is derived from Old Fr. *demaine*, *domaine*, from Lat. *dominicum*, 'belonging to the lord'.

13. *subsidies*. Grants of money which the kings of England used to demand from Parliament for special purposes, such as wars. They were raised by property taxes, customs duties, &c., and sometimes were substitutes for feudal service. The last were granted to Charles II. A more modern sense of the word, which

must not be confused with the above, is a Government grant in aid to a foreign state, or to an industry, or shipping company.

It may be noted here that, like other European institutions, the feudal system is established in Lilliput.

PAGE 34. 8. *weapons*. It has been suggested that the confiscation of the contents of Gulliver's pockets, harmless as most of them were, is a satire on the excessive zeal with which the Government agents effected the disarming of persons suspected of Jacobite or Roman Catholic sympathies. In Ireland Swift must have heard many stories of this kind. It is related that one suspect solemnly deposited his poker, tongs, and shovel in Dublin Castle, and was given a receipt for them.

23. *fobs*. A fob was a small pocket, for a watch or purse, in the waist-band of the breeches.

31. *This inventory* . . . Ungrammatical, as these words are first object, then subject.

This inventory recalls the reports of the Committees of Secrecy, drawn up by Government spies, who were often absurdly suspicious and credulous.

33. *In primis*. 'In the first place', a law phrase; Latin, from *in primis*, 'among the first things'.

PAGE 35. 1. *a foot-cloth*. 'A carpet.'

16. *palisados*. *Palisado*, a corruption of Span. *palizada*, is equivalent to *palisade*, from Fr. *palissade*, a fence made of pales.

22. *a hollow pillar of iron*. This of course was a pistol.

29. *red metal*. Copper, of which halfpennies and farthings were made until 1860, when bronze was substituted. Pennies were still of silver in Swift's time.

PAGE 36. 16. *a globe*. Watches were very thick, like flattened globes, and the glasses were highly convex.

PAGE 37. 19. *scimitar*. A short curved sword used by the Turks and Persians. The word is apparently derived through Italian from the Persian *shim-shir*, lit. 'lion's claw'. Arms were carried by the officers and crews of merchant ships, but it is odd to find Gulliver armed with an Oriental weapon.

PAGE 38. 13. *in some time*. We should now say 'for some time'.

20. *yeomen of the guards*. The duties of the English Yeomen of the Guard, popularly known as Beef-eaters, are, or were, personal attendance on the king in the palace, when travelling, and with the army in the field. This, the oldest existing English standing force, was formed by Henry VII in 1485, probably before the battle of Bosworth. A yeoman is a man of the class of small freeholders, below the rank of esquires.

PAGE 39. 4. *perspective*. An obsolete name for a telescope, from Lat. *perspicere*, 'to look through'.

## CHAPTER III

PAGE 40. 21. *rope-dancers*. Swift here satirizes the dexterous and undignified political tricks and tergiversations, which were almost a necessity to those who would gain and keep public office and Court favour in his day.

PAGE 41. 5. *Flinnap, the Treasurer*. Said to represent Sir Robert Walpole, the great Whig minister, who, in 1715 and again in 1721, was made First Lord of the Treasury and Chancellor of the Exchequer. He was the object of violent attacks by Swift.

8. *summerset*. Now more commonly spelt *somersault*. From Fr. *soubresaut*, probably from Span. *sobresalto* = Lat. *supra saltus*, 'a leap over'.

22. *Flinnap would have . . . broke his neck*. With the form *broke* cf. *spoke* on p. 3. Walpole was forced to resign office in 1717 owing to the jealousies of his colleagues and the intrigues of the king's German favourites; but four years later he was restored to the leadership of the ministry, through the influence, it is said, of the Duchess of Kendal, who is perhaps referred to as 'one of the King's cushions'.

29. *threads*. These represent orders of knighthood. In the first edition the colours are purple, yellow, and white. Swift made the allusion more obvious by altering them in the second edition to blue, red, and green, the colours respectively of the ribbons of the Garter, founded by Edward III about 1348, the Bath, founded by George I in 1725 (the year before the *Travels* were published), and the Thistle, founded by James II in 1687. The Order of the Thistle, however, which is the Scottish order, ranks as high as that of the Bath.

35. *a trial of dexterity*. An allusion to the servility to the sovereign, which was too often the means by which decorations were obtained. The Order of the Bath was founded on Walpole's recommendation as a device for rewarding adhesion to the house of Hanover. Swift, who scorned such methods, satirized Walpole in some verses on the occasion, ending,

'And he who'll leap over a stick for the King,  
Is qualified best for a dog in a string.'

PAGE 42. 1. *such as I have not observed the least resemblance of*. Ungrammatical, but clear.

4. *both ends parallel to the horizon*. Badly expressed for 'horizontally'.

25. *sticks of two foot high*. A mixture of two constructions, (1) sticks two foot high, and (2) sticks of the height of two foot. Cf. p. 17. 11, 'at fourteen years old'. The unchanged plural of measure preceded by a numeral was formerly general, but in present English tends to be regarded as a vulgarity, although

retained with certain words, as *brace, dozen, score, gross, stone*, and in adjectival phrases, as in 'two-foot rule', 'ten-mile walk'.

30. *carriages*. Here 'wagons'. The word was formerly applied to any wheeled vehicle. Cf. *gun-carriage*.

32. *a quadrangular figure, two foot and a half square*. Like most of Swift's geometrical descriptions, this is confused. The 'quadrangular figure' is simply a square, and the sticks, being only two feet long, are too short, whether as uprights or cross-pieces. By 'tied them parallel at each corner' is meant 'tied them at each corner so as to be alternately parallel with each other', i.e. so as to form a horizontal railing running round the platform.

PAGE 43. 13. *discovered*. 'Displayed.'

20. *close chair*. An enclosed chair carried on poles by two men, a sedan chair.

PAGE 44. 1. *these kind of feats*. Although ungrammatical, this idiom is of frequent and ancient use. The older form was 'these kind (gen. pl.) feats'. The persistence of the idiom is due to the feeling that 'kind of' has an adjectival force.

PAGE 45. 1. *the Emperor having ordered that part of his army . . .* George I's excessive fondness for military pageantry is here made ridiculous.

5. *a Colossus*. A gigantic statue (Greek *Κολοσσός*), especially the one here alluded to, which stood by the harbour of Rhodes. It was a bronze figure of the sun-god Helios, standing about 100 feet high, which was completed in 280 B.C. and thrown down by an earthquake fifty-six years later. The popular idea that it straddled the entrance to the port is unfounded. Cf. Shakespeare, *Julius Caesar*, i. ii. 135 ff.:

Why, man, he doth bestride the narrow world  
Like a Colossus, and we petty men  
Walk under his huge legs and peep about  
To find ourselves dishonourable graves.

9. *in a breast*. The modern *abreast* is shortened from this obsolete phrase, of which *of, on (a) breast* are variants.

15. *first in the cabinet, and then in a full council*. Queen Anne was the last British sovereign to preside at a Cabinet Council, as the first two Georges were unfamiliar with English. The Cabinet, which is an institution not recognized by constitutional law, is theoretically a standing committee of the Privy Council, and in practice is a consultative and executive body consisting of the ministers responsible for the great departments of the administration. Something of the kind existed informally under the Tudors and Stuarts, but strictly speaking the Cabinet was formed by William III in 1693, when the British constitution took its modern shape.

The Privy Council consists of eminent persons, both in and out of Parliament, nominated by the king. It arose in Norman times, and formerly possessed wide administrative and judicial powers, of which it has been gradually shorn. Its functions as a council are now purely formal, but there is a Judicial Committee of the Privy Council which hears Colonial appeals.

16. *Skyresh Bolgolam*. There does not seem to be sufficient reason for identifying this minister with Swift's enemy, the Duke of Argyll, as Taylor does, or with any one else.

22. *complexion*. 'Temperament', 'disposition'. This word was originally applied to the combination of qualities, cold or hot, moist or dry, which were supposed to be mixed in different proportions in every human body, and to produce the four humours, melancholy, choleric, phlegmatic, and sanguine. As the physical humours had their mental counterparts, so the 'complexion' might be the bodily or the mental constitution.

29. *I was demanded to swear*. 'Called upon to swear.'

PAGE 46. 9. *twelve miles in circumference*. A very small empire, even for Lilliputians, corresponding, if the proportion be observed, to a state of the size of Devonshire. This adds to the absurdity of the Emperor's pretensions.

PAGE 47. 11. *covering the wall*. Either as coping or facing.

12. *other our royal buildings*. A legal construction.

21. 1728. See note to 'A Voyage to Lilliput' on p. 344.

23. *the ninety-first moon*. As the 'moon' is a lunar month of twenty-eight days, this exactly agrees with the statement, made on p. 30, that the Emperor has reigned about seven years. Two months have passed since the inventory was signed (p. 37).

PAGE 48. 13. *quadrant*. An instrument for measuring the angular height of an object, especially for taking the sun's altitude for the purpose of navigation. It consists principally of a telescope attached by a pivot to a graduated arc of 90°, whence the name (Lat. *quadrans*, a quarter).

#### CHAPTER IV

PAGE 49. 16. *sideling*. An adverb meaning 'sideways', now more commonly used in the form *sidelong*. The suffix *-long*, *-ling*, representing Old Eng. *-lunga*, is found also in *headlong*, *darkling*, *grovelling*. *Sideling* having been mistaken for a present participle, a new verb 'to sidle' has been formed from it, a so-called back-formation, like 'to grovel'.

PAGE 51. 8. *anticipate the reader*. An elliptical expression, with some such meaning as 'anticipate the enjoyment the reader will derive from my forthcoming work'.

31. *pretend to some merit in it*. 'Claim some credit for it.'



PAGE 52. 4. *above seventy moons past.* For some purposes, though not for the ages of persons, Swift appears to use 'moons' allegorically for years. This would date the beginning of the domestic dissensions about 1629, when the troubles of Charles I's reign were beginning. Cf. the notes to pp. 47. 23, 53. 1, 5.

5. *two struggling parties.* This refers vaguely to the contention which, in various phases, had so long convulsed England; the struggle between Royalists and Roundheads, Tories and Whigs, Jacobites and Hanoverians, High and Low Church. 'High heels' suggests High Church and high Tories.

14. *his Majesty's Imperial heels are lower . . .* George I, as a Lutheran, was even less concerned than his Whig advisers with the maintenance of Anglican privileges and pretensions.

18. *We compute the Tramecksan . . .* The Whigs, who smoothed the way for the accession of George I, and were in office all through his reign, owed their power less to popular support than to the moneyed class and the groups of aristocratic families which controlled Parliament. The Tories, who were probably more numerous, were weakened by disunion, many of them supporting the house of Stuart.

21. *the Heir to the Crown.* The Prince of Wales, afterwards George II, was notoriously on very bad terms with his father, and intrigued with the leaders of the Tory Opposition, as well as with discontented Whigs. There was much speculation as to the party he would favour in the event of his accession.

25. *intestine.* 'Internal', 'domestic', from Lat. *intestinus*.  
*we are threatened with an invasion . . .* Blefuscu represents France, which had supported the Jacobite and Roman Catholic claims, and had waged two fierce wars with England (see note below), although when Swift wrote the two kingdoms were in alliance.

PAGE 53. 1. *six thousand moons.* An allusion to the idea then prevalent that the world was about 6,000 years old.

5. *six and thirty moons.* In 1689, thirty-six years before 1725, when *Gulliver* was being prepared for publication, William III had declared war against France, and although the peace of Ryswick was signed in 1697, the War of the Spanish Succession broke out in 1702, and lasted eleven years.

8. *his present Majesty's grandfather . . .* These incidents do not correspond to any historical facts, although the Big-Endians are evidently the Roman Catholics, and the Little-Endians the Protestants. Swift's object is to ridicule what he, rather shallowly, regards as the trivial causes of religious controversies and wars.

Although religious motives were present in the struggle with France, the chief reason why England maintained the contest was the fear that France would become overwhelmingly powerful on the Continent, and restore the Stuarts.

16. *one Emperor lost his life and another his crown.* Perhaps Charles I and James II, though of course their downfalls were due to anything but an attempt to enforce Protestantism.

19. *the exiles always fled for refuge . . .* During the earlier years of the Commonwealth the Court and many prominent Royalists resided in Paris; and in Swift's day many Jacobites found a refuge in France, notably Bolingbroke in 1714 and Bishop Atterbury in 1723.

24. *the books of the Big-Endians . . .* By a statute of Edward VI 'for the abolishing and putting away of divers books and images', it was ordered that all Popish books should be burnt.

25. *rendered incapable by law . . .* The Test Acts (1661, 1672, 1678), which obliged all holders of office under the Crown to receive the Holy Communion according to the rites of the Church of England, excluded all Roman Catholics from public employment.

32. *Alcoran.* i. e. their sacred book. Alcoran, now more commonly called the Koran, is the Mohammedan Bible, the collection of alleged revelations made to Mohammed. The Arabic words *al qorán* mean 'the recitation' or 'the reading'.

PAGE 54. 2. *in the power of the chief magistrate.* The right of the civil authority to determine the profession of faith of the nation (*ius reformandi*) was admitted in Germany by the Religious Peace of Augsburg in 1555, and confirmed with modifications by the Treaty of Westphalia in 1648. Charles II enforced uniformity with great rigour in England, a policy which James II abandoned. William III's Toleration Act of 1689 gave freedom of worship to Protestant Dissenters in England, and in 1712 Episcopalians secured the same right in Scotland.

8. *capital ships.* Ships of the largest size, ships of the line, or battle-ships.

## CHAPTER V

PAGE 55. 14. *embargo.* An order forbidding the departure of ships from the ports of the nation, or the entrance into them of the ships of another, generally a hostile, state. The word is Spanish.

25. *perspective-glass.* See note to p. 39. 4.

PAGE 56. 11. *The enemy was so frightened when they saw me.* Note the change from the grammatical singular to the logical plural.

14. *thirty thousand souls.* Not necessarily all from the 50 warships, though 600 is a possible average crew. Sir Cloudisley Shovell's flagship, the *Association*, sank with 800 men in 1707.

PAGE 57. 4. *with great ease drew fifty of the enemy's largest men-of-war after me.* If the Blufuscudian men-of-war were as large as

the Lilliputian, viz. up to nine feet long (p. 26), this was a remarkable feat of strength. The largest British warships of William III's time were more than 164 feet long.

22. *expecting*. 'Awaiting.'

PAGE 58. 1. *encomiums*. 'Formal praises,' from Greek ἐγκώμιον, 'a laudatory ode', lit. 'full of revelry'.

5. *so unmeasurable is the ambition* . . . At the time of Marlborough's great victories, some English enthusiasts actually supposed that the Allies might annex France. Swift had no illusions on the subject of military glory.

11. *I endeavoured to divert him* . . . Swift, in his pamphlet, *The Conduct of the Allies*, had in 1711 argued vehemently in favour of terminating the war with France, which, he maintained, was benefiting nobody in England except the Duke of Marlborough and his friends.

24. *by a side-wind*. i.e. indirectly.

26. *junto*. A political clique or cabal. The word has become famous in English history through its application to the group of Whig leaders in the reigns of William III and Anne, of whom the chief were Admiral Edward Russell, Lord Keeper Somers, Charles Montague (Lord Halifax), and Lord Wharton. Among them were some of Swift's bitterest enemies. *Junto* is a corruption of Span. *junta*, 'a council'.

PAGE 59. 1. *six ambassadors*. The word was formerly used in a wider sense than now, and could be applied, as here, to an envoy extraordinary.

28. *represented my intercourse with those ambassadors as a mark of disaffection*. In 1711 St. John (Lord Bolingbroke) entered into secret negotiations with the French with the object of securing a separate peace for England, on which account he was fiercely attacked by the Whigs, who thought he was sacrificing national interests for party ends.

PAGE 60. 1. *each nation priding itself . . . their own tongues*. Note the careless grammar.

13. *there are few persons . . . but what can*. This peculiar and ungrammatical idiom is sanctioned by colloquial usage. The omission of *what* would make the sentence more correct. The idiom appears to have arisen through the substitution of *what* for *that*, or, as here, for *that they*.

## CHAPTER VI

PAGE 61. 12. *the sheep an inch and a half*. Although English sheep certainly stood more than eighteen inches high at this time, they were much smaller than now. The average weight of a sheep has increased since Charles II's reign from 28 lb. to nearly 100 lb.

21. *pulling a lark*. In the obsolete sense of 'plucking', or possibly in the modern sense of 'drawing', i.e. removing the giblets and preparing for cooking.

26. *vegetables*. In the widest sense, plants, members of the vegetable kingdom.

PAGE 62. 3. *like the Chinese*. They write in vertical columns, which are arranged from right to left.

4. *the Cascagians*. A fictitious people, whose name is apparently invented for the occasion.

5. *ladies in England*. Their education was still as a rule quite elementary, and their writing and spelling very defective.

6. *They bury their dead* . . . Swift here satirizes crude and literal interpretations of scripture. There is a prophecy in Isaiah xxiv, beginning, 'Behold, the Lord maketh the earth empty . . . and turneth it upside down'. It is popularly believed that the man buried on Leith Hill in Surrey chose this mode of burial, and for the same reason as the Lilliputians. Diogenes the Cynic desired to be buried face downwards, because the world was being turned upside down, and he wished to lie on his back.

20. *informers*. Espionage was rampant in the reign of George I, owing to the fear of Jacobite plots.

PAGE 63. 25. *proportionable*. 'Proportionate.' Cp. p. 33. 8.

35. *a sword sheathed*. Differing from the ordinary figures of Justice with a drawn sword.

PAGE 64. 22. *the public weal*. Either (1) the commonwealth or state, or (2) public welfare. Like 'common weal', the term is a rendering of the Latin *res publica*. *Weal*, Old Eng. *wela*, 'well-being', is hardly used in modern English, except in a few phrases, as 'weal and woe'.

26. *the disbelief of a Divine Providence* . . . Avowed atheists were then and for a long time afterwards excluded from public office.

PAGE 65. 9. *in some other countries*. I have found no instances of such a law.

17. *the last of all others*. A confusion of two constructions, (1) 'the last of all', and (2) 'after all others'.

19. *public nurseries*. The Lilliputians here carry out the ideas of Plato in his *Republic*, and of other social theorists, who have supposed that such a system of education would ensure a high standard of efficiency, and above all promote the civic spirit by abolishing the conflict between domestic and public interests. Such theorists ignore the supreme value of maternal care and affection.

Feelings that under happier circumstances would probably have developed into strong family affections were in Swift warped and blighted. At the age of thirty-two we find him recording

the strange resolution, 'Not to be fond of children, or let them come near me hardly'.

PAGE 66. 21. *pension*. 'Periodical payment of money.' The meaning of the word was not yet restricted.

PAGE 67. 3. *frightful or foolish stories*. Plato, in the *Republic*, speaks of the moral and religious dangers of such practices. The exceedingly drastic punishment suggests that Swift may have suffered severely as a child in this way.

12. *robust*. 'Rough', 'violent'.

PAGE 68. 1. *burthen*. In this word, Old Eng. *byrðen*, *th* has passed into *d*, as in *murder*. In the cases of *father*, *hither*, *gather*, *together*, the reverse change has taken place. The spelling *burthen* is still occasionally retained, especially in poetry, and in the sense 'tonnage of a ship'.

2. *they give security to appropriate* . . . Being possessed of property, they are not required, like the poor, to make monthly payments, but give a guarantee that they will set aside a portion of their income for the education of their children.

4. *husbandry*. 'Economy', 'management'. *Husband* originally meant a householder. Cf. the phrase 'to husband one's resources'.

6. *The cottagers and labourers*. . . Only a few of the working class received any education at all in Swift's time. Even enlightened educational reformers rarely dreamed of making education universal.

15. *a head mechanically turned*. 'An aptitude for mechanical contrivances.'

24. *sempstresses*. The word *seamstress* or *sempstress* is the Old Eng. *séamestre*, from *séam* 'seam' and the suffix *-estre*, now *-ster*, originally denoting the agent, but in Old Eng. confined to the feminine gender. Cf. *spinster*, *webster*, *baxter*, &c. As *-ster* was afterwards extended again to masculine agent nouns, e.g. *youngster*, the suffix *-ess* of French origin was added in some cases to make the gender clear. *Songstress* is another example.

31. *twice round the thumb*. It is a rough-and-ready rule, literally a 'rule of thumb', with dressmakers that twice round the thumb is once round the wrist, twice round the wrist once round the neck, and twice round the neck once round the waist.

PAGE 69. 24. *sirloin*. Better spelt *surloin*, the upper part of a loin of beef. The absurd story of a loin having been knighted by one of our kings has been popularized by Dr. Johnson, but the word is really from French *surlonge*, literally 'upper loin'.

25. *bits*. 'Bites,' the original meaning of the word. Cf. Ger. *bischen*, 'a bit', lit. 'a little bite'.

29. *twenty or thirty at the end of my knife*. Swift's table manners resembled Gulliver's. 'We find', writes Sir Leslie Stephen,

'from his correspondence with Gay and the Duchess of Queensberry, that his views as to the distribution of functions between knives and forks were lamentably unsettled.'

PAGE 70. 3. *his white staff*. The Lord High Treasurer of England received a white staff as a symbol of his office. In 1714 the last holder of this office resigned, and his duties were taken over by a commission, the Lords of the Treasury.

14. *he was forced to take up money at great discount*. i.e. 'to receive a good deal less than the amount which he nominally borrowed'.

15. *exchequer bills*. Promissory notes formerly issued by the Treasury, especially at times of temporary financial emergency. They were first issued by Charles Montagu, Chancellor of the Exchequer (afterwards Lord Halifax) in 1696, on the occasion of his calling in the depreciated currency for recoinage. They bore interest at about 4½ per cent.

The Exchequer was originally a royal court for the collection and custody of the revenue, hence the department of government exercising these functions. It is named from the chequered cloth, Old French *eschequier*, on which accounts were reckoned in a primitive way.

16. *under nine per cent. below par*. 'Under nine' is 'at a smaller discount than nine', which is of course equivalent to 'for more than 91'.

18. *spangle*. A very small disk of shining metal, used as an ornament on dress.

PAGE 71. 32. *although he were . . . undeceived*. 'Were' is here, in accordance with Swift's habit, wrongly used for 'was'. The subjunctive with *although* is properly used only in hypothetical sentences, where an imaginary case, and not a fact, is stated.

## CHAPTER VII

PAGE 73. 1. *Committees of Council*. Committees of the Privy Council, of which the Cabinet is the chief, are chosen to deal with special matters, e.g. the Board of Trade, or the Local Government Board. These are standing committees, but occasional committees might be called in case of need. For the political allusion in this sentence see the note on *articles of impeachment* below.

6. *High Admiral*. Formerly a great officer of state in England, at the head of the naval administration. The first Lord High Admiral was appointed by Richard II in 1385, but from the time of Henry VIII the duties have generally been taken over by a commission, the Admiralty Board, and the office was abolished in 1703. The word is derived through French *amiral* from Arabic *amir al (numenin, bahr)*, 'Commander of the (Faithful, Sea)'.

13. *Grand Justiciary*. The chief officer responsible for the administration of justice. In England, from William II to Henry III the *summus iusticiarius* was the king's chief minister, and regent in his absence.

14. *articles of impeachment*. *Impeachment*, from Old French *empechement*, lit. 'an impediment', is a prosecution for treason.

When Queen Anne died and the Whigs came into power under George I, the new government appointed a 'Committee of Secrecy' under the chairmanship of Walpole, to inquire into the conduct of their Tory predecessors, who had concluded the peace of Utrecht with France, and had schemed for the succession of the house of Stuart. The private information obtained by this committee resulted in the impeachment of three prominent Tory statesmen, all of whom had intrigued with the Pretender's party, the Duke of Ormonde, and Swift's friends, Lord Bolingbroke and Robert Harley, Earl of Oxford. The two former escaped to France, just as Gulliver escaped to Blefuscu, while Oxford was imprisoned in the Tower.

PAGE 74. 1. *to destroy and put to death*. These articles are drawn up in legal phraseology, in which it is usual to employ many synonyms, as here, and again 'aid, comfort, and abet'. 'Did petition' for 'petitioned' is also legal language.

PAGE 75. 3. *setting fire on your house*. *On* was formerly usual in this phrase.

7. *to strew a poisonous juice on your shirts*. Suggested, no doubt, by the story of the death of Heracles. The Centaur Nessus was shot with a poisoned arrow by Heracles as he was attempting to carry off the latter's wife Deianeira. Before dying he implored her to preserve some of his blood as a sure means of preserving her husband's love. She accordingly anointed a robe with a preparation containing the poisoned blood, and sent it to Heracles, who put it on and endured fearful agonies, until Zeus in pity took him up to Olympus.

13. *brought off*. 'Won over.'

28. *only give order to put out both your eyes*. Probably an allusion to those Whigs who proposed that Oxford and Bolingbroke, instead of being impeached for high treason, which might have resulted in their execution, should only be accused of high misdemeanours, which, if proved, would deprive them of their titles and estates.

PAGE 76. 6. *the greatest princes do no more*. In ancient Persia, as Herodotus (i. 114) tells us, a certain confidential minister was called 'the king's eye'.

27. *some kind of fowl*. For this idiom see note to p. 44. 1. *Fowl* is not now used as a plural, except in compounds, as *water-fowl*.

29. *his sacred Majesty*. The Stuart kings were often addressed thus, but not the Hanoverians.

**PAGE 77. 24.** *a creature of the Empress.* A mere instrument or tool of hers.

**PAGE 78. 8.** *It was a custom . . .* Some of George I's utterances were of this character, notably the proclamation after the Jacobite rising of 1715, and the speech on the occasion of the impeachment of Bishop Atterbury in 1722.

26. *I sometimes thought of standing my trial.* Lord Bolingbroke, whose secret negotiations with the French, impeachment, and flight to France are alluded to in this chapter, tried for some time to create the impression that he was quite willing to answer the charges laid against him.

30. *state trials, which I ever observed . . .* The unfair conduct of political trials in this age was notorious. The brow-beating of prisoners, counsel, and juries by Judge Jeffreys, who tried the participants in Monmouth's rebellion in 1685, was long remembered.

**PAGE 79. 5.** *Neither had I so soon learned the gratitude . . .* 'I had not yet acquired so much of the ungrateful disposition common with courtiers as to persuade myself', &c.

23. *pursuant to.* 'Conformably to.'

**PAGE 80. 19.** *discover.* 'Disclose.'

## CHAPTER VIII

**PAGE 81. 6.** *somewhat.* Now practically obsolete as a substantive, and confined to its adverbial use.

**PAGE 82. 12.** *engines.* 'Machines,' perhaps here windlasses.

26. *I did . . . wonder . . . not to have heard.* A somewhat unusual, but not incorrect, construction.

**PAGE 83. 1.** *cabal.* A political clique, a group of intriguers. The word was originally identical with *Cabbala*, the hidden or esoteric doctrine of the Jews, consisting of a mystical or theological interpretation of the Old Testament. Hence it came to mean a mystery, a secret; a secret council, a plot; a small party of intriguers or conspirators. Although the word had already been often used in a political sense, it acquired a special significance in the reign of Charles II, when it was applied to (1) the small committee or 'junto' of the Privy Council, called the Committee for Foreign Affairs, and (2) the five ministers who signed the treaty of alliance with France for the purpose of war with Holland in 1672. The initials of the names of these ministers (Clifford, Arlington, Buckingham, Ashley, and Lauderdale) happened to spell the word *cabal*.

2. *a person of quality was dispatched.* An allusion to the frequent diplomatic remonstrances made to the French Govern-



ment on account of the protection and countenance it gave to Jacobite refugees.

11. *his brother of Blefuscu*. Sovereigns commonly address one another thus.

PAGE 84. 5. *he was very glad*. The French Government was much embarrassed by the presence and intrigues of the Jacobite refugees.

12. *quilting thirteen fold*. For the singular see note to p. 42. 25.

PAGE 85. 27. *islands . . . to the north-east of Van Diemen's Land*. Knowledge of Australasian geography was then so imperfect that it is impossible to say what islands are meant; possibly the west coast of Australia, which the Dutch had partly explored.

PAGE 86. 1. *ancient*. A curious and obsolete corrupt form of *ensign*, ultimately from Latin *insigne*.

10. *the North and South Seas*. Ships from Japan would sail through the China Sea, and through either the Straits of Malacca or the Sunda Straits. By the North Sea is meant the North Pacific; by the South Sea in this case probably the seas about Sumatra and Java.

31. *the Downs*. An open roadstead off the coast of Kent, partly sheltered by the Goodwin Sands. It is so named because it lies opposite the North Downs.

PAGE 87. 22. *the Black Bull*. Not only inns and taverns, but shops and business houses of all kinds, were distinguished by signs. There was an old inn of this name in Holborn, opposite Fetter Lane.

24. *leaving my family upon the parish*. Before the Poor Law of 1834 the care of the destitute fell to parochial overseers.

26. *towardly*. Either 'docile, apt', or 'promising'.

31. *Surat*. An important sea-port of India, on the Tapti, north of Bombay. Under the Mogul emperors it was the chief commercial city of India, and the seat of the first factory of the English East India Company.

## PART II. A VOYAGE TO BROBDINGNAG

A voyage to a land of giants forms a natural sequel to a voyage to a land of pygmies. As the Lilliputians are one-twelfth the height of ordinary men, so the Brobdingnagians are twelve times their height, though here the proportion is not formally stated, but may be inferred from the descriptions. The minute scale of Lilliput makes human affairs appear contemptible; in a different way the same moral is enforced by the amused and condescending airs with which the Brobdingnagians treat

Gulliver, and listen to his tales of European grandeur. The moral and political atmospheres of Lilliput and Brobdingnag are sharply contrasted; the former is a reflection of contemporary England with its follies and vices intensified; Brobdingnag is Swift's ideal state, not indeed in a condition of primitive innocence like the Houyhnhnm community, but a nation under a wise monarch, whose strong paternal government holds evil tendencies in check. Scope is given to satire and irony in Gulliver's naïve descriptions of his country's institutions, and in the comments of the King.

The map shows part of the Pacific coast of North America from British Columbia to California. Cape Blanco, in Oregon, was reached by Sir Francis Drake in 1579, who named the country Albion. The 'Streights of Annian' were an imaginary channel believed to connect the Pacific with the Atlantic, and afterwards identified with the Straits of Juan de Fuca, separating Vancouver Island from Washington. The very incorrect drawing of the North American coast shows how little was known of it two hundred years ago.

In chapter iv it is said that the peninsula of Brobdingnag is 6,000 miles long and from 3,000 to 5,000 broad. It is of course drawn very much too small on the map, and in fact the North Pacific Ocean would not be large enough to contain it.

## CHAPTER I

PAGE 91. 14. *Surat*. See note to p. 87. 31.

20. *the Straits of Madagascar*. The Mozambique Channel, which can hardly be called 'straits', as it is everywhere more than 200 miles wide.

22. *the winds* . . . If this description is to be taken seriously, it can only refer to the north-west monsoon, which blows with a good deal of irregularity between November and April in the south equatorial zone between the Seychelles and the north coasts of Australia.

28. *east of the Molucca Islands*. Swift did not write for seamen. The absurdity of the notion that a ship making for Surat could be driven half across the world, through the intricate channels of the Malay Archipelago to a point far out in the North Pacific, is sufficiently evident.

30. *the Line*. 'The equator.'

PAGE 92. 6. *the southern monsoon*. A regular wind begins to blow in May in the Indian Ocean, called the south-west monsoon. Further east, in the West Pacific, it is the south-east monsoon, and between the two, in the Malay Archipelago, it blows directly from the south. The word *monsoon* is taken, through the Dutch

*monsoen*, from the Portuguese *monção*, which is probably from the Arabic *mausim*, lit. 'season'.

8. *Finding it was likely to overblow . . .* It has been pointed out in *Notes and Queries*, 4th series, i. 223, that this paragraph has been taken almost bodily from Sturmy's *Compleat Mariner*, 1669, p. 17. Swift's object was to ridicule the excessive use of technicalities by writers of voyages, such as William Dampier, who is referred to in Gulliver's letter, p. 3.

*overblow.* Blow too hard for topsails to be carried.

9. *sprit-sail.* A sail formerly used, which was attached to a yard hanging under the bowsprit.

*stood by to hand the fore-sail.* i.e. stood ready to take it in.

10. *making.* 'Encountering', 'experiencing'.

*we looked the guns were all fast.* Looked means 'took care', 'made sure'. Guns might roll about the decks in a storm, and do great damage to the ship and crew. Merchant ships generally carried guns, and were otherwise adapted for warfare, not only as a defence against pirates and privateers, but, if need arose, against men-of-war, the difference between the two kinds of ship being much less than it is now.

11. *the mizen.* A fore-and-aft sail attached to the mizen-mast. The word, also spelt *mizzen*, is from Fr. *misaine*.

*lay very broad off.* The opposite of lying close to the wind.

12. *spooning before the sea.* Running before the gale.

13. *trying.* Letting the ship lie broadside on to the gale.

*hulling.* Driving without sails (under bare poles).

*reef.* To reef a sail is to reduce its area by folding or rolling up a reef, i.e. a horizontal strip of the sail.

*set him.* 'Him' for 'it' is sailors' language. In popular speech gender is still assigned to many inanimate objects.

14. *fore-sheet.* One of the ropes by which the lower corners of the fore-sail are secured. The effect of hauling aft the fore-sheet is to bring the sail nearer the wind.

*hard a weather.* Kept well to the weather side, i.e. to the side from which the wind blew. This would tend to keep the ship's head east, and check her tendency to drift north before the southern monsoon. *A* represents the older *on*. *Weather* keeps here something of its older meaning of 'storm'.

15. *wore.* Answered the helm. This is distinct from the ordinary verb *wear*, and is a variant of *veer*. The strong past tense is formed on the analogy of the other verb.

*belayed the fore-down haul.* Secured the rope used to haul down one of the fore-sails, perhaps the fore top-mast stay-sail, which is a fore-and-aft sail between the fore top-mast and bowsprit.

19. *We hauled off upon the anyard of the whipstaff.* The whipstaff was the bar or lever that turned the rudder, corresponding to the tiller of a boat. To it was attached a lanyard

or short rope, which could be hauled by several men, if great force was required to move the rudder. The word *lanyard* is from the French *lanière*, 'thong, strap', with the termination assimilated to *yard*.

22. *scudded before the sea*. The same as 'spooning before the sea', above.

23. *wholesomer*. Steadier in her motion.

26. *brought the ship to*. Checked her course by setting the sails so as to counteract one another.

28. *We got the starboard tacks aboard*. We drew in the ropes securing the right-hand lower corners of certain sails (courses, &c.). The wind was blowing on the starboard quarter, and the ship was put on the starboard tack. 'Tack' means primarily, as in the text, one of the ropes which shift and secure a sail as defined above, secondarily the direction given to the ship as determined by the position of the sails. *Starboard*, the right side of a vessel looking forward, is the Old Eng. *stéorbord*, literally 'rudder-board', *board* having here the sense of 'ship's side', as in *overboard*. In primitive ships the rudder was an oar held or fixed on the starboard side of the stern.

29. *we cast off our weather-braces and lifts*. We loosened the ropes which secure the yards on the weather or windward side. The braces keep the yards at a certain angle with the ship's length; the lifts support them, and raise the ends, if necessary.

30. *we set in the lee-braces*. We drew in or shortened the braces on the lee side, in this case on the port side.

*hauled forward*. Sc. the weather sides of the square sails.

31. *weather-bowlings*. Bowlings, more commonly and correctly spelt *bowlines*, and pronounced bō-, are ropes attached by a number of smaller strings to the sides of the square sails and fastened forwards, so as to keep the sails taut on the weather side.

32. *hauled over the mizen tack to windward*. The mizen tacks are ropes securing the lower corners of the mizen course, or lowest sail on the mizen-mast; to haul them to windward sets the sail closer to the wind.

33. *kept her full and by as near as she would lie*. Kept the ship close-hauled to the wind, so as to sail as near the wind as possible.

PAGE 93. 9. *Great Tartary*. Here vaguely used for Northern and Central Asia. The region which the ship might have reached was the Pacific coast of Siberia. If 'north-west' is not a slip for 'north-east', it shows that Swift was quite careless of geography. Tartary was the name given in the Middle Ages and later to the country from which came the Tatars, a group of Turkish and Mongolian tribes. The corrupt form Tartar is due to a pun attributed to St. Louis, King of France at the time of the great Tatar invasion of Europe, in the thirteenth century, who is said to have remarked that they came from Tartarus, or hell.

12. *whether*. 'Which of the two.' This interrogative and relative pronoun is now obsolete or archaic, but occurs in the Authorized Version of the Bible, e. g. Matthew xxvii. 21. It is cognate with Latin *uter*, and Greek *πότερος*. The conjunction *whether* has developed from the pronoun *whether*, in the same way as *that* and *either*. 'I know not whether to go or not' means 'I know not which', &c.

17. *long-boat*. The largest boat of a sailing ship.

PAGE 95. 32. *human creatures are observed to be more savage . . .* There is no truth in this statement, except that races of powerful physique, like the Kaffirs, are able to oppress weaker races, like the Bushmen. Puny races often protect themselves by greater cunning and cruelty.

PAGE 97. 3. *my good star*. A phrase of astrological origin. Cf. *disaster*, from French *désastre*, in which *dés-* has a sinister force, and *astre* = 'star'.

12. *lappet*. An equivalent of *lapel*, still in occasional use. Like *lapel*, it is a diminutive of *lap* in the sense of 'flap' or 'fold'.

23. *hinds*. Farm servants, especially those of a superior class, in permanent employment. The word is still in use in the north of England and Scotland. It is probably derived from Old Eng. *hina man*, lit. 'a man of the domestics', *hina* being the contracted gen. plur. of *hiwan* 'domestics', 'members of the household', cognate with Latin *civis*. The letter *d* is often added after *n*, as in *sound*, *thunder*.

PAGE 98. 6. *pistoles*. Pistole, in French *pistolet*, which properly meant a dagger or a pistol, is said to have been a jocular name given by the French to the Spanish double crown, when it was reduced to a smaller size than the corresponding French coin. Its value was about 17s. or 18s.

PAGE 100. 15. *stocking-weavers*. The stocking-frame, invented by the Rev. William Lee in 1589, and still used in an improved form, was one of the most complicated pieces of machinery in use in Swift's day.

PAGE 101. 34. *hanger*. A short sword, originally hung from the belt.

PAGE 102. 16. *cross the neck*. 'Cross' for 'across' is found in Shakespeare, 2 *Henry VI*, iv. i. 114: 'Waft me *cross* the channel.'

## CHAPTER II

PAGE 104. 7. *baby*. 'Doll.'

29. *nanunculus . . . homunculetino*. Both these words appear to be fictitious, and are perhaps meant to ridicule the ignorant pretence of learning made by some contemporary writers. *Nanunculus* is a possible diminutive of Latin *nanus* 'a dwarf',

suggested by *homunculus* 'a mannikin', which is also the base of the pretended Italian word. The proper Italian word is *omaccino*.

30. *mannikin*. Also spelt *manikin*, *manakin*. Like most diminutives in *-kin* (*bumpkin*, *kilderkin*, *canakin*, *Perkin*), this is not a native English word, but of Dutch or Flemish origin. The original meaning in English was 'an artist's lay figure' (1570, *N.E.D.*).

PAGE 106. 35. *pillion*. Formerly a cushion attached to the back of a saddle, for a second rider, especially a woman.

PAGE 107. 3. *so careful to put*. The omission of 'as' after 'so' is common in Swift.

5. *though it were but of half an hour*. Incorrect for 'though it was'. See note to p. 71. 32.

10. *from London to St. Albans*. A distance of twenty miles.

18. *could speak*. The relative was commonly omitted in Swift's day in many cases where it cannot be omitted now.

PAGE 108. 4. *fopperies*. 'Foolish tricks.' The older meaning of *fop* was 'fool'.

16. *pumpion*. An obsolete word, now altered into *pumpkin*.

20. *vehicle*. 'Vessel for carrying.'

PAGE 110. 3. *parts*. 'Abilities.'

6. *pulisedoed*. See note to p. 35. 16.

16. *Sanson's Atlas*. Nicolas Sanson (1600-67), of Abbeville in Picardy, was one of the chief map-makers of the seventeenth century. An atlas containing his maps in two folio volumes was published by his sons in 1693.

### CHAPTER III

PAGE 111. 11. *stomach*. 'Appetite.'

13. *to make as good a hand of me*. 'To make as much profit out of me.'

15. *Gentleman Usher*. A court official whose duties include walking before a prince on state occasions, originally for the purpose of opening doors, and announcing his approach. From the French *huissier*, from Latin *ostiarus*, 'a door-keeper'.

PAGE 112. 6. *moidores*. *Moidore* was the English name of a Portuguese gold coin, the double *moeda d'ouro*, literally 'money of gold'. It was rated at 27s., and at this time formed the principal gold currency of Ireland.

7. *allowing for the proportion . . .* It may be gathered that the linear ratio is 12 to 1; solids are therefore as 1728 to 1. The value on this basis would be 595 guineas, but gold being scarce in Brobdingnag, its purchasing power was relatively greater than in Europe.

14. *understood to do it*. An obsolete idiom.

PAGE 113. 5. *Phœnix*. Here, 'paragon', 'unique wonder'. According to old writers the phoenix was a marvellous and resplendent bird held sacred by the Egyptians. There was only one in existence at a time, which at the close of a long period, 500 years or more, flew from Arabia to Egypt, where it died in a nest of spices, or, according to another version, immolated itself on the altar of the Sun. From its remains sprang a new phoenix.

11. *improprieties*. Errors of grammar and style.

19. *cabinet*. A small private room, especially for transacting business, a nearly obsolete use. Kings met their advisers in their cabinets, hence the political use of the word.

26. *scrutore*. An obsolete form of *escritoire*, borrowed from the French (in modern French *écritoire*), from Latin *scriptorium*. It means a writing-desk with drawers.

PAGE 114. 15. *phrases which I had learnt . . . and did not suit*. Ungrammatical, because *which* is both object and subject. Cf. p. 34. 31.

19. *weekly waiting*. Attendance at court, by rotation. Princes of cultivated tastes, both in Europe and Asia, have in all ages been in the habit of attracting eminent men, both native and foreign, to their courts by handsome payments, though the practice is not common at the present day.

22. *They all agreed . . .* Swift here pokes fun at the natural science of his day, which was still addicted to bold and baseless speculations. It is of course true that physically man is among the most helpless of animals.

26. *They observed by my teeth . . .* There is not much truth in this observation. Man, it is true, has four canine teeth, whereas most ruminants have two, and rodents none, but in man they are not so well adapted for tearing flesh as in the true carnivora. In the latter the molars and premolars have a sharp cutting edge. Man's dentition is really adapted to a mixed diet.

31. *snails and other insects*. The word insect is derived from the Latin *insectum*, used by Pliny in his *Natural History* as a translation of *ἐντομον*, literally 'cut into', 'notched', the general name given by Aristotle to insects, spiders, centipedes, and millipedes, all of which are divided into segments. Naturalists of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries unwarrantably extended the use of the word. Thus Aldrovandi in 1602 included slugs, and Réaumur even called crocodiles insects.

33. *evince*. 'Demonstrate,' 'prove.' The present use is rather 'to show or indicate' (a quality).

35. *the Queen's favourite dwarf*. Dwarfs were often members of royal and noble households. Queen Henrietta Maria kept three at her court, one of whom, Jeffery Hudson, was only 18 inches high, one of the smallest on record. Soon after Swift's

age, the growing feeling of respect for human personality led to the abandonment of the practice of keeping dwarfs in most European courts, although they were still to be found at the Russian and Turkish courts in recent times.

PAGE 115. 1. *lusus naturae*. 'A freak of nature.'

6. *evasion of occult causes*. 'Evasion of the problem by speaking of "occult causes".' *Occult* here means 'latent'. Cf. Newton, *Optics*, 1704 (quoted by Johnson), 'The Aristotelians give the name of occult qualities . . . to such qualities . . . as they supposed to lie hid in bodies, and to be the unknown causes of manifest effects.' Swift's ironical observation is aimed at the pretenders to science who concealed their ignorance in a cloud of meaningless learned terms. He leaves it to be inferred that it is more honest and scientific to admit with Aristotle that monstrosities are due to some cause hidden from our powers of observation, than with some of the moderns to pretend to explain them by a phrase which carries our knowledge not a step further. Swift, who despised, without grasping its significance, the great scientific movement of his day, which had superseded the traditional natural philosophy based on Aristotle's teaching, contrasts the moderns unfavourably with Aristotle in Part III, ch. viii.

PAGE 116. 10. *a bed . . . which Glumdalclitch took out . . . and . . . locked up the roof*. Although perfectly clear, this is ungrammatical, because 'Glumdalclitch' is the subject at once of a relative clause and of a new principal sentence.

14. *nice*. 'Accurate.'

28. *gotten*. This form of the past participle is now obsolete or provincial, except in the compounds *begotten*, *forgotten*, but is retained in American English, like other older English words that we have lost.

32. *grave and decent*. 'Sober and becoming.'

PAGE 117. 7. *baby-house*. 'Doll's house.'

19. *craunch*. Now usually spelt *crunch*, formerly also *cranch*. Like the colloquial *scrunch*, it imitates the sound.

22. *twelve-penny loaves*. Probably of the largest size. Swift writes in *A True and Faithful Narrative of what Passed in London*, that a wealthy churchwarden, expecting the imminent end of the world, 'distributed fifty twelve-penny loaves to the poor'.

23. *hogshead*. See note to p. 23. 17.

PAGE 118. 16. *a Whig or a Tory*. These historic party designations arose from derisive nicknames given by their opponents to the Country and Court parties in 1679. The Whigs demanded the exclusion of the Roman Catholic Duke of York (James II) from the throne, and stood for the rights of Parliament and the toleration of Dissent, the Tories supporting the opposite claims. The earlier application of the name *Whig* was to the Scottish



Covenanters, generally in the full form *Whiggamor*. Thus, when in 1646 the Marquess of Argyll led a troop of Presbyterians to Edinburgh, it was called 'the Whiggamors' inroad'. Originally the name was given, without any political signification, to the western farmers who used to drive their horses to Leith to buy corn. It seems that they used the cry 'whiggam' to their horses, 'to whig' meaning 'to go quickly' in Lowland dialects.

*Tory* is the Irish word *toiridhe*, 'a pursuer', 'robber', and was the name given to Roman Catholic outlaws and bog-trotters who committed depredations in Ireland under the Commonwealth and later, on the pretext of maintaining the king's cause. 'Tories and other lawless persons' are mentioned in an Irish State Paper of 1656. Thus *Tory* meant a Roman Catholic rebel, and *Whig* a Presbyterian rebel.

17. *white staff*. See note to p. 70. 3.

18. *the Royal Sovereign*. A famous warship of 106 guns, one of the largest of her time, called at first *Sovereign of the Seas*, launched in 1637, and burnt at Chatham in 1696.

21. *engage*. 'Wager.'

28. *the arbitress of Europe*. The maintenance of the balance of power between the European states, which in theory at least had been acknowledged as an aim of diplomacy for a hundred years and more, emerged as the guiding principle of British foreign policy during the wars of William III and Anne against Louis XIV.

PAGE 121. 5. *a Dunstable lark*. The market town of Dunstable in Bedfordshire is situated among open downs, a part of the Chilterns, where larks were caught in large numbers for the London market.

11. *that viscous matter* . . . The foot of a fly is furnished with a pad or cushion (*pulvillus*) fringed with minute tubular hairs, which secrete a viscous fluid.

26. *one of my sashes*. One of the window-sashes mentioned on p. 116. The word *sash* is a corruption of the French *châssis*, 'a frame', which was probably mistaken for a plural.

PAGE 122. 7. *Gresham College*. Sir Thomas Gresham, the famous London merchant, who built the Royal Exchange, left on his death in 1579 his house in Bishopsgate Street and a large sum of money to provide daily lectures during term on different subjects, one on each day of the week. The college was opened in 1597. Apparently a collection of curiosities was kept there. The Royal Society, which was housed there until the great fire of 1666, removed to make room for Government offices. The college was removed from the building in 1768, and is now in Gresham Street.

## CHAPTER IV

PAGE 123. 18. *he great continent of Tartary.* See note to p. 93. 9.

23. *mountains thirty miles high.* More than five times the height of any actual mountains. Very exaggerated estimates were current. Sir Walter Raleigh, in his *History of the World* (I. i. vii, §, 6), says that no mountain is more than thirty miles high.

26. *whether they be inhabited at all.* Not the mountains, but the regions beyond them; an ungrammatical sentence.

PAGE 124. 1. *so that these people are wholly excluded . . .* Swift evidently felt the difficulty of explaining how it was that so powerful a race as the Brobdingnagians had never travelled beyond the limits of their own country. Hence the high mountains, the volcanoes, and the unnavigable seas.

22. *an hundred.* Cf. *an heap* below, l. 35. The use of *an* before stressed syllables beginning with *h*, which was usual in modern English until after Swift's time, does not indicate that the *h* was dropped, but that the full form *an* was retained before the aspirate long after it was changed to *a* before true consonants.

PAGE 125. 10. *a square of Westminster Hall.* Apparently this means 'a square of the same area as Westminster Hall'. The latter is 290 ft. by 68 ft., equal to 140 ft. square. This would make the coach correspond to one 11 ft. 8 in. square, rather a large size. If the meaning is 'a square of the width of Westminster Hall', the side will correspond to 5 ft. 8 in.

35. *out of order.* 'Unwell.'

PAGE 126. 30. *admiration.* 'Wonder.'

31. *Salisbury steeple.* This is 404 ft. high, which corresponds to 4,848 ft. in Brobdingnag.

PAGE 127. 14. *the cupola at St. Paul's.* The interior diameter of the dome is 122 ft. The cathedral was not finished till four years after Gulliver's supposed return.

29. *fifty-four to sixty foot high.* Corresponding to a height of 13½ to 15 hands in our horses. Cf. the note to p. 26. 35.

34. *battalia.* 'Battle array', an obsolete word, probably through Ital. *battaglia*, from mediæval Lat. *battualia* with the same meaning, from popular Lat. *battuere*, 'to beat', whence Fr. *battre*, *bataille*.

*another occasion.* See the end of chapter vii.

## CHAPTER V

PAGE 128. 19. *a Bristol barrel.* The size of the barrel varied locally. I have not ascertained the capacity of the Bristol barrel.

31. *tennis-balls.* Such as are used in the old game of tennis, not, of course, lawn-tennis, which is a modern modification of it.

PAGE 129. 1. *on all four*. The older form, as in Lev. xi. 20. 'All fours' is first recorded in *Robinson Crusoe*, 1719 (N. E. D.).

4. *in ten days*. 'For ten days.' Cf. p. 38. 13.

9. *so curious to weigh*. Cf. p. 107. 3 and note.

PAGE 130. 9. *stoop*. A technical term for the swoop or downward pounce of a hawk, now only surviving as an archaism.

11. *espalier*. A tree (generally a fruit-tree) trained on lattice-work. French, from Italian *spalliera*.

16. *broke my . . . shin*. This seems to mean merely 'broke the skin of my leg', 'barked my shin'.

19. *I cannot tell whether I were . . . Were* for 'was'; cf. note to p. 71. 32.

29. *pick my fingers*. We should now say 'peck', which is probably a mere variant of *pick*.

PAGE 131. 15. *pressed them both to see an execution*. In Swift's day it was not commonly thought unseemly to take a little girl of nine to see a public execution. Indeed, as late as c. 1820, in a very popular religious and moral tale, *The Fairchild Family*, a party of small children are taken to see the body of a criminal hanging in chains, as an edifying spectacle. Public executions were not abolished in England till 1868, although nearly twenty years before Charles Dickens had roused public opinion against the degrading effects of the practice, in a series of letters to *The Times*.

27. *jet d'eau*. 'Jet of water.' The royal palace of Versailles, twelve miles south-west of Paris, was built by Louis XIV in the latter part of the seventeenth century. The gardens contain some of the largest fountains in the world, the jet of Enceladus being 75 feet high.

30. *although I were*. See note to p. 71. 32.

PAGE 132. 33. *larboard*. (To) the left side of a ship looking forward, corresponding to *starboard*. See note to p. 92. 28. The older form of *larboard* was *laddebord*, which has been assimilated to *starboard*. The meaning of *ladde*- is doubtful. The term *larboard* has been superseded by *port* to avoid confusion with *starboard*.

PAGE 133. 8. *corking-pin*. According to Dr. Johnson, 'a pin of the largest size'. The earlier forms of the word are *cawking-pin*, *calkin pin*. The original meaning is obscure.

9. *stomacher*. An article of woman's dress, formerly in use, covering the front of the body.

14. *so careless to let*. See note to p. 107. 3.

31. *closet*. 'Small room', 'boudoir'.

PAGE 135. 4. *the bag on one side of his chaps*. Monkeys carry food in their distended cheeks. *Chaps*, 'jaws', especially of a beast.

PAGE 136. 31. *foot*. 'Footing.'

## CHAPTER VI

PAGE 137. 17. *artificially*. 'With so much art.'

PAGE 138. 13. *deciphered*. Here, 'represented by some kind of cipher or figure', perhaps her initial or monogram; an obsolete sense.

33. *spinet*. A primitive form of pianoforte, resembling a small harpsichord, but having only one string to each key.

PAGE 139. 15. *sideling*. See note to p. 49. 16.

17. *made a shift*. See note to p. 19. 17.

PAGE 140. 16. *the tongue of Demosthenes or Cicero*. So Juvenal x. 114 'Eloquium ac famam Demosthenis aut Ciceronis,' &c.

21. *three mighty kingdoms*. The kingdom of Scotland was united with that of England to form Great Britain on May 1, 1707, after Gulliver's return from Brobdingnag. Ireland was a separate kingdom until 1801.

*our plantations in America*. These were by far the most important colonies at this time, and extended along the Atlantic coast from what is now Maine to Carolina. *Plantation* was the old name for a colony.

23. *temperature*. 'Temperate quality', 'mildness'.

27. *I described that extraordinary care . . .* The following account of the constitution is largely ironical, as clearly appears from the king's comments. In his *Essay on Modern Education* Swift denounces the kind of education which the young nobles of his day received.

29. *counsellors born to the king and kingdom*. Persons entitled by birth to be counsellors. *Born* was wrongly altered by the edition of 1742, followed by most subsequent editions, to *both*.

31. *the highest Court of Judicature*. The House of Lords is the Court of ultimate appeal, although in 1876 it was enacted that its judicial powers should be vested in the Lord Chancellor and the law lords. The appellate jurisdiction of the Lords was particularly unfair to Ireland, and Swift complains of its injustice in his *Short View of the State of Ireland*.

PAGE 143. 21. *a long suit in chancery*. The Court of Chancery was founded in the reign of Edward III to administer equity, i.e. to execute justice in cases for which the common law provides no remedy. It was notorious for its delays and expense, which sometimes swallowed up the whole value of the estates in dispute. Cf. Dickens's *Bleak House*. The Judicature Act of 1873 reformed procedure in the Court of Chancery, and made it a division of the Supreme Court of Judicature.

24. *Whether advocates . . .* Swift evidently wishes to forbid this practice in the interests of justice, forgetting that to deprive a party to a law-suit of the benefit of counsel on the ground that

he is clearly in the wrong, is to prejudge the issue, and prevent a fair trial.

26. *Whether party . . . were.* *Party* = 'party feeling'. The use of the subjunctive in indirect questions introduced by *whether* is now practically obsolete.

31. *Whether they or their judges . . .* Swift probably thought that as lawyers had a share in legislation, there was a tendency to make the wording of statutes ambiguous and obscure, for the benefit of lawyers.

33. *glossing upon.* 'Making glosses or comments upon', especially by way of interpretation. *Gloss* is often written *gloze* (French *gloser*), especially when used in the unfavourable sense of 'explain away', 'talk speciously'. *Gloss*, sb. (Greek γλῶσσα, 'a tongue') means properly an explanation of a difficult word. Cf. 'glossary'.

PAGE 144. 1. *a rich . . . corporation.* The Inns of Court are not incorporated, nor did lawyers in Swift's time form any corporation.

4. *whether they were ever admitted.* The excessive number of lawyers in the House of Commons has long been regarded as an evil. They were excluded altogether by the 'Unlearned Parliament' of 1404.

8. *taxes at about five or six millions.* This may seem a surprisingly small sum, but it should be remembered that the population of England and Wales was little over five millions, and the wealth of the country relatively very much less than it is now; also that the functions of government have enormously expanded since the age of Swift.

9. *issues.* 'Expenditure.'

15. *run out of its estate.* 'Live beyond its income.' The National Debt of England began in 1693, when money was required for the war with France. At the accession of George I it had risen to £54,000,000. There was widespread alarm, in which Swift shared, at the new Whig policy of national borrowing, which it was feared would lead to insolvency. See Macaulay's *History*, ch. xix.

19. *chargeable.* 'Expensive.'

21. *our generals must needs be richer than our kings.* An allusion to the Duke of Marlborough, who acquired an immense fortune, and was accused by his political enemies of prolonging the War of the Spanish Succession to fill his own pockets.

25. *a mercenary standing army.* The English dislike of standing armies was greatly intensified through the attempts of Cromwell, Charles II, and James II to suppress constitutional liberties by their aid. On the accession of William III the Bill of Rights asserted the principle that a standing army in time of peace is illegal without the consent of Parliament, and the

annual passing of the Mutiny Act became necessary to legalize the maintenance of the army. After the Peace of Ryswick, Parliament, after long discussion, allowed William III to retain 10,000 men out of his army of 87,000. The controversy broke out afresh under George I, when the Whigs and the king desired a strong, highly-trained standing force on the Continental model, and the Tories placed more confidence in the navy and the militia.

35. *He laughed . . .* It need not be supposed that attempts were actually made to estimate the population of England by this impossible method. Swift's object was to introduce the topic of sects and parties. The King's remarks imply that Gulliver had spoken of the propagation of dangerous opinions, and of the efforts of governments to force consciences, although Gulliver has reported nothing of the kind (see p. 141). The King's views on toleration are those which Swift expresses elsewhere. The latter desired outward conformity where practicable, chiefly as a measure of discipline and policy, but would allow no inquisition into private beliefs. Contrast the fanaticism of Lilliput (p. 53).

PAGE 145. 12. *gaming*. High play at cards, betting on fighting-cocks, and wagers of all kinds were extraordinarily prevalent in this age, especially among the aristocracy.

PAGE 146. 2. *panegyric*. 'A laudatory speech', 'eulogy'. Through Latin from Greek πανηγυρικός, literally, 'fit for a full assembly'.

8. *an institution, which in its original . . .* The incessant deterioration of institutions, especially those of England, was a favourite theme of Swift's, on which he dwells repeatedly in this book.

22. *wringed*. An example of the tendency to turn strong verbs into weak, which is a form of the principle known as levelling, due to a desire for grammatical simplicity and uniformity. In this case (Old Eng. *wringan*, *wrang*, *wrungen*) the change has not been permanent.

## CHAPTER VII

PAGE 147. 15. *consist*. 'Be consistent' or 'compatible'.

22. *Dionysius Halicarnassensis*. DIONYSIUS was born in the Greek city of Halicarnassus in Caria c. 68 B. C., but lived for about forty years in Rome. He wrote in Greek a work called *Archæologia*, in twenty books, of which nine survive, containing an account of the history and antiquities of Rome. In reality he blames his Greek compatriots for underrating the greatness of Rome, through national vanity (Book I, chaps. 4-5). Probably Swift is ironically censuring English writers for a similar fault.

PAGE 148. 11. *between three and four hundred years ago.* The earliest date at which firearms are known to have been used is 1325, and the German friar, Berthold Schwarz, the reputed inventor of gunpowder, is supposed to have lived about the same time. As early as 1242 Roger Bacon was aware of the explosive power of a mixture of saltpetre, charcoal, and sulphur.

20. *as nothing was able.* More grammatically, 'that nothing would be able'.

*sustain.* 'Endure', 'stand', 'resist'.

24. *linked together by a chain.* Chain-shot was used in the days of sailing ships for destroying the enemy's rigging. Two spherical cannon-balls were connected by a short chain, and gyrated in the air.

29. *which.* i.e. the balls. The interposition of another substantive (still more, of two) between a substantive and its relative pronoun is to be avoided.

PAGE 149. 19. *some evil genius.* 'Some demon.' Properly an evil genius is an evil angel, supposed to attend a human being through life, and prompt him to evil, just as his good genius prompts him to good. The present more extended sense is perhaps due to a confusion, which was very common, with the Arabic *jinni*, a supernatural being, either good or bad, capable of marvellous feats. This use of the French *génie* became familiar through Gallaud's French version of the *Arabian Nights* (1704-12).

26. *A strange effect . . .* The powerful irony of the whole passage illustrates the latent vein of humanitarianism which was one of Swift's fundamental, though less obvious, qualities.

28. *parts.* 'Abilities.'

PAGE 150. 6. *reduced politics into a science.* At no period was this more true of Europe generally than in the early and middle years of the eighteenth century. Diplomacy and war were carried on by the governments like a game of chess, with little regard to popular demands or national interests.

19. *determination.* 'Decision', 'settlement'.

21. *he gave it for his opinion . . .* Perhaps the most celebrated maxim in *Gulliver's Travels*.

27. *The learning of this people . . .* As this ironical passage shows, Swift's mind was utilitarian. He could neither comprehend nor admire the pursuit of knowledge for its own sake, nor disinterested studies and those which call into play the higher imaginative powers. Pure mathematics, abstract science, metaphysics, mysticism, and music were sealed books to his intensely strong but limited intellect.

33. *entities.* *Entity* is the med. Latin *entitas*, 'beingness', from *ens*, a mediaeval present participle of *esse*, 'to be', suggested by the compound *absens*. *Entity*, in the language of mediaeval schoolmen, means the existence of a thing as distinguished from

its qualities and relations; hence 'a thing that has real existence'. *Nonentity* is more familiar.

*transcendentals*. Things, beings, or ideas that 'transcend' or lie beyond the experience of the senses.

PAGE 151. 5. *mercurial*. 'Quick-witted', 'sprightly', 'volatile'. It was originally an astrological term, and meant 'born under the influence of Mercury', the swift planet. Quicksilver was associated with the same planet, from its instability. Cf. the similar adjectives *jovial* and *saturnine*. Swift here refers to the perverse ingenuity of lawyers in wresting the words of statutes from their natural sense.

7. *As to the decision* . . . This alludes to another abuse of English law. The absence of any code of laws makes it very often necessary to deal with cases as they arise, according to precedent—a system which not only wastes a great deal of time and renders the law very uncertain, but in Swift's day enabled judges to give decisions in accordance with powerful interests by bringing to light ancient and forgotten precedents.

10. *the Chinese*. It is said that the Chinese classics were printed from blocks as early as A. D. 175, and that movable types were used for printing in China in the eleventh century.

34. *Their style is clear* . . . This sentence well describes Swift's own ideal and practice.

PAGE 152. 6. *dealt in*. 'Occupied herself with.'

17. *that nature was degenerated* . . . Cf. note to p. 146. 8. The view here expressed is not only found in ancient writers, as Homer and Hesiod, but was widely held in Swift's day, when support was found for it in the Bible, e.g. Gen. vi. 4, Num. xiii. 33, and in the discovery in the earth of enormous bones, really those of extinct animals.

21. *not only that the species of men* . . . 'Not merely that the (existing) races of mankind were taller than they are now, but that there were giants too.'

PAGE 153. 7. *As to their military affairs*. Cf. note to p. 144. 25. Swift here expounds the Tory idea of a citizen army, the militia, organized on a feudal or semi-feudal plan, opposed to the novel idea which was rapidly gaining ground of a small, but highly-trained and paid, professional army remaining in arms in time of peace. The latter was advocated by those who realized that the militia, however efficient under the old conditions, would be of little use against a continental army of the new professional type.

18. *chosen after the manner of Venice by ballot*. The ballot, or secret vote (Fr. *ballotte*, Ital. *ballotta*, 'a little ball'), was, and still is in some cases, exercised by dropping a ball into one of two concealed divisions of an urn or box. The name was afterwards extended to any method of secret voting. In Swift's



day the ballot was so unusual that he mentions the ballot at Venice as a notable instance of its use. That republic became a close oligarchy in 1297 by a measure taken by the Council of Forty, who balloted the names of those whom they considered entitled to be members of the Great Council. These persons and their descendants became an hereditary electorate, whose chief function was the election by ballot of all officers of state.

PAGE 154. 3. *the whole race of mankind is*. The first two editions read 'so many other governments are'. See note to p. 146. 3.

### CHAPTER VIII

PAGE 155. 5. *impulse*. 'Presentiment', 'conviction'.

13. *tumbril*. Also spelt *tumbrel*, from Old Fr. *tumbrel*, *tomberel*, from *tomber*, 'to fall'. A two-wheeled cart for carrying manure, &c., made so as to be tilted to drop the contents; also a military cart for carrying ammunition or tools.

*bent to get me*. In modern English 'bent on getting me'.

22. *foot*. 'Footing.'

26. *trod*. Here the shortened form of the past participle, like *broke*, *spoke*, *forgot*, which were common two centuries ago, has not survived in the literary language. *Trodden* replaced the older form *treden* on the analogy of *broken*, &c.

PAGE 156. 5. *of twelve foot wide*. Cf. note to p. 42. 25.

PAGE 157. 22. *like a tortoise*. For this alleged habit of the eagle cf. the story of the death of Aeschylus. He is said to have been killed by an eagle dropping a tortoise on his bald head, which it mistook for a stone.

29. *a sign-post*. He means a sign-board swinging on a post.

35. *squash*. In the unusual sense of 'splash', a meaning probably suggested by the sound. Cf. Lowland Scotch *squatter*, 'to splash.'

PAGE 158. 30. *many travellers have not been*. A characteristic inversion of 'not many travellers have been'.

PAGE 160. 24. *by all that is moving*. 'By every appeal that might move one.'

PAGE 161. 34. *to rights*. 'Right down', 'completely'; a phrase now obsolete or vulgar.

PAGE 162. 17. *make*. 'Direct his course to.'

PAGE 163. 26. *great criminals . . . have been forced to sea . . .* A common incident in legendary tales. Thus Danae, after the birth of her son, was set adrift in a chest. The heroine of the Middle English romance of *Emare* suffers the same fate as a punishment for crimes of which she is accused. This punishment is really a kind of ordeal, the object being to escape

responsibility for the condemned person's death by leaving his fate to Providence.

28. *ill.* 'Evil', 'wicked'.

PAGE 165. 26. *admired.* 'Wondered.'

PAGE 166. 15. *equipment.* In the now rare sense of 'equipment', 'outfit'. The Old French *esquiper* (mod. *équiper*) is probably derived from Old Norse *skipa*, 'to man' (a ship).

30. *Phaeton.* More correctly Phaethon (Greek *Φαέτωρ*, 'the shining one'), a son of Helios the sun-god. He persuaded his father to let him drive the horses of the sun for one day, but as he allowed them to endanger the earth by coming too near it, Zeus struck him with a thunderbolt, and he fell into the river Eridanus, and perished. A kind of two-horse carriage is called a *phaeton* after him. Swift alludes to the inept classical allusions with which inferior writers garnished their pages.

32. *Tonquin.* Also spelt Tongking. Swift here and on p. 172 apparently writes of it as a seaport, but the name does not seem to have been used in any other sense than that of the country between China and Annam.

33. *driven north-eastward.* . . . Strictly, the locality indicated is in the interior of the Japanese island of Yezo. In any case, the captain was driven very far out of his course.

34. *a trade-wind.* In the western part of the North Pacific, as in some other regions, a north-east trade-wind blows regularly during the winter months, from about 30° N. towards the equator. The trade-winds are caused by the low barometric pressure in the equatorial belt, which causes denser air to flow in from north and south. The earth's rotation gives these currents a westward drift. The older meaning of *trade* was 'a beaten track', 'a path', from the verb *tread*.

PAGE 167. 1. *New Holland.* During the seventeenth century the Dutch explored a great part of the coast of Australia, to which they gave the name of New Holland. They never reached the east coast, which was quite unknown when Swift wrote. The ship must be supposed to sail along the north-west coast of Australia, and then turn across the Indian Ocean.

8. *the Downs.* See note to p. 86. 31.

11. *freight.* In the obsolete sense defined by Hollyband (1580) 'the freight, or fare payed for passage over the water' (*N. E. D.*).

14. *Redriff.* See note to p. 8. 6.

*I hired a horse and guide . . .* If, as seems to be meant, Gulliver was put ashore when the ship was in the Downs, he had seventy miles to ride to Rotherhithe. Five shillings seems a small sum, even if the guide merely put him on the London road.

30. *erect to above sixty foot.* Directed upward to the faces of Brobdingnagians.

**PART III. A VOYAGE TO LAPUTA, BALNIBARBI,  
GLUBBDUBDRIB, LUGGNAGG, AND JAPAN**

In this Part the classes of persons attacked by Swift's ridicule are not only more various than in the other Parts, but in the main they are less within the reach of his lash. Having dealt with those political and social abuses with which he was thoroughly familiar, he now turns from the practical to the speculative world, regarding which his knowledge is slight, and his prejudices are strong. In Laputa he satirizes the scientific theorists, the mathematicians, and astronomers, such as Sir Isaac Newton, whom he treats as idle dreamers, living in an airy world of their own, remote from solid earth, unfit for practical affairs, and prone to alarm mankind with baseless fears of catastrophe. With them he glances at the musicians, another visionary, unpractical class that he dislikes. In Balnibarbi the laugh is turned against those who apply theory to mundane affairs. The agriculturists, economists, and financiers of the new school are seen reducing the country to ruin with their schemes. In the Academy of Lagado the inventors of new scientific processes, universal languages, and royal roads to knowledge impose upon a credulous public. The follies and vices of politicians are cured by methods which under the disguise of farcical allegory reveal Swift's contemptuous opinion of that class. The idealism of political optimists, however sober, appears to Gulliver as mere madness. The legal experts who detect treasonable messages and secret codes in harmless correspondence are treated with grave irony. In Glubbdubdrib historical learning is exposed to ridicule. Luggnagg exhibits the servility of courts and the vanity of expecting wisdom and happiness to come with years, or progress to be revealed by the flight of time. The Part closes with a malicious thrust at the Dutch. Swift is said to have taken especial pains with the writing of the third Part, and the narrative obviously lacks the ease and spontaneity which distinguish the other voyages. It also suffers from lack of unity, and from a markedly inferior sense of reality, notably in the fantastic account of the Flying Island, and in the interviews with the mighty dead. There may have been a considerable lapse of time between the composition of the second and of the third Part (see p. 8 f.).

The map is quite inconsistent with Swift's statements. Balnibarbi is not an island, but part of a continent (p. 218). Maldonada is a port of Balnibarbi, not of Luggnagg, and Glubbdubdrib, which in the map is spelt wrong, is five leagues from it. Both are a great distance, a month's voyage, from Luggnagg.

The 'Straits of the Vries', or de Vries, separate two of the Kurile Islands, Etorofu or Iturup and Urup, called by the Dutch Staten Island and Compagnie Island respectively. The former is really the larger of the two.

CHAPTER I

PAGE 171. 13. *the Levant*. See note to p. 18. 3.

PAGE 172. 6. *proposed to her children*. 'Anticipated for her children.'

9. *Fort St. George*. A fort founded in 1640 by Francis Day, of the East India Company, on the coast of the Carnatic. The modern city of Madras has grown up around it.

11. *Tonquin*. See note to p. 166. 32. A few lines below 'at Tonquin' occurs again.

14. *in some months*. Modern usage has changed *in* to *for* in this phrase.

16. *sloop*. A small one-masted, fore-and-aft rigged vessel; Dutch *sloop*.

*loaded*. In this nautical sense we now use the older verb *lade* (Old Eng. *hladan*), which is entirely unconnected with the verb *load*, derived from the sb. *load* (Old Eng. *lād*) from *lead*. Cf. *loadstone*, which means 'the leading or guiding stone'. The false past participle *loaden*, which occurs a few lines below, is due to the confusion between *load* and *lade*.

27. *pirates*. The China Sea and the neighbouring waters were a notorious haunt of pirates, Chinese, Japanese, and Malay.

31. *entered*. 'Boarded', a special use of the word, now obsolete. Cf. German *entern*, 'to board a vessel'.

PAGE 173. 8. *in strict alliance*. At the time of Gulliver's supposed voyage, Great Britain and Holland were members of the Grand Alliance, formed in 1701 for the purpose of checking the ambitions of France. When Swift wrote this, they were again associated in the Quadruple Alliance of 1718. Alliance did not, however, prevent the keenest mercantile rivalry in Eastern waters, often marked by acts of lawless violence. The Dutch at this time enjoyed the exclusive right, among European nations, of trading with Japan.

12. *Christianos*. This is not, as Swift seems to imply, the Japanese form of the word, which is *Kirishitan*. Christianity had been ruthlessly stamped out by the Japanese Government, which regarded it as subversive of the authority of the state.

13. *The largest of the two*. A construction common in Shakespeare and many of the older English writers, though now regarded as irregular.

30. *which last the Japanese Captain was so kind to double . . . and would permit . . .* For these constructions cf. the notes to p. 107. 3 and p. 116. 10.

PAGE 174. 3. *longitude 183*. The older map-makers, including Moll, to whom Swift refers on p. 323, counted the degrees of longitude continuously from west to east, from the first meridian to the 360th. Consequently 183° is what is now called 177° W.

If the longitude is reckoned from Greenwich, the position indicated is about 1,600 miles east of De Vries Straits (see note at the beginning of this Part).

7. *made a shift*. 'Contrived.'

25. *all rocky, only a little intermingled* . . . 'Full of rocks, which were a little', &c. Swift is very prone to expressions which are quite intelligible, but at variance with the strict rules of grammar or logic.

32. *match*. A piece of cotton wick or similar material used as tinder. Old Fr. *mesche*, mod. *mèche*.

PAGE 175. 22. *descending almost to a parallel with me*. This again is incorrect, but the evident meaning is 'descending almost to my level'.

24. *pocket-perspective*. A small telescope.

PAGE 176. 25. *in a parallel of less than an hundred yards distance*. Cf. the last note but one.

33. *polite*. 'Polished', 'refined'.

## CHAPTER II

PAGE 178. 9. *neither indeed was I much in their debt*. 'I returned them the wonder they gave me.'

12. *reclined*. 'Inclined', 'bent'.

13. *one of their eyes turned inward* . . . Swift, who had little sympathy with abstract speculation, either metaphysical or scientific, here satirizes the philosophers, whose ideas are evolved from their inner consciousness, and the students of pure science, who are occupied with the laws of the universe, to the neglect of practical matters.

17. *harpsichords*. The harpsichord (from obs. French *harpe-chorde*) was a stringed instrument, with a keyboard, and from two to four strings to each note, the strings being mechanically plucked by quills. It went out of use in the eighteenth century.

29. *taction*. 'Touch'; an obsolete word.

PAGE 179. 10. *he is always so wrapped up in cogitation*. This use of *wrapped* (or *wrapt*) *up* is probably due to confusion with *rapt up*, 'caught up', snatched away in spirit from what surrounds one. *Rapt* is the Latin *raptus*. The verb *rap*, 'snatch', with past tense *rapt* (Shelley, *Adonais*, xxiii), also occurs, but rarely.

Sir Isaac Newton was the object of unmerited dislike and scorn on Swift's part for his association with the Whigs, especially in the matter of Wood's halfpence, and for his absorption in studies which seemed to Swift useless. Many anecdotes, authentic or not, were told of his absentmindedness, e. g. that he had two holes cut in his study door, a large one for the cat, and a small one for the kitten; that he boiled his watch while

holding an egg in his hand. Swift describes him sitting on a ladder in his library buried in study, with his head resting in his hand, oblivious of the fact that dinner had been waiting for hours, and taking no notice of the servant who called him till he joggled him.

The Greek philosopher Anaximenes is said to have met his death by falling into a ditch while gazing at the stars. There is a similar tale in Aesop's Fables.

13. *jostling*. This verb, now more commonly spelt *jostle*, is a diminutive of *joust*, 'to tilt'.

14. *kennel*. 'Street gutter'; from Old Fr. *canel*, from Lat. *canalis*, whence also *channel* and *canal*.

PAGE 180. 2. *on each side a young page, with flaps in their hands*. A characteristically careless construction.

27. *equilateral triangle*. This, as well as the rhomboid and parallelogram, is of course a figure of two dimensions, but Swift no doubt means slices, the outlines of which formed these figures.

*rhomboides*. An obsolete form, now shortened to *rhomboid* (Greek *ῥομβοειδής*, 'resembling a rhomb'), a plane quadrilateral figure, of which only the opposite sides and angles are equal.

28. *cycloid*. Not a figure at all, but a curve traced by a point on the radius of a circle which rolls along a straight line. (Greek *κυκλοειδής*, 'resembling a circle'.

30. *hautboys*. A *hautboy*, *hoboy*, or *oboe* (pronounced *höboy* or *ōboy*) is a high-pitched wind instrument made of wood. French *hautbois*, literally 'high wood'.

PAGE 181. 19. *the zodiac*. An imaginary belt encircling the heavens, and including the apparent paths of the sun and all the planets known to the ancients. The name is Greek, from *ζῳδιον*, 'a figure, image', with reference to the signs of the zodiac.

*the tropics*. Not, as popularly used, the torrid zone, but its northern and southern boundaries, i.e. the parallels of latitude 23° 27' north and south of the equator (tropics of Cancer and Capricorn), over which the sun is vertical at his greatest declination. The term is also applied to the similarly placed parallels on the celestial sphere, marking the positions reached by the sun when it appears to turn back from its northward or southward movement. Greek *τροπικός*, 'belonging to the turning or solstice (*τροπή*)'.

*polar circles*. The Arctic and Antarctic circles, which are at the same distance from the poles as the tropics are from the equator.

30. *the true etymology*. Swift here has his laugh at the crude and fantastic attempts at the derivation of words made by contemporary scholars, such as Bentley. Etymology was still for a hundred years to be little more than arbitrary guess-work.

PAGE 182. 1. *quasi*. Lat. 'as if', 'as one might say'; formerly used in introducing etymological explanations.

14. *happening to mistake a figure*. This is supposed to refer to a misprint in one of Newton's astronomical treatises, which made the sun's distance ten times too great. Contrast the clothes made by rule of thumb in Lilliput, which fitted Gulliver exactly (p. 68).

PAGE 183. 1. *the music of the spheres*. The followers of the philosopher Pythagoras maintained that the heavenly bodies were fixed in a series of transparent concentric hollow spheres revolving round the supposed central fire at different angular velocities which stood in simple numerical relations to one another, corresponding to the notes of the musical scale. Each sphere produced a note, the whole combining in one vast universal harmony, although inaudible to us. Shakespeare alludes to this in *Merchant of Venice*, v. i. 60 ff. :

There's not the smallest orb which thou behold'st  
But in his motion like an angel sings.

Swift's idea seems to be that Laputa, being a sort of heavenly body, has to bear its part in the concert.

2. *the court was now prepared to bear their part*. Another grammatical irregularity. There is another in the next line, where 'in' has to do double duty.

26. *bevil*. Not at right angles.

30. *intellectuals*. 'Intellectual faculties', in which sense the word was used later by Lamb and De Quincey. In modern use it stands for 'intellectual persons'. With this use of a plural adjective for an adjective and a substantive cf. *vitals, greens, empties, necessities*.

34. *divider*. A pair of compasses for measuring, provided with two points, and often with a screw to fix them at the required distance.

PAGE 184. 6. *Imagination . . . invention*. Swift's slight acquaintance with mathematics and music is shown by his denying the possession of imagination and invention to the people of Laputa.

12. *judicial astrology*. That part of astrology which consists in judging the supposed influences of the heavenly bodies on human affairs. This is virtually all that astrology means now, but before it was discredited the word was used in a wider sense, for the practical side of astronomy.

14. *admired*. 'Wondered at.'

19. *I have indeed observed the same disposition . . .* Swift here attacks the common tendency of scientific men to become political doctrinaires. Most of the leading mathematicians of the time were Whigs. John Wallis, professor of geometry at Oxford, who died in 1703, had in his youth aided the Parliamentarians

in deciphering Royalist letters, though he afterwards strenuously promoted the Restoration. Sir Isaac Newton had sat in the Convention Parliament of 1689, and was an intimate friend of the Whig minister, Chas. Montagu, Earl of Halifax. As Master of the Mint he supported the scheme of supplying Ireland with Wood's halfpence, which aroused Swift's wrath. Leibniz, the great German mathematician and philosopher, who died in 1716, actively supported the Grand Alliance.

31. *continual inquietudes*. The great astronomical progress of the age, with which the names of Newton, Flamsteed, and Halley are associated, while dispelling superstitious notions, aroused new terrors in the popular mind, some of which are still to be met with. Sir Isaac Newton is quoted by Waller as saying in his eighty-third year (about 1724), 'I cannot say when the comet of 1680 will fall into the sun, possibly after five or six revolutions; but whenever that time shall arrive, the heat of the sun will be raised by it to such a point that our globe will be burnt, and all the animals upon it perish'.

PAGE 185. 1. *that the earth, by the continual approaches . . .* The earth is very slowly approaching the sun, and must, unless unknown factors supervene, ultimately fall into it, although millions of years will elapse before the catastrophe occurs.

3. *That the face of the sun . . . 'Efluvia',* a Latin neuter pl., are the small particles which were supposed to be continually thrown off by bodies, 'exhalations'. It is not easy to understand the theory. Why should the supposed 'effluvia' accumulate on the surface of the sun? Possibly the reference is to the encrustation of the sun with slag or cinders.

5. *That the earth very narrowly escaped . . .* The famous comet of 1680 caused much terror throughout Europe, from its supposed proximity to the earth. William Whiston (1667-1752), the eccentric divine and mathematician, calculated in his *New Theory of the Earth*, 1696, that it had caused the Deluge. In 1712 he caused a violent panic by predicting that on the 14th of October a comet would appear, and two days later burn up the earth. Swift wrote a satirical account of the affair in *A True and Faithful Narrative of what Passed in London during the General Consternation of all Ranks and Degrees of Mankind . . .* Among other scientific men who, according to Sir H. Craik, dreaded a collision with a comet were Thomas Sydenham, the eminent physician (d. 1689), and David Gregory, professor of astronomy at Oxford (d. 1708).

8. *which they have calculated for one and thirty years hence*. From his observation of the comet of 1682, Edmund Halley predicted its reappearance in 1757, thirty-one years after the publication of *Gulliver's Travels*. The periodic return of comets was previously unknown. Halley's calculations were slightly modi-



fied by another astronomer, who gave reasons for the expectation that the comet's appearance would be somewhat retarded. It reappeared at Christmas, 1758, and has since been known as Halley's comet. It appeared again in 1835 and 1909. Probably one of its earlier visits, at the time of the battle of Hastings, is recorded in the Bayeux tapestry.

9. *perihelion*. The point in the orbit of a comet or planet when it is nearest to the sun. Greek *περί*, 'around', *ἥλιος*, 'the sun'. The brilliance of a comet and the length of its tail increase as it approaches the sun, and diminish as it recedes.

14. *ten hundred thousand and fourteen miles long*. 'Fourteen' is added to give a mock precision to the calculation. Swift no doubt intended this measurement to be a monstrous exaggeration, but in reality some comets' tails have been found to be a hundred times as long.

15. *through which if the earth should pass*. Such apprehensions are always current when a conspicuous comet appears, but the matter in a comet's tail is so exceedingly attenuated that the effect of a collision would probably be imperceptible. In any case the temperature of the tail is certainly very low.

19. *That the sun, daily spending its rays . . .* This argument is still often heard, but two causes which check the process were unknown when Swift wrote: the incessant fall of meteorites into the sun, and the generation of heat by atomic disintegration.

23. *receive their light from it*. i.e. from the sun.

PAGE 186. 6. *but are much despised*. One of Swift's habitual careless or elliptical constructions.

10. *rapt*. Cf. note to p. 179. 10.

24. *I was told that a great court lady . . .* This sentence, though very cumbrous, is not ungrammatical, as will be seen if the words 'the richest subject . . . fond of her' are put in a parenthesis.

### CHAPTER III

PAGE 188. 11. *The Flying or Floating Island . . .* These measurements are consistent.

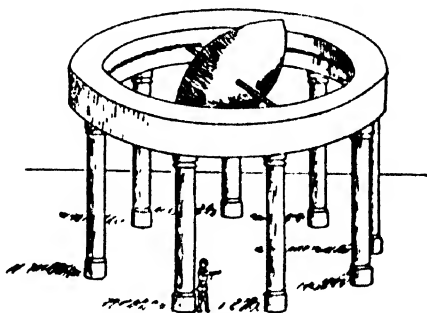
16. *adamant*. From the Greek *ἀδάμας* -αυτος, lit. 'unconquerable', used by the oldest Greek writers of some very hard stone or metal, perhaps steel, and by later writers, ancient and modern, vaguely and rhetorically of an impenetrably hard substance unspecified. Mediaeval and later writers often apply the word to the loadstone, through a curious confusion with the Latin participle *adamant-em*, 'loving', 'being attracted by'; but Swift cannot intend this, as he speaks of a loadstone fixed in it. On p. 196 he says it 'had in it a mixture of iron mineral'. Adamant was also commonly identified with the diamond, which word is derived from it, through Old French.

17. *the several minerals in their usual order.* One can only speak of a 'usual order' of stratified rocks, as limestone, coal, chalk, gravel, not of metalliferous veins.

PAGE 189. 1. *the highest clouds cannot rise . . .* The clouds of the type known as *cirrus*, which are of a feathery form, and consist of ice crystals, are generally five or six miles above the earth, and sometimes twice as high.

12. *sextants.* The *sextant* (from Latin *sextans*, 'a sixth part') is an instrument for measuring altitudes and angular distances, similar to the quadrant, for which see note to p. 48. 13. It differs from it in having a graduated arc of  $60^\circ$  instead of  $90^\circ$ .

*astrolabes.* *Astrolabe*, med. Latin *astrolabium*, from Greek *ἄστρον*, 'star', and *λαβείν*, 'to take', was originally the name of any circular instrument used for observation of the stars; but in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries the word was exclu-



THE LOADSTONE IN LAPUTA.

sively used for what is more fully called the 'astrolabe planisphere', a small flat metal disk which could be suspended vertically, having the divisions of the circle, &c., marked on it, and a pointer, sometimes in the form of a view-tube, rotating on a central pivot. The astrolabe was used for taking altitudes, calculating latitude, constructing horoscopes, &c. Being incapable of precision, it went out of use early in the eighteenth century.

15. *loadstone.* Also spelt *lodestone*. The first part of the word is Old Eng. *lād*, 'leading', 'guidance'. Cf. the old name of the pole-star, *lode-star*. Loadstone is the magnetic iron ore found in North Europe, Spain, &c. The ancients found it at *Magnesia*, in Asia Minor, whence the word *magnet*.

*resembling a weaver's shuttle.* i. e. boat-shaped.

17. *three yards over.* 'Three yards in diameter.'

20. *It is hooped round . . .* It will be seen that this so-called

'hollow cylinder' is really a ring with a square section, lying horizontally on eight pillars disposed in a circle. Strictly speaking, a cylinder 'placed horizontally' is one with the axis horizontal, but this is clearly not intended.

24. *In the middle of the concave side . . .* This shows that the purpose of the 'hollow cylinder' is to allow the loadstone to rotate horizontally. The axle enables it to rotate as far as is needed vertically. It can thus be directed to any point desired.

35. *sides*. i. e. 'ends' or 'poles'. The two poles of a magnet have the power of attracting and repelling iron. The description that follows is a travesty of the true theory of magnetism. Since William Gilbert published his epoch-making discoveries, in 1600, very little progress had been made in the science. In 1709 a London newspaper, *The Evening Post* (No. 56), published a curious description of a flying ship, invented by a Brazilian priest, which was to be built of thin iron plates, and to rise in the air by the attractive force of two loadstones fixed on pedestals on the deck. This is even less scientific than the old fable of Mahomet's coffin suspended by a magnet in mid-air.

PAGE 190. 6. *For in this magnet . . .* Therein it differs from all other magnets, in which the force acts in curves radiating from the poles.

10. *To explain the manner . . .* To understand the plate it should be noted that it attempts to combine a map with an elevation or diagram in a vertical plane. Laputa, although drawn as in a map, is not over the sea, but over *B*, and its up-and-down zigzag course is exactly over the line *B A*.

11. *drawn cross the dominions*. 'Cross' was formerly used as a preposition, like 'across'. Cf. note to p. 102. 16.

PAGE 192. 22. *For although their largest telescopes . . .* This sentence first appears among the additions in Ford's corrected copy. Faulkner, in his edition of 1735, unnecessarily omitted the word 'yards'. In the latter part of the seventeenth century and the early part of the eighteenth, so-called aerial telescopes were often used. They were without tubes, and of enormous focal length, sometimes two hundred yards. About the time Swift wrote, these extremely defective and unmanageable instruments were superseded by the reflecting telescope, which had been made by Newton fifty years before, but was neglected until in 1723 John Hadley presented one to the Royal Society which magnified 230 diameters, although the focal length was little over five feet. A report on it in *Philosophical Transactions* of that year showed that it was in some respects superior to Huygens's aerial telescope of 123 ft., and that the images were 'as distinct, though not altogether so clear and bright'.

27. *a catalogue of ten thousand fixed stars*. The *British Catalogue of Stars*, by John Flamsteed, Astronomer Royal, appeared

in 1725, six years after its author's death, and a year before *Gulliver's Travels*. It determined the positions of nearly three thousand stars. The achievement of the Laputans was soon surpassed in reality, and the International Catalogue now in preparation will give the positions of several millions.

30. *They have likewise discovered two lesser stars . . .* By an extraordinary but accidental coincidence, Swift has here anticipated the discovery made by the American, Asaph Hall, in 1877, of Mars's two small satellites, Phobos and Deimos. They are really nearer the centre of the planet than Swift says, viz. about 1.4 and 3.4 times its diameter. Phobos revolves round Mars in 7 hrs. 39 min., a rapidity without parallel in the solar system; Deimos in 30 hrs. 18 min.

35. *the squares of their periodical times . . .* This is Kepler's third law, announced by that astronomer in 1619, and afterwards investigated and confirmed by Newton. The periodical (or periodic) time of a planet is the time in which it completes one revolution of its orbit.

PAGE 193. 6. *ninety-three different comets*. Of more than a thousand comets that have been observed, 482 had already been registered before 1700. In only a small number of cases (less than one-tenth of the total) has it been possible to 'settle their periods'. The majority appear to move round the sun in parabolas, and consequently to have no closed orbits or periods at all. See note to p. 185. 8.

17. *would never consent to the enslaving their country*. A cynical touch. Only selfish considerations could induce them to withhold their consent. 'The enslaving their country' is an ungrammatical confusion between 'the enslaving of their country' and 'enslaving their country'.

PAGE 194. 5. *demesne*. See note to p. 33. 11.

15. *although it consist*. For the subjunctive see note to p. 71. 32.

30. *About three years . . .* The five following paragraphs, ending with the words 'entirely change the government', were added in Ford's corrected copy, but not printed by Faulkner, or in any of the older editions. Whether the incident was an afterthought of Swift's, or was suppressed, like other passages, by Motte, the printer of the first two editions, lest its tendency should be thought revolutionary, cannot be determined.

33. *put a period to the fate*. 'Brought to a conclusion the fortunes.' *Period* is a circuit of time within which a complete series of events occurs (Greek *περίοδος*, 'a circuit'), and secondly, the completion or termination of such a circuit.

PAGE 195. 23. *exorbitances*. Johnson defines this meaning of the word, 'Enormity; gross deviation from rule or right'. It

is derived from the Latin *exorbitare*, lit. 'to go out of the wheel-track (*orbis*)'.

PAGE 196. 10. *a piece of adamant*. See note to p. 188. 16.

15. *was not descended*. The verb *to be* was formerly used generally with verbs of motion.

31. *By a fundamental law . . .* The Act of Settlement, which became law in 1701, recognized the Electress of Hanover and her heirs as successors to Queen Anne, and provided that the king should not leave the three kingdoms without the consent of Parliament. The latter clause was repealed in 1715. George I preferred Hanover to England as a place of residence.

#### CHAPTER IV

PAGE 198. 6. *he mathematics*. The article was common with this word in the eighteenth century, though now only used in such phrases as 'the higher mathematics'. Cf. Greek *τὰ μαθηματικά*.

PAGE 199. 5. *grandee*. Originally a Spanish or Portuguese nobleman of the highest rank (Sp., Pg. *grande*); hence a person of high rank.

11. *chariot*. Still used a hundred years ago for a kind of four-wheeled carriage with back-seats only.

*half the bigness of London*. The population of London in 1726 was probably a little more than 600,000.

13. *The people in the streets . . .* The activities of Lagado typify various new forms of enterprise, stimulated by scientific progress and the growth of capitalism, which were beginning to transform England, and in Swift's view were plunging it into ruin. In one sphere at least, that of financial speculation, results had already been reached which went far to justify Swift's forebodings. Economic theorists pointed to the example of Holland in proof of the benefits of an extended credit system, which they rightly contended would lead to the expansion of trade, commerce, and manufactures. The more conservative and timid classes feared the decay of the landed interest, the ruin of agriculture, and national insolvency. These things did not happen, but the South Sea Bubble, in 1720, showed the dangers that attended the new finance in those days of economic inexperience and public credulity. Undeterred by the disastrous failure of Law's colossal Mississippi scheme in France, London went speculation mad. The stock of the South Sea Company, which traded in the Pacific, and was preparing to take over the National Debt, rose enormously, and hundreds of other companies took advantage of the sanguine mood of the public. Many of these companies had as their professed object the exploitation of new scientific processes. Some were sound, others fraudulent, many

patently absurd. There was a wild rush for shares, solid industry stagnated, and the most extravagant hopes of immediate wealth were indulged in. In August 1720 the bubble burst, and ruin was widespread.

17. *labourers working with several sorts of tools . . .* At the time Swift wrote, projects were afoot for substituting systems of agriculture, learned in the Low Countries, France, and elsewhere, or newly invented, for the old approved but wasteful English methods. Swift had perhaps heard of Jethro Tull (1680-1740), who had invented the sowing-drill about 1701, and was now experimenting in Berkshire with his 'new husbandry', which promised well at first, but led to the total exhaustion of the soil, being based on a false theory of plant nutrition. A prominent disciple of Tull's was the Whig statesman Charles, Viscount Townshend.

21. *admiring at.* 'Wondering at.'

32. *cabal.* See note to p. 83. 1.

33. *insufficiency.* 'Inefficiency.'

PAGE 200. 5. *common topics.* 'Commonplaces.' The expression corresponds to Latin *communes loci*, Greek *τοπικά*, themes for argument or discourse, from *τόπος*, 'a place'. *Tà τοπικά* is the title of a treatise by Aristotle on subjects for rhetoric.

11. *polite.* 'Polished,' 'refined.'

PAGE 201. 21. *That about forty years ago . . .* As in his account of Laputa Swift scoffs at pure science, so in Lagado he turns his ridicule against the applied sciences and useful arts, of which, as practised in his day, his opinion was little better. The whole class of scientific investigators, whose aims and methods were outside the range of his understanding, appeared to him to be a set of useless, needy parasites, either the dupes of vain and fantastic imaginations, or impostors who preyed upon the credulity of society. Folly and knavery always roused his honest though indiscriminating indignation. The Academy of Projectors may allude to the Royal Society, which was incorporated in 1662, forty-six years before the supposed date of this discourse. It represented in concrete form the whole scientific movement of the day, to every branch of which it rendered inestimable service, at a time when the sciences were struggling for recognition, and freeing themselves, not without many mistakes and hasty conclusions, from the errors of the past. From the first the Royal Society promoted researches which seemed likely to lead to useful applications of the new knowledge to agriculture, metallurgy, manufactures, and other practical matters, and among its early members were men prominent in economics and finance.

29. *foot.* 'Footing.'

31. *Projectors.* Framers of projects or schemes of any kind,

scientific, philanthropic, industrial, political, financial, or what not. There may be an allusion to the secondary sense of company promoters. The word had acquired an evil reputation through the bubble companies of 1720.

PAGE 202. 8. *The only inconvenience . . .* Throughout this passage Munodi voices the sentiments of the landed gentry, who, like Swift himself, disbelieved in progress and new-fangled ideas, and were convinced that the country was rapidly going to ruin.

21. *ill commonwealth's men.* 'Bad citizens', 'unpatriotic men'.

25. *prevent.* 'Anticipate.'

31. *current.* 'Volume of running water.'

PAGE 203. 7. *being . . . not very well.* 'Not standing very well', 'not being in great favour'.

## CHAPTER V

PAGE 204. 5. *This Academy.* The many forms of futile ingenuity exemplified here recall the occupations of the courtiers of Queen Quinte Essence of Entelechie, described by Rabelais in *Pantagruel*, V, ch. 22, a passage which Swift may have had in his mind. Some are washing blackamoors white, others ploughing the sands with foxes, extracting water from pumice-stones, teaching cows to dance, cutting fire to pieces, &c. It is more important to note that Swift certainly alludes to contemporary scientific experiments and theories, some of which are mentioned in the following notes. Some of the bubble companies of 1720 professed to exploit new discoveries or theories, by promoting such dubious enterprises as obtaining silver from sea-water, extracting oil from sunflowers, transmuting quicksilver into a malleable metal, a wheel for perpetual motion, &c.

11. *I could not be.* In modern English, 'I cannot have been'.

18. *which were to be put into vials.* i.e. the sunbeams, not the cucumbers. This construction, which is not now permitted, is common in Swift.

*hermetically.* 'Hermetic sealing' was the term used by the alchemists for closing a glass bottle by fusing the neck so that no air can enter. The word 'hermetic' is derived from Hermes Trismegistus, 'thrice greatest Hermes', the Greek name of Thoth, the Egyptian god of wisdom, to whom the priests ascribed the authorship of their sacred books. Among these were works dealing with medicine and alchemy. In Christian times Hermes was regarded as an ancient sage from whom secret lore was derived. Hence 'hermetic' came to mean 'alchemistic'.

29. *calcine.* To reduce to a 'calx' or friable substance by roasting or burning; originally, of chalk, marble, &c., to reduce to quicklime.

PAGE 205. 7. *those two prudent insects*. The honey-bee builds its combs downwards from the roof of the skep. Strictly speaking, spiders are not insects. Cf. note to p. 114. 31.

8. *a man born blind*. There had been some discussion in scientific circles, shortly before Swift wrote, as to the possibility of blind persons distinguishing colours by touch. In particular, the case of a blind sculptor was discussed, who was said to possess this faculty.

21. *other mast*. 'Mast' is the name given collectively to beech-nuts, especially when used for feeding swine. It is here used loosely for any similar fodder.

31. *cobwebs*. The silk of spiders is equal or superior to that of silkworms, and at various times efforts have been made to use it in commerce, but with little success, owing chiefly to the cannibal habits of spiders. Swift had probably heard of the Frenchman Bon, who had presented to the Royal Society stockings and gloves woven by himself of spiders' silk, and had described his methods in 1710. Pope alludes to him in the *Dunciad*, iv. 590:

Or draw to silk Arachne's subtle line.

32. *artist*. Formerly used in the wide sense of a person who practises any art or technical operation. Thus Milton, in *Paradise Lost*, i. 288, calls Galileo 'the Tuscan artist'. Cf. 'the universal artist' below.

PAGE 206. 7. *the webs would take a tincture . . .* There is no truth in this.

12. *There was an astronomer . . .* The extravagance of this fancy is so wild as to obscure its humour.

21. *speculative learning*. As appears from the examples that follow, this phrase denotes, not theoretic as opposed to practical studies, but rather those arts and sciences which are concerned with mental and not material objects, including the subjects enumerated below, 'philosophy, poetry, politics, law, mathematics, and theology', to which, as the examples show, may be added languages and finance.

27. *condensing air*. Air was first reduced to a solid about 1894. Nitre is not present in air, but nitrogen, one of the constituents of nitre, exists in the free state in air, forming about four-fifths of its volume. It had probably been observed in Swift's time that some element was common to the two substances, although nitrogen was not discovered till 1772. The 'aqueous or fluid particles' are the water vapour generally present in air.

29. *percolate*. Properly 'to filter or ooze through', apparently when the air has begun to solidify.

32. *foundering*. Falling lame, through inflammation of the foot.



34. *seminal virtue*. 'Reproductive power', 'faculty of germinating'.

PAGE 207. 21. *his contrivance*. It is difficult to follow Swift's description of this machine, especially as the illustration in the early editions does not quite agree with it. The plate, which is reproduced on p. 209, represents a square divided into 256 small squares, each of which is inscribed with a group of fanciful characters, representing a word in the script of Balnibarbi. At one end of each of the thirty-two rows and columns (with one accidental omission) is a handle in the shape of a winch. Apparently each bit of wood is a cube, with a word on each of its six faces, and it can be turned over by the handles of the two rows in which it lies, so that any face may be uppermost. In reality this would only give a very small number of combinations, viz. to any given word there would be twenty-four possible adjacent words, unless indeed the rows and columns could be moved backwards and forwards.

Whether Swift is satirizing any definite form of folly in this passage may well be doubted. It recalls the *Ars magna* of the acute but eccentric mediaeval logician, Raimon Lull of Majorca (1234-1315). This was a system by which its author claimed that truth might be infallibly demonstrated, and the Saracens converted. A machine was employed, in which letters representing predicates were placed in the angles of triangles, &c., and others representing substances and accidents on the circumferences of circles. The triangles, &c., were made to revolve round one of the circles, presenting their angles to each of the letters, and in this way, and by similar devices, an exhaustive examination of possible statements could be made. The German theosophist, Cornelius Agrippa (d. 1535), the philosopher Giordano Bruno (d. 1600), the scientific Jesuit, Athanasius Kircher (d. 1680), and others modified Lull's system, or propounded similar schemes. The Silesian visionary, Quirinus Kuhlmann, put to death in 1689, professed to have invented a machine which would give the essence of all books that had ever been written. None of these, however, attained any wide popularity, or can have been familiar to many of Swift's readers.

29. *some larger than others*. How this can be is not clear. They are all alike in the figure.

31. *every square*. i. e. every side of the cubes.

PAGE 208. 1. *engine*. 'Machine.'

17. *body*. 'Corpus', 'collection'.

PAGE 210. 10. *cutting polysyllables into one*. A characteristically illogical phrase for 'cutting down polysyllables to words of one syllable'. Swift probably alludes to an affectation of his own day. Cf. the paper by Addison in *The Spectator* for Aug. 4, 1711, No. 135: 'It is perhaps this humour of speaking no more

than we needs must, which has so miserably curtailed some of our words, that in familiar writings and conversations they often lose all but their first syllables, as in *Mob. Rep. Pos. Incog.* [mobile vulgus, reputation, positive, incognito] and the like.' The paper further mentions 'the suppressing of several particles which must be produced in other tongues to make a sentence intelligible'.

PAGE 211. 15. *an universal language.* Among the proposals which had been made for such a language were Sir Thomas Urquhart's *Introduction to the Universal Language*, 1653; George Dalgarno's *Ars Signorum, vulgo Character Universalis et Lingua Philosophica*, 1661; and Bishop Wilkins's *Essay towards a Real Character and a Philosophical Language*, printed by order of the Royal Society in 1668.

26. *cephalic.* 'Affecting the head.' Eating a piece of paper with an incantation written on it, or the ashes of the paper, is a magical practice known to various countries. Swift probably intends to ridicule the unintelligent 'swallowing of formulas'.

31. *answerable.* 'Corresponding.'

*quantum.* 'Amount', Latin 'how much'.

33. *bolus.* A large pill; mediaeval Latin from Greek βῶλος, 'a clod', 'lump'.

## CHAPTER VI

PAGE 212. 16. *chimæras.* This word, also spelt *chimera*, means properly a fabulous monster with the head of a lion, the body of a goat, and the tail of a serpent, slain by the hero Bellerophon, as related in *Iliad* vi. 181; Greek χίμαιρα, literally 'a she-goat'. Hence in modern languages the word has acquired the meaning of 'a fanciful, baseless conception'.

18. *nothing so extravagant . . . which some philosophers . . .* Note the careless construction.

31. *resemblance between the natural and the political body.* The analogy is elaborated by Plato in his *Republic*, and by Hobbes in his *Leviathan*, his *De Corpore Politico*, &c.

PAGE 213. 5. *redundant, ebullient and other peccant humours.* The four humours or fluids (blood, phlegm, choler, and melancholy) which were supposed to be present in the body, and on the due proportion of which bodily and mental health were believed to depend, might be present in excess (redundant), in a fermenting or effervescent condition (ebullient), or in any morbid state (peccant). Throughout this passage the political application of the medical terms is obvious.

8. *nerves.* Still used at this time in the original sense of 'sinews', as Latin *nervi*.

9. *especially the right.* Referring to the 'itching palm' of politicians, i. e. their readiness to accept bribes.

*spleen*. The name of the organ was transferred to a supposed morbid condition of it, resulting in peevish ill-humour or moroseness.

21. *lenitives*. 'Soothing medicines.'

*abstersives*. 'Cleansing medicines', 'purgatives'.

22. *corrosives*. 'Caustic applications' for destroying ulcers, &c.

*restringents*. 'Astringent', or perhaps 'styptic medicines'.

23. *cephalgics*. 'Medicines for headache.'

*icterics*. 'Medicines for jaundice', which was called in Greek *ἰκτερος*.

*apophlegmatics*. 'Medicines for drawing off excess of phlegm or watery humour', which was supposed to cause dullness.

*acoustics*. 'Medicines to improve the hearing.'

PAGE 214. 10. *at every levee day*. See note to p. 5. 4. On these occasions influential courtiers were solicited to procure promotion and other favours. Swift considered that Queen Anne's ministers had wronged him in not rewarding him with a bishopric for his political services.

23. *occiput*. Latin, 'hinder part of the head'.

PAGE 215. 20. *Wit, valour, and politeness were . . . proposed to be . . . taxed*. A colloquial construction, not grammatically justifiable. So below, l. 28, 'The women were proposed to be taxed'.

PAGE 216. 2. *vote for the court*. i.e. for the king's friends. In the reign of Charles II Parliament was divided between the Court and Country parties.

9. *Another professor showed me*. Francis Atterbury (1663-1732), bishop of Rochester, a leading High Churchman and a friend of Swift's, was tried for high treason in 1722, in consequence of the report of a secret committee of the House of Commons. He and others were charged with plotting a Jacobite insurrection and an invasion from abroad. The evidence was circumstantial and derived from intercepted letters and documents in cipher. It was attempted to interpret initials and apparently harmless expressions in a treasonable sense. (Cf. p. 217.) There is no doubt that Atterbury and his friends had corresponded with the Pretender with a view to the overthrow of the dynasty, but they were so cautious that no legally valid evidence was forthcoming. Accordingly a bill of pains and penalties was passed, and the bishop was condemned to deprivation and perpetual exile. There was great indignation among the Tories, some of whom, including Swift, professed to disbelieve in the existence of a plot.

23. *I told him that in the kingdom*. This paragraph and the next appear in a milder and entirely hypothetical form in the first two editions, having apparently been tampered with by the printer, Motte. The passage begins: 'I told him, that

should I happen to live in a kingdom where plots and conspiracies were either in vogue from the turbulency of the meaner people, or could be turned to the use and service of the higher rank of them, I first would take care to cherish and encourage the breed of discoverers, witnesses,' &c.

*Tribnia . . . Langden.* Anagrams for 'Britain' and 'England'.

28. *subaltern.* 'Of inferior rank.'

29. *under the colours and conduct of ministers.* 'Acting in the name and under the control of ministers.'

30. *The plots in that kingdom . . .* It was the Tory theory that the Jacobite plots were largely fictitious, and were invented by the Government for such ends as are here enumerated.

34. *forfeitures.* The estates of the leading rebels who had joined the Pretender in 1715 were forfeited, to be sold by trustees for the public use. In 1725 the trustees reported that thirty-four Scottish estates had been sold for £296,000, four-fifths of which was paid to creditors. Part of the remainder was paid in grants to the widows and other relatives of the late proprietors, and £27,000 was remitted to the Treasury. It does not appear that much plunder found its way into private pockets.

35. *the opinion of public credit.* i.e. the current price of Government stock.

PAGE 217. 8. *a lame dog, an invader.* This alludes to an attempt of the secret committee which investigated Atterbury's case to prove that he was alluded to under feigned names in the correspondence relating to the projected invasion. A dog called Harlequin was sent from France as a present for a 'Mrs. Illington', who was distressed at its breaking its leg. It was urged that 'Mrs. Illington' signified the bishop, who, however, denied all knowledge of the dog. Swift wrote some verses, 'Upon the Horrid Plot discovered by Harlequin, the Bishop of Rochester's French dog'.

9. *a codshead, a —.* The suppressed word is probably 'king'. 'Codshead' was sometimes used in the sense of 'a stupid fellow, a blockhead', and could thus be applied with some point to George I.

*the plague, a standing army.* See note to p. 144. 25.

10. *a buzzard.* This word was also applied to a blockhead, or dunce. The buzzard, though of imposing appearance, was despised by falconers for its supposed sluggishness and cowardice.

*the gout, a high priest.* Perhaps Dr. William King, archbishop of Dublin, now in his old age and crippled with gout, from which he had suffered severely at intervals for thirty years. Although a pronounced Whig, he was outwardly on terms of friendship with the Dean until 1727, when the latter resented his interference with the affairs of the deanery.

11. *a gibbet, a secretary of state.* There were at this time three Secretaries of State, two who directed home affairs, and divided foreign affairs between them, and a third for Scottish affairs. The execution of criminals and the subsequent gibbeting or hanging of their bodies in chains were subject to the authority of the Secretaries of State.

The functions of Secretary of State are now divided for convenience' sake between five officials of co-ordinate and equal authority, the Secretaries for Home and Foreign Affairs, War, the Colonies, and India.

*a sieve, a court lady.* Because of her inability to keep secrets confided to her.

12. *a mouse-trap, an employment.* Employment was the term used for 'an office under Government'. Here extended to any office in the gift of the Crown, such as Swift's deanery. He felt himself thwarted in his political ambitions by his clerical profession, which was ill-suited to his genius. Renunciation of holy orders was then impossible.

## CHAPTER VII

PAGE 218. 5. *The continent.* Precision is not to be looked for in Swift's geographical statements. He only desired to give an air of reality to the narrative, regardless of the fact that this 'continent' occupies the same region as that of Brobdingnag. (See introductory note to Part II.) There is, of course, no 'tract of America, westward of California'; what is meant is perhaps British Columbia and Alaska.

8. *north of the Pacific Ocean.* The original reads 'to' for 'of', which is evidently not what Swift meant. It is not clear whether the words depend on 'extends itself', or are co-ordinate with 'westward of California'. In the former case we should probably read 'south to the Pacific Ocean'. Clearly the imaginary continent and the 'unknown tract of America' are both north of the Pacific, and the 'good port' of Maldonada, which trades with Luggnagg, is on the south coast.

9. *where there is a good port.* i.e. on the Pacific Ocean, not at Lagado.

11. *situated to the north-west.* Here again Swift has not troubled himself with consistency. The position of Luggnagg, which nearly corresponds with that of the Japanese Bonin Islands, is SW., not NW. of Balnibarbi, a place in which is 46° N., 177° W.

13. *an hundred leagues.* Approximately correct.

18. *in order to my return.* The phrase 'in order to', now nearly always used with verbs, was formerly also common with substantives.

PAGE 219. 10. *This tribe marries only among each other.* An example of Swift's indifference to grammar where the sense is clear.

18. *necromancy.* Here used in its correct sense of 'divination by the help of the dead', Greek *νεκρομαντεία*. It is now often used loosely for 'magic' generally. The English word was originally spelt *nigromancie*, *negromancy*, after the Old French *nygromancie*, mediaeval Latin *nigromantia*, corrupt forms due to confusion with *niger* 'black'. Hence 'the black art'.

30. *antic.* Not 'antique', though ultimately identical with it, but 'bizarre', 'quaint', 'grotesque'. The Ital. adj. *antico* was 'originally applied to fantastic representations of human, animal, and floral forms, incongruously running into one another, found in exhuming some ancient remains (as the Baths of Titus) in Rome, whence extended to anything similarly incongruous or bizarre' (*N. E. D.*). From the English adj. was derived a sb. *antic*, 'buffoon', 'clown', as in Shakespeare, *Richard II*, III. ii. 162.

*and something in their countenances.* Note the loose construction.

PAGE 220. 3. *although it were different.* See note to p. 71. 32.

10. *in some time.* 'For some time.'

34. *the Governor ordered me to call up.* This incident recalls the interviews which Odysseus held with the phantoms of some of the Trojan heroes, described in *Odyssey* xi.

PAGE 221. 13. *the battle of Arbela.* After his conquest of Egypt, Alexander marched to the Tigris to meet Darius, who, although already defeated at the Issus, had collected another army. At Gaugamela near Nineveh the immense Persian host was overthrown in October 331 B.C., and the fugitives were pursued sixty miles to Arbela, which has given its name to the battle. The victory gained Mesopotamia and Babylonia for Alexander.

19. *he was not poisoned.* Alexander died at Babylon at the age of 32, in June 323 B.C. The cause of his death was a fever contracted in the marshes, where he had been supervising the plans for improving the canals. The disease was aggravated by heavy drinking at a banquet given to his officers. Although no further explanation of the cause of Alexander's death was needed, a report was circulated, and widely believed, that he had been poisoned by his cupbearer Iollas, at the instigation of the latter's father, Antipater, the regent of Macedonia. The story is related by many ancient authors, but is expressly denied by Arrian and Plutarch.

21. *Hannibal passing the Alps.* In the autumn of 218 B.C. Hannibal led his army over one of the passes of the Western Alps, perhaps the Little St. Bernard, from Gaul into Italy. Livy

relates (xxi. 37) that rocks which obstructed the path were softened by lighting fires on them and then pouring on vinegar. The possibility of doing this has been often questioned.

23. *Cæsar and Pompey*. Although Julius Cæsar and Pompey had been closely allied since 60 B.C. as the leading members of the so-called first triumvirate, the rivalry between them grew during Cæsar's victorious campaigns in Gaul, and led to an open breach. The Civil War opened with Cæsar's crossing the Rubicon in 49 B.C. Pompey, supported by the senatorial party, crossed the Adriatic, and collected an army in the eastern provinces, while Cæsar overthrew the Pompeians in the west. The next year Cæsar crossed into Illyricum, and was pursued by Pompey into Thessaly, where the decisive battle of Pharsalus was fought. Although Pompey's army was more than twice the size of Cæsar's, he was completely defeated, and fled into Egypt, where he was murdered.

24. *his last great triumph*. This was in October 45 B.C., after his victories over the sons of Pompey in Spain. Cæsar had now secured peace throughout the Roman dominions, but his celebration of a triumph over Roman citizens was contrary to custom, and shocked public opinion.

25. *I desired that the senate of Rome*. Many years before, in 1697, in *The Battle of the Books*, Swift had contrasted the moderns unfavourably with the ancients. The general degeneracy of mankind is an idea that frequently recurs in his writings. See p. 146. 8 and note.

27. *counterview*. The position of two objects placed so as to contrast with one another. A rare word; cf. Fr. *contre-vue*, cited in Littré.

32. *Brutus*. Marcus Junius Brutus (85?-42 B.C.), one of the foremost champions of the Roman republic in its last days, a pattern of the old-fashioned Roman virtues, and the most eminent among the assassins of Julius Cæsar (44 B.C.). From the Renaissance until after the French Revolution it was customary to praise him as a dauntless assertor of civil liberty against tyranny. In *Julius Cæsar*, Shakespeare paints a too flattering portrait of him. Swift repeatedly expresses his admiration for him. Modern criticism casts doubts on the nobility of his motives in joining the conspiracy, and shows that he defended a narrow, rapacious, and selfish oligarchy against the broader statesmanship of Cæsar.

PAGE 222. 1. *general benevolence for mankind*. His just and mild government of Cisalpine Gaul (48-45 B.C.) was highly appreciated by the inhabitants. His earlier record in Cilicia and Cyprus was not so good, as he enriched himself by lending money at exorbitant and illegal rates, and approved the action of an agent of his, who, to recover a debt, besieged the senators

of Salamis in Cyprus in their council-chamber until five of them were starved to death.

3. *in good intelligence*. 'On a good understanding', 'on good terms'.

8. *his ancestor Junius*. Lucius Junius Brutus is a legendary figure of early Roman history, from whom Marcus Brutus is said to have claimed descent. His elder brother having, according to the story, been slain for his wealth by Tarquin the Proud, the last king of Rome, he took a leading part in the expulsion of the Tarquins, and on the abolition of monarchy in 509 B.C., was elected one of the first two consuls. He afterwards sentenced his own sons to death for conspiring with the Tarquins, and was slain by a son of the deposed king.

*Socrates*. The great Athenian sage (469-399 B.C.), illustrious not only for the stimulus which his oral teaching, and especially his dialectic method, gave to Greek philosophy, but also for his inflexible integrity, and obedience even to death to the 'divine sign' or inward voice which regulated his conduct.

*Epaminondas*. A great Theban commander and statesman (c. 418-362 B.C.), who invaded the Peloponnese four times, and transferred the hegemony of Greece from Sparta to Thebes. He fell at Mantinea in the hour of victory. He won high renown for his just and lofty character no less than for his patriotic statesmanship and military genius.

9. *Cato the younger*. Marcus Porcius Cato (95-46 B.C.), called Uticensis from the place of his death, was the most uncompromising and conscientious defender of the Roman republic in its struggle with Caesar. Throughout his public career he endeavoured to suppress bribery and luxury, and in other ways to restore the purity of public life. After the battle of Pharsalus he withdrew with a remnant of Pompey's army into Africa, and finding himself at Utica in a hopeless position, he provided for the escape of his men, and after meditating on the *Phædo*, Plato's dialogue on the immortality of the soul, he stabbed himself. If somewhat narrow-minded and pedantic, he was a strict and sincere follower of Stoic morality. Addison made him the hero of a famous tragedy, acted in 1713.

*Sir Thomas More*. Born 1478, died 1535; Lord Chancellor of England, author of *Utopia*, one of the most enlightened and high-minded humanists of the Renaissance, and a leader in the movement for reform within the Church. He was renowned for his fearless and incorruptible character. Although high in the favour of Henry VIII, he steadily resisted his unjust demands, resigned the Great Seal on the question of the king's divorce, and incurred his hatred by refusing to attend Anne Boleyn's wedding. After several attempts to convict him of high treason had failed, he was beheaded for refusing to acknowledge Henry as Supreme Head of the Church.



10. *sextumvirate*. 'Association of six men.' An incorrect form, influenced by 'triumvirate'; 'sevirate', or 'sexvirate' (Latin *seviratus*, *sexviratus*) would be better.

Swift deals with the last four of these men in his list 'Of those who have made Great Figures in Some Action of their Lives'.

## CHAPTER VIII

PAGE 223. 13. *his eyes were the most quick*. Showing the falsity of the ancient tradition that he was blind.

24. *Didymus*. An eminent Alexandrian grammarian of the time of Augustus, famous for his indefatigable industry, and the immense number of his works, all of which are lost. The so-called 'Minor Scholia' on Homer, formerly regarded as one of his treatises, are drawn from various writings of his on that poet.

25. *Eustathius*. A Byzantine scholar who died as Archbishop of Thessalonica in 1198. He was the most learned man of his age, and wrote commentaries on the ancient Greek poets. His *Commentary on the Iliad and Odyssey* is a vast compilation from the Alexandrian and later critics and grammarians, and preserves much that is of great value, and would otherwise have been lost.

27. *wanted a genius*. 'Lacked the intelligence.' *Genius* had not yet fully acquired its modern meaning.

29. *Scotus*. John Duns (1265 or 1275-1308), called Scotus, or the Scot, and entitled Doctor Subtilis, taught in Oxford and Paris, and was one of the greatest of scholastic philosophers. One of his chief works was a commentary on Aristotle. In opposition to St. Thomas Aquinas, he insisted on the primacy of the will, maintaining that faith, on which theology depends, is not speculative, but practical. He may be regarded as a pioneer in the revolt against the intellectualism of Aristotle. The humanists and reformers of the sixteenth century, however, treated him as a typical schoolman, and contemptuously applied his name, in the form 'dunce', as Swift does in this passage, to ignorant dullards.

*Ramus*. Petrus Ramus (Pierre de la Ramée, 1515-72) was a prominent French humanist. On graduating at Paris he took as his thesis, 'Everything that Aristotle taught is false'. His *Aristotelicae Animadversiones* (1543), which boldly criticized the logical method of Aristotle, aroused the hostility of the Sorbonne. Ramus perished in the massacre of St. Bartholomew.

The Aristotelianism of the mediaeval schools, which was the subject of the criticisms of Scotus and Ramus, very imperfectly represented the real teaching of the master.

PAGE 224. 1. *Descartes*. René Descartes (1596-1650), the

great French philosopher and mathematician, rejected the scholasticism in which he had been brought up, and thought out a system of his own, thus becoming one of the founders of modern idealistic philosophy. His chief importance lies in his method, which seeks to determine the bounds of knowledge, resolutely abandoning traditional preconceptions, in his metaphysics, and in his mathematical discoveries. In his physical theories, which are here specially alluded to, he was less happy. He sought to explain the motions of the heavenly bodies by the supposition that they were carried round in a vortex of the supposed ethereal fluid, a view which held its own until superseded by Newton's theory of attraction.

In his *Battle of the Books*, in 1697, Swift had opposed Aristotle to Descartes, Gassendi, and Hobbes as leaders of the opposing bands of bowmen. Aristotle wounded Descartes in the eye, and 'the torture of the pain whirled the valiant Bowman round till death, like a star of superior influence, drew him into his own vortex'.

2. *Gassendi*. Pierre Gassendi (1592-1655), a contemporary and fellow countryman of Descartes, and like him a philosopher, a mathematician, and a determined rebel against scholasticism, differed fundamentally from him in basing his system on materialism. He followed Ramus in attacking Aristotle, and wrote three books on Epicurus, whom he followed, though not very consistently, in the doctrine that 'all knowledge is derived from the senses'.

9. *attraction*. The law of gravitation, or attraction of gravity (as distinguished from capillary, molecular, and magnetic attraction), was first clearly formulated by Sir Isaac Newton in 1684, as a result of the study of the movements of the solar system, and was soon recognized as the fundamental principle of astronomy.

15. *determined*. 'Consummated', 'terminated'.

18. *Eligabalus's cooks*. Elagabalus, or by assimilation to ἥλιος, 'the sun', Heliogabalus (c. A. D. 205-222), was one of the most depraved of the Roman emperors. He devoted himself to the worship of the Syrian sun-god Elagabal, whose name he assumed. He was about eighteen when he was assassinated. His monstrous gluttony was one of his lesser vices. He is said to have supped off the tongues of peacocks and nightingales.

20. *A helot of Agesilaus*. Agesilaus II (c. 444-360 B. C.), king of Sparta and perhaps the greatest of her commanders. Although victorious in many battles over Greeks and barbarians, he lived to see his country reduced from supremacy to ruin. His character, which has been described by Xenophon and Plutarch, was illustrious for frugality, courage, and humanity, although stained by duplicity.

The Helots, who were mainly descendants of the earlier

population of Laconia, were kept in a state of serfdom by the Spartan aristocracy.

21. *Spartan broth*. An unpalatable black broth, of which the Spartan citizens partook in their public meals, which were said to have been instituted by Lycurgus.

PAGE 225. 2. *nice*. 'Delicate.'

12. *Polydore Virgil*. An Italian ecclesiastic (c. 1470-1555), who lived many years in England, and wrote, among other works, a history of England from the earliest times to the death of Henry VIII.

*Nec vir fortis* . . . 'Not a man was brave nor a woman chaste.' I have not traced the quotation.

17. *which*. For the grammar see note to p. 148. 29.

*scrofulous tumours*. These are due to tuberculosis.

25. *prostitute*. 'Venal', ready to write anything for the sake of gain.

31. *practising* . . . *upon*. 'Taking advantage of.'

PAGE 226. 16. *the back-stairs*. Often used figuratively for the secret influence in public affairs exercised by the members of a royal household, and for intrigues carried on with their help.

19. *an admira*.. Sir Walter Scott suggests that there may be an allusion to Admiral Edward Russell, afterwards Earl of Oxford, who defeated the French fleet in the great battle of La Hogue in 1692. Although an advanced Whig, he had entered into negotiations with the exiled king, James II, partly because he was discontented with King William's policy, and partly to secure himself in case of a restoration. As there were rumours of grave disaffection in the fleet, Queen Mary wrote an appeal to the honour of the officers, which Russell read to them before the battle.

PAGE 227. 28. *gibbet*. Here used in its original sense of 'gallows'. More commonly it means a post on which the bodies of executed criminals were exposed.

33. *the sea fight at Actium*. The great naval victory won by Octavian, afterwards the Emperor Augustus, over Mark Antony and Cleopatra in September, 31 B.C. It decided the fate of the Roman world, and was immediately followed by the foundation of the empire. Actium is a promontory in Acarnania, in north-west Greece, near the entrance to the Ambracian Gulf, now the Gulf of Arta.

*to break through the enemy's great line of battle*. A manœuvre more usual in the age of Swift than in that of Augustus. At Actium Antony's fleet, which consisted chiefly of large ships, endeavoured to close in upon and crush the lighter galleys of Octavian. The fleet of the latter relied upon its superior mobility, which enabled it to wear down the enemy by prolonged skirmishing. The issue was still undecided when Cleopatra, seized

with sudden fear, took flight, and was followed by Antony. Swift's story appears to be an invention. He is probably describing *mutatis mutandis* some piece of royal ingratitude of his own time.

35. *capital ships*. 'Line-of-battle ships.'

PAGE 228. 9. *Libertina*. The name means 'a freedwoman'. The transaction illustrates the scandalous favouritism of Swift's age.

12. *Publicola*. If L. Gellius Publicola is meant, the name is not well chosen, as he commanded the right wing in Antony's fleet at Actium, and is supposed to have perished in the battle.

15. *Agrippa*. M. Vipsanius Agrippa (63-12 B.C.) was one of the ablest commanders and statesmen in the service of Augustus. The victory of Actium was largely due to his skill.

29. *it gave me melancholy reflections*. Cf. p. 146, 8 and note, also p. 221, 25. The Englishman of to-day is undoubtedly taller, and probably healthier, than his mediæval ancestors.

PAGE 229. 4. *yeomen*. Generally the yeomen were the small freeholders of a feudal manor, below the rank of esquires. The formation of large sheep-farms and the growth of large estates led to the decay of the class, which was often regarded as the backbone of the English nation.

12. *managing*. 'Using undue influence.'

## CHAPTER IX

PAGE 230. 13. *trade wind*. See note to p. 166, 35.

14. *the 21st of April, 1709*. The first edition reads 1711, the second and Ford's corrected copy alter to 1709. Faulkner, whose text is of no authority, has 1708. While it is useless to attempt to reduce Swift's chronology to order, it is worth note that he was indifferent to pedantic accuracy, and merely wished to give a general impression of reality to the narrative by the occasional mention of a date.

1711 is evidently wrong, because on May 6, 1709, Gulliver takes leave of the King of Luggnagg (p. 245). This date, however, gives rise to another contradiction, because it makes Gulliver stay about a fortnight in the island, whereas according to p. 234 he remained there three months. Again, at the end of this Part, p. 248, we learn that he was absent from England five years and six months, although he left on the 5th of August, 1706, and returned on the 17th of April, 1710, three years and eight months later. It may be that Swift originally made the whole voyage two years longer.

PAGE 231. 6. *the Dutch were the only Europeans . . . Japan was opened to European commerce about 1543 by the Portuguese,*

who for nearly a century held most of the trade in their hands. The success of the Jesuits and other missionaries, who converted some powerful feudatories and many thousands of their subjects, aroused fierce hostility on the part of the Government, who regarded Christianity as a force tending to disloyalty and the disruption of the state. The converts were nearly exterminated, the Spaniards were expelled in 1624, and the Portuguese in 1638. The Dutch, who had first appeared in 1600, won the toleration of the authorities by participating in the massacre of Hara in 1638, when nearly 40,000 Roman Catholics are said to have perished. Holland now gained the sole right among European nations to settle in the country. The Dutch were, however, confined to the island of Deshima, four acres in area, in the harbour of Nagasaki, and submitted to the most humiliating conditions, being treated almost as prisoners, and forbidden to make the slightest sign of Christian profession.

PAGE 232. 6. *to lick the dust before his footstool*. Cf. Isa. xlix. 23: 'they shall bow down to thee with their face towards the earth, and lick up the dust of thy feet'. In the court ceremonies of Luggnagg Swift not merely alludes to the degrading customs such as the *kotow*, with which, for the sake of gain, Europeans in the East were willing to comply; but he also satirizes the abject servility demanded at European courts.

15, 26. *strewed* . . . *strowed*. The two forms *strew* and *strow*, of which the latter is now archaic, are derived from the Old Eng. *stréowian*, the diphthong of which developed in two ways. The verb was originally weak, as here; the modern *strewn*, *strown* being formed on the analogy of *hewn*, *known*, &c.

20. *capital*. 'A capital crime', one punishable by death.

## CHAPTER X

PAGE 235. 8. *such who*. Formerly common where modern custom sanctions only 'such as'. Cf. Shakespeare, *All's Well*, III. vi. 23-4: 'Such I will have whom I am sure he knows not from the enemy'.

24. *at twelve years old*. Cf. note to p. 17. 11.

PAGE 236. 20. *admiration*. 'Wonder.'

PAGE 238. 16. *I would never marry* . . . This fairly represents Swift's own rule of life. It has been suggested that his celibacy (virtual, if not literal) was mainly due to his parsimony, which has often been mistaken for avarice, but was really the result of his determination to be free to act generously to the needy. 'In later years he lived on a third of his income, gave away a third, and saved the remaining third for his posthumous charity.' Leslie Stephen, *Swift*, p. 142.

33. *pinks and tulips*. These were two of the choicest florists'

flowers in vogue at the time. Garden pinks were introduced into England in 1629. The famous 'tulipomania' in Holland was at its height in 1639.

PAGE 239. 6. *continual degeneracy*. See note to p. 146. 8.

11. *Famous rivers lessening into shallow brooks*. This perhaps refers to the common phenomenon of the shifting of a river's course. Thus five of the famous seven streams into which the Nile divided have either disappeared or are represented by 'shallow brooks'. Probably the 'Indus' down which Alexander's army sailed was a great river which flowed into the Runn of Cutch, and has now entirely vanished. See V. A. Smith, *Early History of India*, 1904, pp. 85, 91.

12. *the ocean leaving one coast dry*. The land may gain upon the sea through slow upheaval of the underlying rocks, or through the deposit of silt. The former has taken place in the Gulf of Bothnia, the latter at Ravenna and Winchelsea, among many other places, where the old ports are now inland.

13. *overwhelming another*. Erosion of the coast is familiar in Kent, Norfolk, and many other districts. A similar result may be produced by a sinking of the land.

16. *the discovery of the longitude*. The discovery of a convenient method to determine the longitude at sea was an urgent need, as the defective methods in use, such as dead-reckoning, caused many shipwrecks. Many new methods were proposed, but to little purpose. The solution of the problem was the chief purpose of the foundation of Greenwich Observatory. In 1714, after consultation with Newton, Parliament appointed 'Commissioners for the discovery of longitude at sea', a body which existed till 1828. The invention of the chronometer in 1735 practically solved the problem, as it became easy to compare local with Greenwich time.

17. *the perpetual motion*. The hopeless quest of a machine which will continue to act perpetually when once set in motion has lured inventors for ages, and still has its votaries, who ignore the facts that the initial energy will in time be expended in overcoming friction, and that energy cannot be created. Leibniz and Newton had already exposed the futility of the idea. Two famous claimants to the honour of discovering perpetual motion were contemporary with Swift, viz. the mathematician Jean Bernoulli the elder (d. 1748), and Orffyreus (d. 1745) who made a wheel which is said to have revolved for eight weeks.

*the universal medicine*. Search was made in ancient and mediæval times for a mythical plant, which was believed to have the power of curing all diseases. The plant and the medicine to be prepared from it were called 'panacea', Greek *πανακεια*, 'all-heal'. Another name for a universal medicine was 'catholicon'.

22. *the progress and returns of comets.* Cf. p. 193. 6 and note.

23. *he changes of motion in the sun, moon, and stars.* The precessional motion of the stars, which is really the proper motion of the sun, had long been detected. In 1718 Edmund Halley discovered proper motions in the case of a few stars. Flamsteed, Newton, and Halley devoted much attention to the moon's motion.

33. *imbecility.* 'Weakness', 'feebleness', like Latin *imbecillitas*.

PAGE 240. 3. *found the natives . . . very hard to believe.* An incorrect phrase, due perhaps to confusion between (a) 'hard to convince' and (b) 'unwilling to believe'.

9. *conversed.* 'Associated with people.'

29. *in . . . Japan, he observed that every man . . .* Perhaps less true of Japan than of any other country, unless it be China.

PAGE 241. 3. *a particular account of the struldbrugs.* In this pathetic description Swift has portrayed his own gloomy feelings and forebodings. Though only fifty-nine when *Gulliver's Travels* was published, he was suffering, prematurely aged, and weary of life, and was preoccupied with the infirmities and isolation of old age. Vanessa's death in 1723 had filled him with bitter thoughts, and in May 1720 he began to fear the worst for Stella. Some nine years before he had expressed the well-grounded fear that his body would outlast his mind, when he said to Edward Young, 'I shall be like that tree, I shall die at the top'. Very soon after writing *Gulliver* an incapacity for mental effort showed itself, and he became gradually more apathetic and melancholy. Death, he says, is never out of his thoughts. When he bids his friends good-night, he adds, 'I hope I shall never see you again'. In 1736, at the age of sixty-nine, he says, 'Years and infirmities have quite broke me; I can neither read, nor write, nor remember, nor converse'. He lingered in a state of growing imbecility for nine years more.

17. *incapable.* See note to p. 3. 6. *Incapable* occurs on p. 242.

PAGE 242. 2. *of course.* 'As a matter of course.'

*the courtesy of the kingdom.* The recognized custom. Cf. the legal phrase 'courtesy of England', the name of a certain customary tenure.

17. *meers.* *Meer* or *mere*, Old Eng. *mære*, 'a boundary', is a word still used in Ireland.

PAGE 243. 19. *hath not been kept above a thousand years past.* An ambiguous phrase, meaning 'began to be kept not more than a thousand years ago'.

## CHAPTER XI

PAGE 245. 28. *four hundred forty-four*. In the older stages of English there was commonly no 'and' between the hundreds and the tens.

30. *a red diamond*. Diamonds are of many different colours; the red are rarities.

PAGE 246. 6. *Xamoschi*. The position agrees with that of Uraga, on a promontory at the narrowest part of the Gulf of Tokyo.

10. *Yedo the metropolis*. Yedo, now called Tokyo, was the residence of the hereditary generals called shoguns or tycoons, who had usurped the power of the emperors. The latter resided at Kioto, which was the nominal capital, but Europeans generally mistook the shoguns for emperors, and consequently regarded Yedo as the capital. The emperor recovered his authority in 1868, abolished the shogunate, removed to Yedo, and changed its name to Tokyo, which means 'eastern capital'.

28. *Low Dutch*. Dutch; see note to p. 31. 5.

PAGE 247. 1. *Nangasac*. Nagasaki, an important seaport in the south-west of Japan, on the island of Kiu-siu. It was here that the Dutch were allowed to settle on the little island of Deshima. Japanese vowels were often nasalized in the older European maps: thus, in the map at the beginning of this Part (p. 170) we find Sando for Sado, and Tonsa for Tosa.

5. *trampling upon the crucifix*. This ceremony, which arose during the great persecution of Christians in Kiu-siu in the early seventeenth century, was imposed upon persons suspected of conversion to Christianity, the alternative being torture and death. See note to p. 231. 6. There is no evidence that the Dutch were ever called upon to perform the rite. At first pictures of Christ upon the cross were used, afterwards bronze tablets stamped with a cross.

9. *he believed I was the first* . . . Swift, who hated the Dutch, here refers to their readiness to abandon their religion at the demand of the Japanese.

30. *studies at Leyden*. See p. 17. 25 and note.

PAGE 248. 2. *Gelderland*. A province of Holland, south-east of the Zuider Zee.

12. *skipper*. Now only used of the captain of a ship, especially a small trading vessel, but here in the obsolete sense of a ship-boy. The word is borrowed from the Dutch *schipper*.

19. *the 10th of April*. The early editions all read 'the 16th of April' here, and 'the 10th of April' in the following paragraph. Hawkesworth and subsequent editors transpose the dates.

27. *five years and six months*. This should be 'three years and eight months'. See note to p. 230. 14.



29. *the same day at two.* After his fourth voyage, Gulliver's ship anchors in the Downs at 9 A.M., and he reaches home at 3 P.M. (p. 330). How he covered the seventy miles in six hours is not stated.

#### PART IV. A VOYAGE TO THE COUNTRY OF THE HOUYHNHNMS

AFTER the varied adventures of the third Part, Swift concludes with a compact and simple narrative pointing one definite moral. The gloomy cynicism which distinguishes the third from the first two Parts is intensified in the fourth, and overshadows even the humorous passages. While the author has hitherto confined his satire to the follies and sins of particular classes, he now aims his savage blows at the whole human race. The moral reformer has become the despairing misanthrope. The contrast between the simple natural life of brutes and the corruption of human nature is a theme on which he had already dwelt in some powerful verses entitled 'The Logicians Refuted'. In the bestial and loathsome Yahoos we have a dreadful picture of mankind as it appeared to the jaundiced view of the embittered and miserable genius. There is no redeeming trait left, nothing but hideous deformity and malignity. The caricature is too gross to be impressive; the sting of the satire is overpowered by mingled disgust and pity for the mind that had lost the vision of all that is noble and beautiful in man. Contrasted with these vile monsters are the Houyhnhnms, Swift's idealized brutes, leading a life of primitive innocence, temperate, hardy, wise, just, and benevolent. They are free not only from the vices, but from many of the virtues of mankind, and their existence is almost devoid of passion, imagination, art, politics, religion, ambition, and progress; in short, colourless, stagnant, and dull. The state of innocence has seldom been painted less attractively. Nor can it be said that Swift has succeeded, as he has in the first two Parts, in investing his creation with an air of reality. The Houyhnhnms are less like horses than the Yahoos are like men. However, the fourth Part abounds in vigorous sallies; the difficulty that Gulliver's master feels in comprehending the needs and motives of civilized men, the explanations he elicits from the hero, and the latter's disgusted recognition of familiar traits in the Yahoos, are among the most mordant strokes in the book.

PAGE 250. *The map.* The bay to the north of Houyhnhnms' Land is the Great Australian Bight. The names were given by the early Dutch explorers, and some of them are no longer in use, but St. Francis Island in the Nuyts Archipelago is still to be found in modern maps. Edel, Nuyts, and De Witt were

Dutch navigators, and the 'Leeuwin' or 'Lioness' was a Dutch ship which explored part of the coast in 1622.

PAGE 251. 11. *in a very happy condition* . . . The sentence is elliptical. Some such words as 'which would have continued' must be understood.

19. *August*. Altered by Faulkner to 'September', to agree with the statements that he came home on the 10th of April, and remained there 'about five months'.

21. *the bay of Campechy*. The southern part of the Gulf of Mexico, between Vera Cruz and Yucatan. It is named from the city of Campeche on the coast of the latter province.

22. *logwood*. The heart-wood of a Central American tree, *Haematoxylon campechianum*, used for making a red dye. The best quality comes from Campeche. Swift probably derived this detail from Dampier's *Voyage*.

PAGE 252. 1. *calentures*. *Calenture* (through French from Spanish *calentura* 'fever') is a delirium produced by tropical heat.

2. *recruits*. No longer used in this extended sense of 'new hands for a merchant ship'. Originally the word meant 'reinforcements'.

3. *the Leeward Islands*. The north-west section of the Lesser Antilles, from the Virgin Islands to Dominica. The hurricanes usually blow from the south-east, hence the name.

6. *buccancers*. Adventurers of various nationalities, chiefly English, French, and Dutch, who were banded together to prey upon the Spanish colonies in America during the seventeenth century. They provisioned themselves in the island of Santo Domingo, where the French word *boucanier* was applied to those who hunted the wild cattle and cured their flesh in *boucans*, or barbecue-frames. From 1671 to 1685 the buccancers ravaged not only the Caribbean settlements, but the whole Spanish Pacific coast of America as well. By 1700 their power was over, and the survivors hardly differed from ordinary pirates.

7. *the Indians in the South Sea*. The discoverers of America applied the word 'Indians' to the natives, in the belief that the continent was the eastern part of Asia. The word may refer here not only to the natives of Peru, Chile, &c., but to the inhabitants of the Pacific Islands.

Extravagant notions were entertained at this time of the wealth of the Pacific coasts. It was in this very year, 1711, that the South Sea Company obtained a monopoly of the trade.

9. *debauched*. 'Enticed from their duty.' The Old Fr. *desbaucher* probably meant originally 'to entice (a workman) away from a workshop (*bauche*)'.

17. *piece*. An obsolete designation for a firearm. So 'fowling-piece'.

24. *go to Madagascar for recruits.* After the expulsion of the French from Madagascar in 1672, the coasts of the island became a haunt of pirates and adventurers of many nationalities, and were often visited by the buccaneers.

32. *to set me ashore.* It was the practice of the more humane among the buccaneers and pirates to get rid of undesirable shipmates in this manner. This was called 'marooning'.

34. *long-boat.* The largest boat of a sailing ship.

PAGE 253. 2. *hanger.* A short sword, originally hung from the belt.

12. *bad.* This is the older and more regular form of the preterite of *bid*; Old Eng. *biddan*, *bæd*, *beden* 'pray', 'ask'. The modern form *bade*, like *came* for *cam*, is due to the analogy of those verbs which extended the long vowel of the past participle to the preterite, e.g. *spake*, *brake*.

PAGE 255. 11. *which my persecutors having sooner discovered, was the cause.* In this awkward sentence, 'which . . . discovered' is a substantival clause, forming the subject. It might be expressed, 'the earlier discovery of which by my persecutors', &c.

31. *who applying himself.* . . . Nominative absolute.

PAGE 256. 7. *proportionable.* 'Proportionate.'

17. *but concealing my fear.* Not quite grammatically correct, as 'but', being a co-ordinate conjunction, cannot connect a finite verb with a participle.

18. *to be in some pain, how . . .* 'Pain' is here used as an equivalent of 'anxiety'. Cf. p. 263: 'discovering signs of wonder what I had done'.

28. *lappel.* 'Lapel', as on p. 97. 12.

32. *pastern.* The part of a horse's foot between the fetlock and hoof; the fetlock being the part of the leg on which a tuft of hair grows above the last joint.

PAGE 257. 7. *upon some design.* 'For some design.' Cf. 'on purpose'.

11. *climate.* Used in the older sense of a region, like the poetic word *clime*, which is derived from the same source. *Climate* is the French *climat*, derived through Latin from Greek *κλίμα*, *κλίματος*, properly 'a slope', hence a zone or region of the earth exposed with a certain obliquity to the sun's rays, according to its latitude.

14. *conjurers.* This word has been degraded in modern use. It is employed here in the older sense of one who has power to conjure or compel spirits to do his bidding.

26. *passions.* 'Feelings.'

28. *Chinese.* The transliteration of Chinese is peculiarly difficult, owing, among other causes, to the different tones or modu-

lations which any syllable may assume, thereby altering its meaning. These tones are four in Pekingese, nine in Cantonese.

PAGE 258. 5. *perceivably*. In modern English 'perceptibly'.

9. *Houyhnhnm*. This word imitates the whinnying or neighing of a horse. Its exact pronunciation can only be guessed. It is usually pronounced 'Hoo-nim', or 'Whin-im'. Pope, who must have heard it spoken by Swift, makes it disyllabic in his lines 'Mary Gulliver to Captain Lemuel Gulliver': 'To hymn harmonious Houyhnhnm through the nose'. Probably, however, the last five letters are semi-vowels. In the formation of Houyhnhnm words, Swift has restricted himself to a few consonants, chiefly *h*, *n*, *m*, *l*, *w*.

## CHAPTER II

PAGE 259. 20. *cattle*. Formerly used of live stock generally, which in mediaeval Latin was called *vivum capitale*. *Chattel* and *capital* are forms of the same word.

PAGE 260. 20. *necromancy*. Here used loosely for 'sorcery', 'witchcraft'. Contrast the stricter use on p. 219. 18, and see note.

24. *colt and foal*. The young of a horse is called a foal from its birth to the time when it is taken from its dam, after which, to the age of four, it is called a colt.

28. *nicely*. 'Closely', 'carefully'.

PAGE 261. 9. *withes*. Flexible branches of willow, used for tying bundles. Old Eng. *widig*. Cf. German *weide*, 'willow'. The word is usually pronounced as two syllables.

21. *These differences are common . . .* These peculiarities, in so far as they are common to savages, are hardly to be explained in this way, but are in the main racial characters.

PAGE 262. 12. *fetlock*. See note to p. 256, l. 32. The word is of old Norse origin, and originally meant the tuft or lock itself. It is difficult to imagine a horse carrying oats on its fetlock, or indeed doing many of the acts which the Houyhnhnms perform. The sense of reality in the third and fourth Parts is very much weaker than in the first and second.

18. *sensitive*. 'Sentient.'

PAGE 263. 15. *each horse and mare ate their own hay*. The plural pronoun after 'each' is grammatically unjustifiable, but is sometimes used colloquially in such sentences as this, to avoid the cumbrousness of 'his or her'.

PAGE 264. 17. *made a shift*. 'Managed', 'contrived'.

23. *having been often reduced . . . this was not . . .* Ungrammatical, as the person changes from the first to the third.

33. *the frequent use of salt* . . . Whether salt is ordinarily

taken to excess or not, a certain quantity is necessary for health. Some tribes have dispensed with it, but they have generally, if not always, been eaters of raw or roast flesh, which contains salt. It is quite untrue that 'we observe no animal to be fond of it but man'. Graminivorous animals, including horses, relish it highly, and some travel great distances to the 'salt-licks' in North America.

## CHAPTER III.

PAGE 266. 19. *High-Dutch*. See note to p. 31. 5. The accession of George I, who brought many Germans with him, made that nation unpopular, especially with the Tories.

21. *Charles V.* This emperor is reported to have said that Spanish was the language he would use to his God, Italian to his mistress, and German to his horse.

25. *he spent many hours . . . to instruct me.* The functions of the infinitive were more numerous in older English than at present. This use of it, where modern English substitutes the gerund, is common in Shakespeare, e.g. *Macbeth*, iv. ii. 70: 'To fright you thus methinks I am too savage' (i.e. 'for frightening you'). Cf. Abbott, *Shakespearian Grammar*, § 356; Kellner, *Hist. Outlines of English Syntax*, §§ 396 f.

28. *qualities . . . opposite to those animals.* An elliptical phrase for 'qualities opposite to those of', &c.

PAGE 267. 2. *waked*. See note to p. 20. 9.

9. *writ*. The Old Eng. preterite was *wrát* sg., *writon* pl. The obsolete form *writ* is due to levelling to the pl.

21. *that were only visible*. 'Only' was common in older English in the sense of 'alone'.

PAGE 268. 20. *spoke*. See note to p. 155. 26.

23. *right*. 'Genuine', 'true'; an obsolete use.

27. *upon an accident*. 'Upon the occasion of an accident.' *Upon*, like some other prepositions, had a more extended use than now. Cf. 'upon some design' (p. 257).

PAGE 269. 30. *admiration*. 'Wonder.'

PAGE 270. 11. *take the same order*. 'Take steps, or adopt measures, to the same end.'

## CHAPTER IV.

PAGE 273. 23. *so perfectly well understood*. Faulkner's edition of 1735 adds: 'and so universally practised'.

PAGE 274. 10. *insisted in commanding*. An obsolete phrase.

18. *founded*. Lame through overwork.

PAGE 275. 16. *represent his noble resentment*. For the sake of

euphony Faulkner and modern editors alter 'represent' to 'express'.

PAGE 276. 5. *my feet behind*. 'My hind feet.'

18. *fence*. 'Defence', of which word *fence* is a shortened form.

PAGE 277. 2. *resemble*. 'Compare.' This obsolete causative use of the verb occurs in the Authorized Version of Luke xiii. 18.

PAGE 278. 18. *difficulty . . . to give . . . capable to perform*. See note to p. 266, l. 25.

#### CHAPTER V.

PAGE 279. 26. *the long war with France*. The War of the Grand Alliance, which lasted from 1689 to 1697, was waged by France against the Empire, Spain, Great Britain, Holland, Brandenburg, Savoy, and other powers. It was essentially a war of wanton aggression on the part of Louis XIV. After a short pause the War of the Spanish Succession broke out in 1702. The object of the Allies was to prevent the eventual union of France and Spain, which would have given France the Spanish Indies, and exposed the United Netherlands to French conquest, and would probably have enabled France to set up a Stuart prince on the British throne. The domination of France over western Europe was effectively checked by the long struggle in this war. Spain and Bavaria were ranged on the French side. The Peace of Utrecht was concluded in 1713.

PAGE 280. 8. *Difference in opinions*. This treatment of religious quarrels is very similar to that in Swift's earlier work, *A Tale of a Tub*, written about 1696.

9. *whether flesh be bread . . . whether the juice . . .* An allusion, not in the best taste, to the Roman Catholic doctrine of transubstantiation.

11. *whether whistling be a vice . . .* The Presbyterians of that day strongly objected to the use of organs and other instrumental music in churches, holding that any appeal to the senses detracted from the spirituality of worship.

12. *to kiss a post . . .* An allusion to the controversies regarding the veneration of images and pictures, especially of the cross, which is the 'post' specially alluded to. The great iconoclastic controversy in the eighth and ninth centuries led to the shedding of much blood, and the permanent division of eastern and western Christendom. The Wycliffites admitted that images had one use: 'thai myghtten warme a mans body in colde, if thai were sette upon a fire.'

13. *the best colour for a coat*. Bitter disputes as to the colour and form of vestments, the white surplice, the black gown of Geneva, the copes and other coloured vestments of Rome and of

the High Anglicans, occupy a prominent place in the ecclesiastical controversy of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, and are not yet extinct. There is also perhaps an allusion to the violent disputes between the Franciscans and Dominicans, or Grey and Black Friars.

15. *dirty or clean*. This perhaps refers to the slovenliness, often, it may be, deliberate, with which divine worship was conducted by many of the more extreme Reformed clergy.

21. *neither of them pretend*. 'Pretend' may, as Sir H. Craik thinks, be subjunctive, or it may be an ungrammatical plural after 'neither'.

PAGE 281. 14. *the trade of a soldier*. For another statement of Swift's antimilitarist convictions, see p. 148 f.

16. *in cold blood*. i. e. when he has no personal quarrel.

18. *There is likewise a kind of beggarly princes*. This was a common practice among the smaller German princes in this age, and for many years after. The words 'are those in Germany and other' do not occur in any of the early editions, which read instead 'as those in many'. The version in the text is from Ford's corrected copy. The publishers evidently feared the possible effects of the allusion to George I, who employed German mercenaries from other principalities for the defence of Hanover.

28. *uncapable*. See note to p. 3. 6.

PAGE 282. 5. *culverins*. 'Culverin' was the name of a kind of cannon formerly used, with a long thin barrel. The word is a corruption of the French name for it, *couleuvrine*, literally 'adderlike'. The German name for it was *Schlange*, 'a snake'.

6. *carabines*. An older form of 'carbine', French *carabine*, the weapon of a *carabin* or *calabrin*, a French soldier of a particular class. The origin of the word is obscure.

7. *undermines*. Military mines. The word is no longer used as a substantive.

8. *ships sunk with a thousand men*. See note to p. 56. 14.

PAGE 283. 15. *Therefore he desired to be farther satisfied . . .* The text here follows Ford's corrected copy. In the first two editions the passage to the end of the chapter is about twice as long, and not nearly so forcible. An emphatic distinction is drawn between the better class of lawyers and the multitudes of pettifoggers who make unjust profits out of the profession. In other ways the most sweeping denunciations of lawyers are toned down. Ford, who acted as Swift's agent, sent Motte, the publisher, a list of corrections and criticisms on January 3, 1727, soon after the appearance of the first edition, and of this passage he wrote: 'Manifestly most barbarously corrupted, full of flatnesses, cant words, and softenings, most unworthy the dignity, spirit, candour, and frankness of the author. By that admirable instance of the laws, it is plain the satire is designed

## EDITOR'S NOTES

against the profession in general, and not only *against attorneys* or, as they are there smartly styled, *pettifoggers*. *You ought to* justice to restore those twelve pages to their *true reading*! Motte was probably afraid that if any legal action were taken, prejudice would be created in the minds of lawyers. It is, however, unlikely that he is responsible for all the differences between the two versions, because in many instances the reading of the first two editions is merely more diffuse, without being milder. When Swift came to correct the passage, he probably thought that his own version might be made terser with advantage.

23. *some injustices*. Cf. p. 143, 'having been formerly almost ruined by a long suit in chancery, which was decreed for me with costs'.

26. *I said there was a society . . .* This fierce outburst of wrath against the law should be contrasted with Gulliver's naïve account to the King of Brobdingnag, and the latter's shrewd and pertinent inquiries (Part II, ch. vi, pp. 140-4). The later satire is in great part so violent and grossly exaggerated that it fails in its effect. It illustrates Swift's growing bitterness and gloom. He was justly indignant at Lord Chief Justice Whithed's efforts to secure the prosecution of the printers of his *Proposal for the Universal Use of Irish Manufactures*, in 1720, and of *Drapier's Letters*, in 1724. In the former case the judge sent the jury back nine times, and kept them eleven hours.

33. *it being against all rules of law . . .* A hyperbolic statement of the fact that litigants are generally strongly dissuaded, often through interested motives, from pleading in their own behalf. Of course they seldom have the technical knowledge or skill to state their own case adequately.

PAGE 284. 12. *insinuating that he hath justice . . .* Here the exaggeration is particularly gross.

27. *It is a maxim . . .* See note to p. 151. 7.

33. *directing*. Advising the jury as to the law by which their verdict should be determined.

PAGE 285. 12. *their own*. Loosely used for 'its own'.

## CHAPTER VI

PAGE 286. 19. *as they found themselves*. 'According as', &c.  
27. *to seek*. 'At a loss.'

PAGE 287. 15. *England . . . was computed to produce . . .* Apparently 'three times the quantity of food, more than its inhabitants are able to consume', means 'four times as much as they can consume'. In 1726 the population of England and Wales was about 5,700,000, and the annual production of wheat was probably less than 20,000,000 bushels, which was not greatly



in excess of their needs. In any case Swift's estimate is absurdly exaggerated.

21. *in order to feed the luxury . . .* By exporting foodstuffs in exchange for articles of luxury, we raise the price of the necessities of life without gaining any corresponding advantage. Not only are the rich demoralized by luxury, but large numbers of the poor are reduced to maintaining themselves by parasitic occupations of the most varied kinds.

30. *hectoring*. 'Threatening' or 'bullying'. The name of Hector, the Trojan hero, came to be used for a blustering bully. Swift perhaps refers to those who make a living by blackmail.

31. *star-gazing*. In 1708 one Partridge, a cobbler, and author of astrological almanacs, had been made the butt of an elaborate practical joke by Swift, who, under the name of Isaac Bickerstaff, published a rival almanac to expose such impostors, and predicted Partridge's death.

PAGE 289. 13. *many that are only imaginary*. Especially many of the forms of hysteria, and such complaints as 'vapours' or 'spleen'.

PAGE 290. 3. *a First or Chief Minister . . . was a creature*. These words are substituted in Ford's corrected copy for a long passage in the first two editions to the effect that in England the Queen (Anne), having no hurtful ambitions, directed her actions to the good of her people, within the limits of the law, and further that she subjected the conduct of her ministers to the great council and the penalties of the law, and therefore never entrusted any subject with the entire administration of her affairs; however, in some former reigns and in many contemporary courts of Europe pleasure-loving princes employed a First Minister, who was a person wholly exempt from joy and grief, &c. In the 'Letter from Captain Gulliver to his Cousin Sympson', prefixed to Faulkner's edition, and printed here (p. 3), this passage is expressly repudiated, and denounced as false, because Anne had two Prime Ministers, Godolphin and Oxford. Ford, among the corrections he sent to Motte, the publisher, presumably at Swift's direction, on January 3, 1726 (see note to p. 283. 15), speaks of the passage as 'false and silly, infallibly not the same author'. The most probable explanation is that Motte, fearing that Sir Robert Walpole, who was then Prime Minister, might take offence at this very plain-spoken description of the occupants of his post, toned down the passage by making it refer unmistakably to foreign prime ministers, and to those in England under earlier kings. The interpolation, if such it be, is not so false or silly as Swift and Ford represent it to be. Queen Anne did not as a rule misuse her prerogatives, which were less limited than those of her successor came to be, and although Godolphin and Oxford were successively her chief ministers, they had no such

clearly recognized position at the head of the Government as Sir Robert Walpole obtained in 1721. He is generally regarded as the first Prime Minister.

5. *exempt from joy and grief* . . . This description does not apply to Walpole, who was very human in his hearty good nature, his power of making friends, and his love of coarse and boisterous pleasures. Nor does it apply to Stanhope or Townshend, who were men of impetuous temper.

15. *forlorn*. 'Lost', the older sense of the word. *Forlorn* is the past participle of the Old Eng. verb *forlōsan*, to lose.

30. *great council*. Privy Council; see note to p. 45. 15.

*an Act of Indemnity*. In 1690 the Commons discussed a Bill of Indemnity to safeguard those who had supported James II in his unconstitutional government. William III settled the question by an Act of Grace.

PAGE 291. 4. *subaltern*. 'Secondary', 'inferior'.

9. *tunnels*. Suggested no doubt by the similar use of 'channels', but with the added notion of secrecy.

PAGE 292. 3. *that our young noblemen are bred* . . . Cf. pp. 142, 225.

11. *scrofulous, ricketty, or deformed*. While the off-spring of such marriages are extremely likely to suffer from bodily and mental defects, it would be rash to attribute rickets, or deformity, which is commonly a result of rickets, to parental influences. Such parents as are here described might, it is true, easily convey a scrofulous taint to their children.

20. *spleen*. See note to p. 213. 9.

22. *Without the consent* . . . This sentence was added in Ford's corrected copy.

23. *these have the decision*. . . . On the appellate jurisdiction of the House of Lords, see p. 142. 31 and note.

## CHAPTER VII

PAGE 293. 17. *managing*. 'Maintaining by wily methods.'

24. *amiable*. 'Worthy to be loved.'

PAGE 294. 17. *for brevity sake*. In late Middle English the possessive case-ending was often dropped when the next word began with a sibilant, e.g. 'the river side'. This was still more frequent where the word in the possessive case already ended with a sibilant. It happened that many of the words commonly used with *sake* ended with a sibilant, e.g. *conscience, righteousness, justice, peace, Jesus*. In these the uninflected form is still retained, and it seems to have been extended by analogy to other words, as here.

PAGE 295. 10. *reason alone is sufficient to govern a rational*

*creature.* A maxim thoroughly characteristic of the age, illustrating both its strength and its weakness. The thought of the time was intellectualist, and concerned itself but little with the will.

35. *the same cause with ours.* A construction sanctioned by good writers. Cf. in Greek αὐτός with the dative of accompaniment.

PAGE 297. 26. *our courts of equity.* See note to p. 143. 21.

PAGE 298. 16. *their language.* i. e. that of the Houyhnhnms. The Yahoos have none.

PAGE 299. 35. *which his servants had discovered . . . and to him was . . .* Ungrammatical, because *which* is both object and subject.

PAGE 300. 12. *who, if they were forced . . . I would undertake for the cure.* A strangely ungrammatical sentence. The meaning is 'for whose cure . . . I would undertake'.

20. *refine.* 'Be over-subtle.'

21. *what he observed himself, or had been told him.* For this construction see above, p. 299. 35, note.

## CHAPTER VIII

PAGE 302. 20. *the red-haired.* It is an old popular belief that persons with red hair are malicious, passionate, and untrustworthy. Judas Iscariot is commonly represented thus.

PAGE 303. 11. *a point problematical.* In logic a judgement is problematical when it is possible, but not necessarily true.

13. *as it must needs do . . .* It is of course the practical reason, the wisdom that guides action, of which he speaks. This is the only kind of reason known to the Houyhnhnms, as it was the only kind in which Swift was interested. He means that the pure and sincere soul will recognize the highest good and follow it unerringly.

24. *he would laugh that a creature . . .* This agrees with Swift's dislike of all kinds of abstract speculation. See note to p. 150. 27.

28. *the sentiments of Socrates.* He insisted on the distinction between mere vague second-hand opinion and knowledge, which can only be gained by reasoning. Knowledge with him has a practical aim, and is the basis of virtue. True virtue, as distinguished from mere customary morality, rests upon conviction, for every one seeks his own good, and to recognize it is to follow it. Cf. Plato, *Republic*, v. 476-8.

PAGE 304. 7. *They have no fondness . . .* Another example of eighteenth-century rationalism. Cf. below, l. 21, 'Courtship, love . . . have no place in their thoughts', and p. 311, 'neither joy nor grief at their departure'; also the Lilliputian laws p. 65 ff.).

22. *jointures*. A 'jointure' is an estate settled on a woman at her marriage, to be enjoyed by her after her husband's death for the term of her life.

*settlements*. Marriage settlements; agreements at marriage by which provision is made for the wife.

PAGE 305. 10. *enjoined to*. A construction common in the seventeenth century.

11. *my master thought it monstrous* . . . Here Swift shows himself remarkably in advance of the current thought of his time. Cf. the education of Lilliputian girls, p. 66 f.

31. *noisome*. This word probably retains here its original general sense of 'harmful', 'offensive'. It is derived from the obsolete verb *noy*, a shortened form of *annoy*, and more commonly means 'ill-smelling'.

## CHAPTER IX

PAGE 307. 19. *indocible*. 'Unteachable.'

26. *whether produced* . . . The belief still lingered that animal life could be generated from such substances.

PAGE 308. 9. *which although their evil disposition . . . deserved, could never* . . . An elliptical construction, 'which' being at once object to 'deserved' and subject to 'could'.

PAGE 309. 2. *composure*. 'Composition', in most senses of which it was formerly used.

PAGE 310. 18. *being pointed like stakes . . . they stick them*. An awkward, if not ungrammatical construction.

35. *oats, which there groweth*. 'Oats' is treated as a collective noun, like 'wheat', 'barley', &c., and therefore as a singular.

PAGE 311. 11. *upon returning*. 'On the point of returning.'

## CHAPTER X

PAGE 313. 8. *economy*. In the primary, though now unusual, sense of 'domestic arrangements'.

15. *birds I had taken . . . and were excellent food*. Cf. p. 114. 15 and note.

PAGE 314. 9. *splenetics*. Sufferers from the 'spleen'. See note to p. 213. 9.

*controvertists*. 'Controversialists'; still occasionally used.

10. *virtuosos*. Persons with a special knowledge of, or skill in, any art. Swift, who had little taste for any form of art, was inclined to regard such persons as charlatans and twaddlers.

12. *whipping-posts, or pillories*. An Act was passed in the thirty-ninth year of Elizabeth's reign, ordering whipping-posts to be set up, to which vagrants, stripped to the waist, were to

be fastened by the hands, and scourged. Such a post still stands at Waltham Abbey. Not only offenders against the law, but lunatics and small-pox patients were whipped. The pillory was used chiefly for fraudulent tradesmen, perjurers, forgers, and scolds, and from 1637 for offenders against the Press Laws. Defoe was a victim in Swift's time. Women are publicly whipped about the city in Lilliput (p. 67).

20. *fiddlers*. Another indication of Swift's well-known indifference to music.

25. *descend*. 'Condescend.'

PAGE 315. 9. *Their subjects are generally on friendship . . .* A confusion of (1) 'Their conversations are . . . on . . .', and (2) 'Their subjects are . . . friendship . . .'

22. *admiration*. 'Wonder.'

PAGE 317. 8. *not agreeable to reason . . . nor a thing never heard of*. The reduplicated negative, now a vulgarism, was disappearing from literary English when Swift wrote.

25. *doubted*. 'Feared.'

PAGE 318. 12. *imbecilities*. 'Frailties.'

14. *an happiness*. See note to p. 124. 22.

28. *temper*. 'Equanimity,' 'calmness of mind.' The word properly means a due proportion or mixture of mental qualities. Cf. the phrase, 'to lose one's temper'.

PAGE 319. 25. *converse in*. 'Are acquainted with', 'conversant with'.

30. *consulting with the sorrel nag, we went*. A characteristically irregular construction, the sense of which is clear.

32. *artificially*. 'Cunningly', 'cleverly'.

## CHAPTER XI

PAGE 322. 6. 1714-15. The legal year in England still began on March 25, so, to avoid confusion with dates which fell between January 1 and March 24 inclusive, both years were commonly given, as here. When the reformed calendar was adopted in 1752, the beginning of the legal year was altered to January 1. Scotland had adopted the latter system in 1600.

PAGE 323. 5. *The Cape of Good Hope*. About 34° S.

8. *to the south-cast*. S.E. of the Cape of Good Hope.

10. *to steer my course eastward*. The W. coast of Australia would be about 4,000 miles, and the S. coast of Africa perhaps 700 or 800 miles from the point where Gulliver supposed he was. Apparently he chose the former because 'the wind was full west'. The impossibility of such a voyage in a canoe need hardly be pointed out.

11. *New Holland*. See note to p. 167. 1.

15. *a very small island*. Swift seems to have forgotten that in the previous chapter (p. 319) Gulliver had resolved to reach another island only five leagues to the NE.

22. *the south-east point of New Holland*. What is meant by this, and whether it is an error for 'the SW. point', cannot be determined. Gulliver has just said that he hoped to reach the SW. coast. The meaning of the following sentence is equally obscure, as we are not informed how Gulliver discovered the longitude with such precision. Cf. note to p. 239. 16. As the point he reached was only sixteen hours' sail from Houghnahnms' Land, Gulliver's conjecture that the latter was SE. of the Cape of Good Hope was evidently wrong. But Swift did not mean these statements to be closely examined.

27. *Mr. Herman Moll*. A Dutch geographer who settled in London in 1698, published many atlases and maps, and died in 1732.

PAGE 324. 13. *discharged an arrow*. The Australian aborigines are in reality entirely unacquainted with the bow and arrow.

16. *being a calm day*. This seems to be an elliptical use of the nominative absolute.

PAGE 325. 11. *a native of the place, who go all naked*. Another example of Swift's indifference to grammatical correctness, where the sense is clear.

13. *bid*. An early Modern Eng. form of the pret., due to the past participle *bidden* or *bid*. The older form *bad* is also used by Swift; see p. 253. 12 and note.

PAGE 326. 15. *loaden*. See note to p. 172. 16.

PAGE 327. 3. *having informed the Captain, I was chained*. The meaning is, 'he having informed', &c. Cf. note to p. 324. 16.

8. *descended*. 'Condescended.'

32. *pretended*. 'Professed', not necessarily falsely. Cf. 'the old Pretender' = claimant.

PAGE 328. 7. *he would continue me a prisoner*. This sense of *continue* (= keep), formerly common, went out of use about the middle of the last century.

12. *accident*. 'Incident.'

31. *the highest room backwards*. 'The highest back room.' Gulliver desires the greatest possible seclusion. For the idiom, cf. p. 276. 5, 'clefts and divisions in my feet behind'.

PAGE 329. 1. *imprisoned, or burnt by the Inquisition*. Gulliver might have been condemned for the heresy of declaring that there were beasts gifted with reason, and men devoid of it, or, if his story were believed, for having friendly relations with beings who could only have been sorcerers (cf. p. 257). In Elizabeth's reign, Englishmen had been seized and burnt by the Spanish Inquisition, but in 1715 the Portuguese Inquisition

which was milder than the Spanish, would not have ventured to do so.

9. *servants, none of which.* The relative *which* was originally used of persons as well as things. *Who* as a relative came into common use in the sixteenth century, and replaced *which*, when applied to persons, in the seventeenth. *Which* seems to be an archaism here.

16. *drew my head back in a fright.* It is difficult to understand why Gulliver shows so much greater horror at the sight of civilized Europeans than at that of Yahoos. Cf. the first two paragraphs of chap. viii. He now dislikes clothes that a man has worn, whereas he had made himself boots of Yahoo skin. The probable explanation is that he regarded the Yahoos as mere brutes, and felt the sudden reduction to an equality with them to be intolerable. Swift may even mean that civilized men are worse than the most degraded savages.

32. *recluse.* Still used, though rarely, as an adjective.

PAGE 330. 6. *pretending I was sick.* It has been pointed out that contact with Yahoos soon teaches Gulliver to practise deceit again.

26. *that odious animal.* It may be charitably presumed that these words refer to the Yahoo race in general, not to Mrs. Gulliver in particular.

28. *it is five years.* Bolingbroke wrote to Swift in January 1721: 'I long to see your *Travels*.' This, which is the earliest reference to the book that can be certainly dated, was just five years after Gulliver's supposed return.

## CHAPTER XII

PAGE 333. 16. *Necsimiserum....* 'And if Fortune hath moulded Sinon to misery, she shall not, for all her malice, mould him to a cheat and a liar' (Vergil, *Aeneid* ii. 79). With these words the Greek Sinon, who had been brought before King Priam, prefaced his false tale, that induced the Trojans to bring the wooden horse into their city.

PAGE 334. 9. *can possibly meet with no censurers.* 'Cannot possibly meet with censurers.' Cf. p. 158. 30: 'Perhaps many travellers have not been under greater difficulties.'

23. *I write without any view towards profit.* This was quite true, whatever may be said of the other statements. Swift gained no pecuniary advantage from any of his writings, except a small sum which Pope secured for him out of the profits of one of his works, either *Gulliver's Travels* or his contribution to the *Miscellanies*.

PAGE 335. 1. *Ferdinando Cortez.* In Spanish, Hernan Cortes (1485-1547), the great commander, who at the head of a few

hundred Spaniards subdued the Mexican empire in two and a half years, 1519-21.

10. *missive weapons*. 'Missiles', an obsolete phrase.

18. *yerks*. Powerful kicks delivered with the whole hind quarter.

20. *Recalcitrat undique tutus*. '(If you stroke him the wrong way) he kicks himself clear on all sides.' Said by Horace, *Satires*, ii. l. 20, of the Emperor Augustus, who, he says, must be approached tactfully and at the right time.

33. *distributive justice*. That kind of justice which is concerned with distributing his due portion to each, Aristotle's *διαμεμητικὸν δίκαιον* (*Ethics*, v. 4. 2). The other kind is 'commutative justice', which is concerned with giving a person the equivalent of what he has done or suffered.

PAGE 336. 10. *their princes tortured to discover their gold*. Montezuma II, emperor of Mexico, was seized by Cortes in 1519, put for a short time in irons, and compelled to pay treasure in gold, silver, and precious stones, valued at about £1,500,000. Atahualpa, Inca of Peru, was treacherously seized by Pizarro in 1532, and confined in a room which he promised to cause to be filled with vessels of gold and silver as high as his arm could reach, as the price of his release. He was, in spite of this, condemned to death and strangled.

17. *But this description*. . . This paragraph is doubtless intended for irony. Part of it might, it is true, be taken literally, but Swift is not in the habit of praising the institutions of his country.

20. *liberal endowments*. Many efforts had been made during a century of colonization 'for the advancement of religion and learning' among both the settlers and Indians in the American plantations. Of the sectarian colleges of Harvard (1639) and Yale (1701) Swift can hardly have approved. Among the Anglican establishments were Henrico College in Virginia (1618), refounded through the generosity of Robert Boyle, as William and Mary College in 1691, and Codrington College in Barbados (1710). But Swift probably had in mind the fruitless appeal which his friend George Berkeley, then Dean of Derry, made in 1725 for his plan for a college in the Bermudas, where missionaries were to be trained for work among the North American Indians.

22. *caution in stocking their provinces*. . . Swift, with his intense dislike of Puritanical enthusiasm, regarded the New England colonists as far from 'sober'. Worse kinds of insobriety were rampant in some of the West Indian Islands, notably Jamaica and the Bahamas, which had long been the haunts of pirates and other desperados, such as are portrayed in Gay's *Polly* (1729). It was for a long time the custom to send convicts to work in the plantations of Virginia and Barbados, and in Swift's day many highwaymen were sent there.



24. *conversations*. 'Behaviour', 'manner of life'.

PAGE 337. 7. *the two Yahoos*. See p. 307.

27. *docible*. 'Docile', 'teachable'; a rare and obsolete word. Cf. note to p. 307, l. 19.

30. *brutality*. 'Brutish nature'; a milder sense than the word usually has.

35. *intellectuals*. 'Intellectual qualities'; see note to p. 183. 30.

PAGE 338. 16. *an evidence*. 'A witness'; a use still found in the phrase 'to turn king's evidence'.

PRINTED IN  
GREAT BRITAIN  
AT THE  
UNIVERSITY PRESS  
OXFORD  
BY  
JOHN JOHNSON  
PRINTER  
TO THE  
UNIVERSITY









**DATE LABEL**

**STATE CENTRAL LIBRARY**

This is due for Return on or before the  
date last marked below.

Date	Date

Accession No. 1289  
Call No. 823, 5977 9  
Title *Chittagong*  
Author *Devi, J.*

---

Date of Return

Date of Return

823  
5977 9

**STATE CENTRAL LIBRARY  
WEST BENGAL**

**Books are issued for fourteen days only.**

**Books lost defaced or injured in any way shall  
have to be replaced by the borrower.**

**P. S. (I) - 5000**

---